

A STUDY OF THE TWO FORMS OF THE
ENGLISH VERB IN THE PRESENT TENSE

Thesis for the Degree of Ph. D.
MICHIGAN STATE COLLEGE
Nora Landmark
1954

This is to certify that the
thesis entitled
A Study of the Two Forms of the
English Verb in the Present Tense

presented by

Nora L. Landmark

has been accepted towards fulfillment
of the requirements for

Ph. D. degree in English


Major professor

Date May 12, 1954

A STUDY OF THE TWO FORMS
OF
THE ENGLISH VERB
IN
THE PRESENT TENSE

By
Nora Landmark

A THESIS

Submitted to the School of Graduate Studies of Michigan
State College of Agriculture and Applied Science
in partial fulfillment of the requirements
for the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy
Department of English

1954

THESIS

Acknowledgements

To one who "wolde gladly teche" and from whom students "gladly lerne", my thesis advisor, Robert J. Geist, I am deeply indebted and pleased to express my appreciation. To my friend T. B. Strandness for his critical reading of chapter 3 and constructive suggestions I also owe a debt of gratitude.



Vita

The writer was born in Benson, Minnesota, September 13, 1909. She received her undergraduate training at Concordia College, Moorhead, Minnesota and at Louisiana State University, Baton Rouge, Louisiana. She received her Bachelor's Degree from Louisiana State University in 1936 and her Master's Degree from that same institution in 1938. Prior to coming to Michigan State College in 1946 as instructor in the Department of Communication Skills, she was director of radio broadcasting at Alabama College, the State College for Women (1938-1943) and at Louisiana State University (1943-1946).

A STUDY OF THE TWO FORMS
OF
THE ENGLISH VERB
IN
THE PRESENT TENSE

By

Nora Landmark

AN ABSTRACT OF A THESIS

Submitted to the School of Graduate Studies of Michigan

State College of Agriculture and Applied Science

in partial fulfillment of the requirements

for the degree of

Doctor of Philosophy

Department of English

1954

APPROVED: _____

Robert J. Geist

For this study a body of material consisting of more than two thousand Modern English quotations was collected. The quotations illustrated one or both of the two variant forms of the verb in the present tense (e.g., goes, is going). The objective of the study was to determine, if possible, the difference in the meaning of the two verb forms through an examination of these quotations. The do form of the verb was included as a part of the simple form (goes) since it is obviously analogous to the simple form in questions and negative statements (e.g., "He goes"; vs. "He does not go"; "Does he go?"). Modern English does not use "He goes not" and "Goes he?"

Chapter I was concerned chiefly with definition and history. It was pointed out there that the simple form of the verb with phonetic variation has been in the language since the time of our earliest records. Similarly, the expanded form is found in the literature of the three historical periods but differs from the simple form in that it exists in the Old English and the Middle English only as an occasional variant. While it continues to grow from the time of our earliest records, the expanded form does not become frequent until the Eighteenth and Nineteenth Centuries. The structural ambiguity of the -ing form (Cf. the verbal -ing in "It is raining", the adjectival -ing in "The book is interesting", and the substantive -ing in "That act is stealing") has led to speculation about the origin of the form. The three rival theories concerning its origin were reviewed in Chapter 1; the work of Mosse¹ was cited as having established conclusively that the verbal -ing has "a double root;" that is, it has grown out of constructions in which an adjective in -ing and a substantive in -ing stood next to the form of the verb to be.

The study of the grammatical environments of the simple and expanded forms in current usage, reported in Chapter 2, led to the following conclusions:

- 1) Adverbial modifiers for which the word then could be substituted and some subordinating conjunctions introducing dependent clauses showed certain trends which tended to corroborate the meanings assigned to the two forms by previous investigators. Specifically:
 - (a) The adverbial modifiers used with the simple form showed a trend in the direction of generality: recurrence (e.g., often, usually), indefiniteness (e.g., sometimes), extend of time (e.g., today in the sense of "now-a-days").
 - (b) The adverbial modifiers used with the expanded form showed a trend in the direction of specific time (e.g., now in the sense of "while I utter these words," tonight, Thursday afternoon).
 - (c) The simple form is used most frequently with temporal conjunctions denoting a "point of time" (e.g., before, when, in the sense of "time at which"). It occurs with while in the sense of "time during which" but less frequently.
 - (d) The expanded form did not occur in my data with the temporal conjunctions before, after or until; it occurred frequently with when in the sense of "time during which" and occurred more frequently than the simple form in combination with while.
 - (e) The conjunction when approximates if ("in the event that") in meaning about fifty per cent of the time that it is used with the simple form; it has this meaning infrequently when it is used with the expanded form.
 - (f) The conditional if is conspicuously more frequent with the simple form than with the expanded form, just as if can be substituted for when far more frequently with the simple form than with the expanded form. The distribution of conditional if seems to emphasize the fact that a condition as such is not necessarily an action in progress but that an action in progress can be a condition.
- 2) The simple form tied to you subjects has sometimes a quasi-imperative meaning, e.g., "When we go out this morning, you shoot the sun lines."
- 3) The following grammatical groupings of the data appeared to provide no basis for distinguishing between the meaning of the two forms:
 - (a) Classification of the data according to animate and inanimate subjects.
 - (b) Classification of the data according to transitive and intransitive ver

(c) Classification of the data according to verb plus infinitive.

- 4) The expanded form is conspicuously more frequent in substantive clauses than is the simple form, but this difference in distribution appears to provide no clue as to the difference in the meaning of the two verb forms.

The negative conclusions indicated in (3) and (4) above suggest that grammatical analysis as a method, although it has the virtue of objectivity, will not yield sufficient evidence to establish the difference in the meanings of the two forms. Since the two forms appear in patterns which, from a structural point of view, are otherwise identical, it appears that any attempt to establish the difference in the meaning of the two forms must take into consideration the NATURE OF THE VERB itself, i.e. the combination of lexical and structural meaning of the verb.

In Chapter 3 meanings for the two verb forms stated by previous investigators were catalogued, and the boundaries for the terms used to identify these meanings were established by means of a subjective analysis of the sentences the various investigators had used to illustrate the meanings. The meanings catalogued were those which appeared to be most comprehensive in that they embraced more specialized meanings which had been recorded in grammars or special studies. A single basic meaning, FACT-OF-PROCESS was catalogued for the simple form.¹ FACT-OF-PROCESS encompasses as its most important corollary the meaning CONSTITUTION-OF-THINGS,² which, in turn, embraces such notions as:

- (a) the logical (e.g., "The number exceeds more than two million.")
- (b) the psychological (e.g., "She loves the movies.")
- (c) the physiological (e.g., "Her arches hurt her.")
- (d) the essential (e.g., "It takes two men to handle that bomber.")
- (e) the order of nature (e.g., "He has a fine baritone voice.")
- (f) the habitual (e.g., "She never has her dinner in her room....")
- (g) ability (e.g., "I play six hours of tennis at a stretch...")
- (h) directions (e.g., "You take two cups of sugar...")
- (i) causality (e.g., "What does he do that for?")
- (j) insight (e.g., "I feel your work isn't going very well.")

The fact that these meanings shade into each other seems to imply that the simple form has acquired or is in the process of acquiring a basic meaning. In addition

to the constitution-of-things meaning, FACT-OF-PROCESS also includes a turning away from an event in real time (e.g., "Look! Here comes the old one" and "How sweetly she sleeps there") and the use of the historical present for a statement of fact (e.g., "Henry Ford dies").

Three meanings were catalogued for the expanded form: (1) OCCURRENCE,³ (2) INVOLVEMENT-OF-THE SUBJECT,⁴ and (3) THE CHARACTERIZING FUNCTION.⁵ OCCURRENCE encompasses overt and non-overt developing action in present time or at a specified time, e.g.:

Overt

"Break it up," he growled. "C'mon, you're blocking the street."

"I'll warn Oxford that you're coming this afternoon."

Non-overt

"I'm developing a great respect for your general judgment, Mrs. Whitaker."

"I'm considering doing that right now."

INVOLVEMENT-OF-THE-SUBJECT is essentially the same as OCCURRENCE but more clearly explains expanded forms of verbs which normally appear in the simple form and which in the expanded form cannot clearly be seen to mean OCCURRENCE unless one of the three test questions for establishing the INVOLVEMENT-OF-THE-SUBJECT makes clear the occurrence meaning. These questions are: (a) What is happening to the subject? (b) What is the subject doing, busy with, engrossed in? (c) What is the subject accomplishing by his activity? Verbs which in the expanded form (e.g., have) do not clearly have a meaning we readily identify as an event or as either an overt or non-overt developing action or state, will, if they have the occurrence meaning, stand as idiomatic explanations functioning as responses to one of these three questions as the following examples illustrate:

(a) "Mom's hearing that (inadvertently)."

(b) "I'm having the family over to dinner tomorrow night."

(c) "Your faith and loyalty to Rotary is just costing you the fellowship of your own son."

The CHARACTERIZING FUNCTION is an occasional meaning the expanded form has, chiefly in combination with the adverb always (e.g., "He's always begging Peggy to slow down on her drinking").

Chapter 4 consisted of an item analysis of the two forms of the verb in my collection of citations with a view to establishing the extent to which the catalogue of meanings in Chapter 3 would explain the current usage of these two verb forms. The data, reclassified into the natural divisions suggested by the data itself, fell into the following divisions:

I. The simple form

- A. The unexpandable verbs--verbs that occurred frequently in the simple form and not at all in the expanded form.
- B. The verbs that appeared only in the simple form but whose frequency justified no conclusions about their expandability.
- C. The verbs which were relatively frequent in the simple form and rare in the expanded form.

II. The expanded form

- A. The verb to be going to plus infinitive in its modal auxiliary function.
- B. The verbs which occurred frequently in the expanded form and infrequently in the simple form.

III. Verbs that occurred frequently in both forms.

This natural division of the data resulted in approximately six hundred items which reflected the nature of all the verbs in the entire collection. The item analysis presented in detail in Chapter 4, permitted these conclusions:

- 1) Fact-of-process, with few exceptions, explained the meaning of the simple forms.
- 2) Fact-of-process in the constitutional sense was an infinitely more frequent meaning than was Fact-of-process in the sense of turning away from an event in real time.

- 3) Occurrence, with few exceptions, explained the meaning of the expanded form. Occasionally the formula for testing involvement-of-the subject had to be applied to establish the occurrence meaning. In a few items, the expanded form with the adverb always could only be explained as having the characterizing function. Such sentences usually followed a sentence denoting a real occurrence (e.g., Statement: "I'm only joking." Reply: "You're always joking").
- 4) The verbs frequent in both forms substantiated rather conclusively Bolinger's statement of the difference in the temporal meaning of the two forms:

The simple present has no confines, but all other tenses are confined in some way. It is 'timeless' not in the sense of eternal but of 'non-committal about time.' The expanded present is confined by or oriented to a beginning or possible cessation.

Of the 111 expanded-form items for which a temporal classification was attempted, 94 could be classified as single events in present time (15), or in stated future time (28), or as non-overt (43) or overt (8) developing action understood to be now. In the category now, past, present and future were not separable. Only 28 of the 105 simple-form items fit the temporal categories of the expanded form.

In summary, some general impressions about the difference between the two forms derived from substituting the two forms for each other may be in order:

- 1) The simple form is chiefly concerned with intensional meanings; the expanded form is chiefly concerned with extensional meanings. The nearer the lexical meaning of the verb approaches the intensional, the less is the likelihood that the expanded form will be idiomatic if substituted for the simple form. The gradation from extension to intension is interestingly illustrated by such verbs as expect, have and feel.
- 2) The simple form often encompasses a broader lexical meaning and is compatible with a broader lexical meaning in other words. This becomes noticeable, for example, with the conjunctions if, while and as.

- 3) The simple form may frequently be substituted for an expanded form without complete loss of meaning or idiom. The expanded form, however, substituted for the simple form is not infrequently incompatible with other words (e.g., "Usually negotiations are taking more time") or introduces an action meaning which is illogical (e.g., "He is having a fine baritone voice"). In its own environment, nevertheless, the expanded form has a precise meaning.

To establish by means of completely objective criteria the difference in the meaning of these two forms awaits, I think, the invention of more exact methods by our descriptive linguists. Lacking a precedent in such methods, this investigator has found it impossible to divorce structural and lexical meaning; the two appear to be inextricably interwoven. Fact-of-process and Occurrence, subjectively derived meanings, explain to the satisfaction of this native speaker of the language the vast majority of the two forms in current usage. To one who fully grasps the meaning of these two terms, the meaning of the two verb forms will not be a mystery.

¹The term fact-of-process was proposed by Dwight L. Bolinger. See "More on the Present Tense in English," Language, XXIII (1947), 434-436.

²The term constitution-of-things was proposed by Edward A. Calver as descriptive of the basic meaning of the simple form. See "The Use of the Present Tense Forms in English," Language, XXII (1946), 317-325.

³The term occurrence is borrowed from Edward A. Calver, but the meaning it encompasses has been stated by many writers who have used a variety of names to identify it.

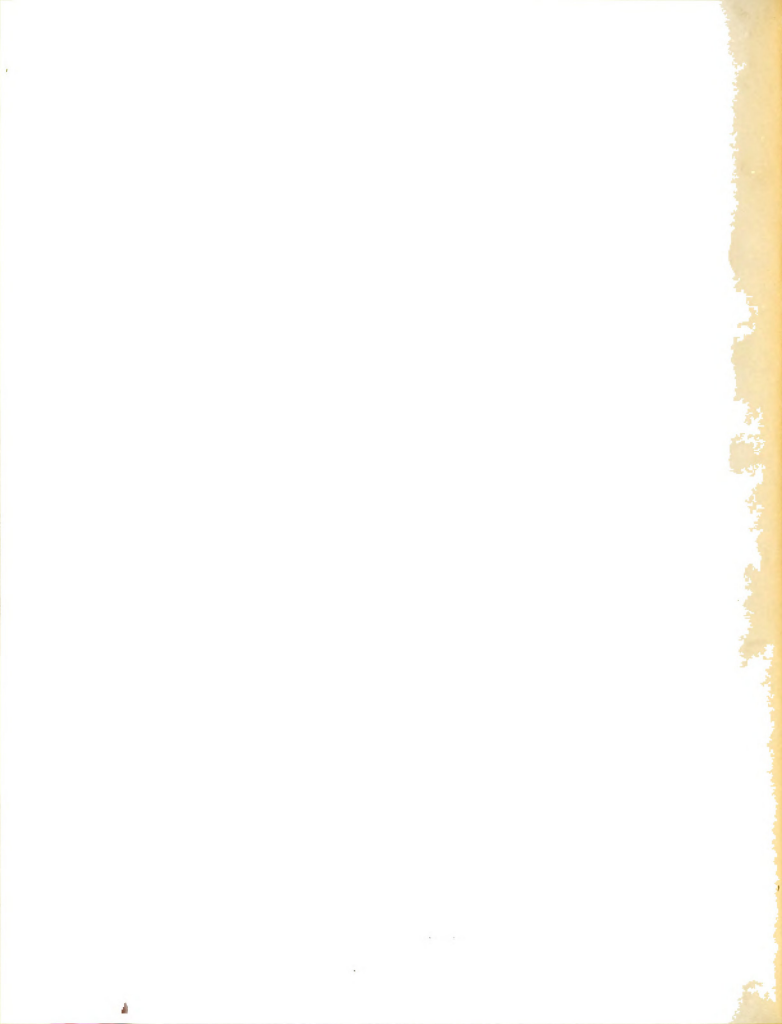
⁴The term involvement-of-the-subject was proposed by Anna Granville Hatcher in "The Use of the Progressive Form in English," Language, XXVII (1951), 254-280.

⁵The term characterizing function is used by H. Poutsma in The Characters of the English Verb and the Expanded Form or Analogous Constructions of the Verb in English and Cognate Languages, (Groningen: P. Noordhoff) 1921. It is also used by Phil Aronstein, "Die periphrastische Form im Englischen," Anglia, XXXXIII (1918), 1-84.



CONTENTS

	Page
Acknowledgements	i
Vita	ii
Chapter	
I. Definition and History	1
1. Definition	1
2. History of the Forms	4
3. Theories of Origin	7
II. The Grammatical Environment	14
1. Adverbial Modifiers	14
2. Dependent Clauses	22
3. Verb plus Infinitive	35
4. Quasi-imperatives	36
III. A Catalogue of Meanings	41
1. The Simple Form	43
2. The Expanded Form	56
IV. The Verb Itself	75
1. The Simple Form	75
2. The Expanded Form	111
3. Both Forms	120
V. Conclusion	132
Appendices	
I.	140
II.	269
Bibliography	301



Chapter 1

Introduction

This study is an investigation of two variant forms of the English verb in the present tense (e.g., goes vs. is going). The objective of the study is to distinguish, in so far as possible, the difference or differences in meaning of the two forms in current usage. The study is based primarily on a collection of citations from contemporary reading (Appendix I); it includes an objective analysis of grammatical patterns in which the two forms occur (Chapter 2) and a subjective analysis of individual sentences (Chapters 3, 4). The present chapter is concerned primarily with definitions and history.

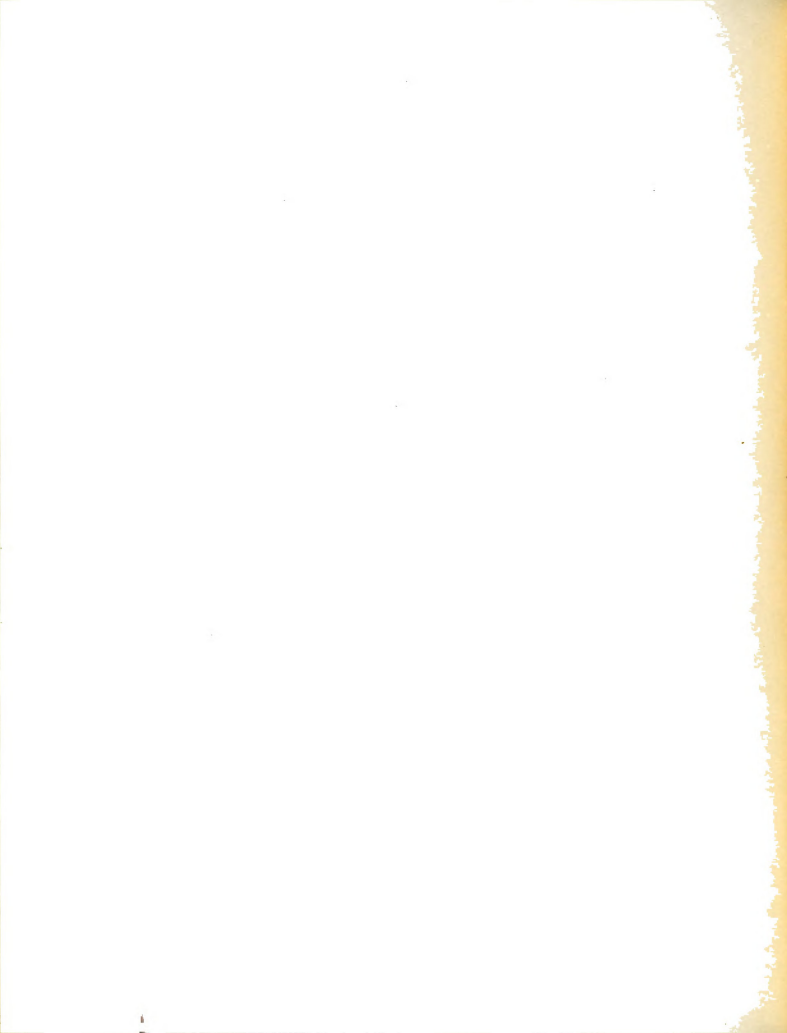
I

Definition

The simple form is the term used to identify the one-word verb as well as the corresponding forms used with not and in questions (e.g., he goes, he does not go, does he go?). The expanded form is the term used to identify the verb composed of the auxiliary to be plus the -ing form of the verb proper (e.g., is going).¹

The verb to be can, of course, be followed by an adjective ending in -ing, (e.g., The book is interesting) and by a substantive

¹Grammarians use a variety of names to identify the form to be plus ing. H. Sweet, (New English Grammar, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1931, II, p. 96) uses the term definite tense; Gratton and Gurrey, (Our Living Language, London: T. Nelson & Sons, Ltd., 1925, p. 217) use continuous tense; Phil Aronstein, "Die periphrastische Form im Englischen," Anglia, XLII (1918), pp. 1-84) and F. Mossé, (Histoire de la Forme Periphrastique Etre + Participe



ending in -ing (e.g., That act is stealing) as well as by the present participle attached to the to be form as a part of the verb (e.g., It is raining). The -ing form is then structurally ambiguous since it is an ending which attaches itself to words belonging in different grammatical categories but which may nevertheless occupy the same position in a sentence. Normally the -ing form which is a part of the verb phrase can be shown to be a part of the verb because the verb phrase can be reduced to the simple form; that is, "It is raining" can be reduced to "It rains." "The book is interesting" can not idiomatically be reduced to "The book interests;" "That act is stealing" cannot be reduced to "That act steals" without violating both the idiom and the sense of the original.

Normally an adjective -ing form preceded by a form of to be can be shown to be an adjective by the insertion of the adverb very between the to be form and the adjective: "The book is very interesting." Sentences in which the adverb very attaches itself as modifier of other adverbs or of adjectives are easily invented: "He speaks very fluently" and "He is very doubtful of the outcome." I have not found nor can I invent idiomatic sentences

Présent en Anglais de 1200 à Nos Jours, Thèse Pour le Docteur ès Lettres Présentée à la Faculté des Lettres de l' Université de Paris, 1938) use the term periphrastic form; Edward Calver, "The Uses of the Present Tense Forms in English," Language, XXII (1946), pp. 317-325) and Anna Granville Hatcher, ("The Use of the Progressive Form in English," Language, XXVII (1951), pp. 254-280) refer to the form as the progressive form. According to H. Poutsma, (The Characters of the English Verb and the Expanded Form, Groningen: P. Noordhoff, 1921, pp. 48-49) the term expanded form was proposed by O. Jespersen in Tid og Tempus. This term is favored by Poutsma and others because it does not imply, as progressive and continuous do, that one function of the form is its sole function nor is the term subject to the ambiguity inherent in periphrastic, a term used to designate the periphrasis with to do as well as with to be.

in which very modifies a verb. Thus it seems to be the one degree adverb which can be used to test whether an -ing form following to be is an adjective or a verb. Cf. "She is very pleasing" and "She is very singing". The few adjective -ing forms which occurred in my data can be reduced to the simple form of the verb, but idiomatically only with a direct object. Cf. "Your language shocks" and "Your language shocks me." With the -ing form, the word very can be inserted between the to be form and the adjective and the statement remains idiomatic:

"Why, your language is [very] shocking, Mr. Burns."
(1407)²

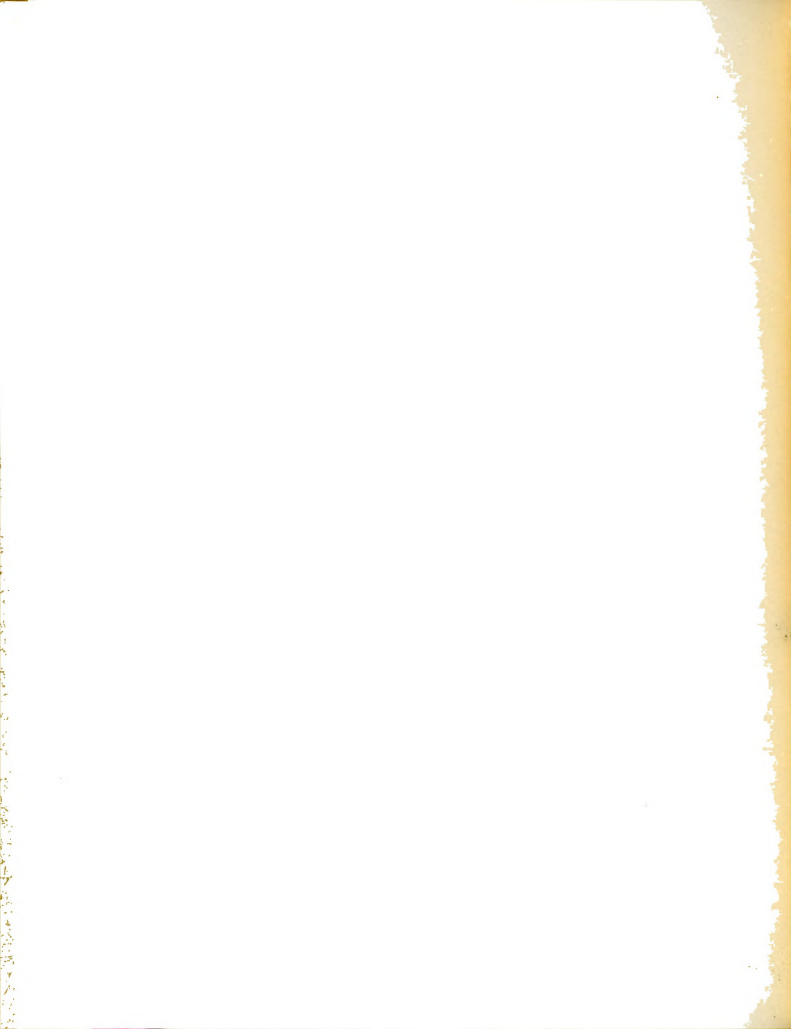
"It's [very] startling to discover how closely, and in how many respects the parallel holds between the first months of talkies and the first years of television. (540)

"...It's [very] amazing," he said, "what a cat nap will do . . ." (182)

"...It's [very] discouraging because it's true."
(1508)

When a substantive -ing form follows a form of to be, it can usually be shown to be a substantive because it remains idiomatic if the determiner the is inserted. Usually a preposition must also be inserted but occasionally the preposition occurs in the context. These are function words which occur before substantives but not before verbs. According to this test, the following -ing forms are substantives and not a part of the verb:

²The numbers assigned to citations are the numbers which identify the citations in Appendix I where they are listed under source and page number.



A crucial problem lies ahead for the next President of the United States, for which Ike is singularly qualified. This is [the] bringing [of] unity to the now disunited Western nations facing Russia. (551)

In his swan-song address last month, President Truman declared that it was "just as immoral to use the law-making power of the Government to enrich the few at the expense of the many, as it is to steal money from the Public Treasury. That is [the] stealing [of] money from the Public Treasury." (1128)

"All intelligent conversation is [the] playing on words," Keefer said. (668)

One of the most urgent needs is to find light-weight shielding materials. Another is [the] developing [of] some system to convert heat into propulsive power . . . (668)

Some persons . . . assume that the big trick in building nuclear engines is [the] "taming" [of] the fission process . . . (614)

In summary, three tests -- the possibility of reducing to be + -ing to the simple form, the test word very for adjectival -ing, and the test word the for substantive -ing -- serve to differentiate the expanded form from apparently similar forms.

II

History of the Forms

The simple form, with phonetic variations, has, of course, been a staple of the language from the beginning. At least as an occasional variant, the expanded form also occurs in all three historical periods of the language. Klaeber identifies three forms in the Beowulf as "progressives": ēhtende waes (l. 159), secggende waes (l. 3028), myndgiend wære (l. 1105). I find two in the Parker Chronicle: þær was xii monað wuniende ;

paet hie wiþ þone here winnende waerun.³ Bede's "Account of Caedmon" contains three: . . . ond ut was mon ende; se ðe wið hine spreccende was; and þus glædlice tō ūs spreccende gart.⁴

Table I below shows that the form continues as an occasional variant through the Middle English period.

Table I⁵

<u>Title of Sample & Date</u>	<u>Size of Sample</u>	<u>No. of Forms</u>
Northumbrian Psalter (c.1300)	11 (325 11.)	5
Handlyng Synne (1303)	12 (370 11.)	1
Cursor Mundi (c.1320)	13 (416 11.)	4
Eng. Met. Homilies (c.1330)	13 (405 11.)	2
Ayenbite of Inwyrt (1340)	8	2
Pricke of Conscience (c.1340)	17 (496 11.)	4
Political Songs (c.1350)	11 (110 11.)	1
Deluge (c.1360)	12 (815 11.)	1
The Bruce, Book vii (1375)	11 (485 11.)	1
Wycliffite Mark (c.1380)	17	2
Melibee (c.1395)	24	0
Le Morte Darthur, Bk. XXI (1485)	38	2
Apologie For Poetry (1595)	84	0
Bacon's Essays (1597-1625)	59	0
Compleat Angler (1653)	42	9
Hydriotaphia (1658)	63	0
Grace Abounding (1666)	42	15
Dryden's Preface to Fables (1700)	38	5
The Spectator (1711-12)	73	32
Gulliver's Travels, Bk. I (1726)	105	17
Johnson's Addison (1781)	67	9
Boswell's Life of Johnson (1793)	126	31
Atlantic Monthly, June, 1953	30	48
Harper's Magazine, Nov., 1952	34	46

³ed. A.H. Smith (London: Methuen & Co. Ltd., 1951), pp. 22 and 25.

⁴Bright's Anglo-Saxon Reader, ed. James R. Hulbert (New York: Henry Holt & Co., 1948), pp. 9 and 12.

⁵The excerpts for the Middle English samples are taken from Specimens of Early English, edited by Morris and Skeat. The pages in this book are much smaller than the pages in Book of English Literature, Vol. I, edited by Snyder and Martin, and in the Atlantic Monthly and Harper's Magazine from which the samples for the modern period are taken. The number of pages in the two magazines and in Snyder and Martin per sample were therefore

The early modern period represented in Table I only by Mallory may be supplemented with evidence from Mosse⁶, who finds the form in the writings of Mandeville and Caxton, in Roper's Life of More, Sidney's Arcadia and Latimer's sermons as well as in the works of several other Fifteenth and Sixteenth Century writers.⁶

The Atlantic and Harper's figures in Table I suggest that the form has had its greatest growth since the Eighteenth Century. Since frequency depends somewhat on the nature of the material, however, a more accurate indication of the growth of the form may be obtained by comparing two different translations of the same material. Table II shows the number of expanded forms used in the Gospels of Mathew and Mark by the translators of the Authorized Version (1611) and by a recent translator, James Moffatt.⁷

Table II⁸

	<u>Authorized Version</u>	<u>Moffatt</u>
Mathew	6	58
Mark	3	45

equated with those in Morris and Skeat so as to represent approximately the same number of words per page. The "size of sample", then, is simply a number used to indicate the relative length of the selections read. The quotations are listed in Appendix II.

⁶F. Mosse, Histoire de la Forme Periphrastique "Être" + Participe Présent en Anglais de 1200 à Nos Jours (Paris, 1938), p. 70.

⁷The New Testament (New York: Harpers, 1922, 1935).

⁸Jespersen (Essentials of Grammar 24.7.1) says, "In the Gospel of St. Mark the Authorized Version has only twenty-nine expanded tenses, but has seventy-eight simple tenses where now expanded forms would be naturally used." His figures, which do not correspond with mine, may include -ing forms which occur in there constructions, e.g., "But there were certain of the scribes sitting there . . ." I have listed such constructions in Appendix II, where the citations from the A.V. and Moffatt are grouped for convenient comparison. Moffatt, however, did not

The expanded form is unquestionably more frequent today than it was in the early modern period. Its frequency now, as then, is governed somewhat by the nature of the material. Table I indicates it occurs most frequently in Walton, Bunyan, Addison and Boswell. These pieces, though vastly different in subject matter, are alike in that they employ a relatively informal, colloquial style. Sydney, Dryden, and Johnson are all concerned with principles of literary criticism; the expanded form is infrequent, I think, not only because the style is more formal but because the authors are concerned chiefly with abstract concepts. In the Atlantic Monthly,⁹ a statement of principle, three pages in length, contains no expanded forms. As we shall see in Chapter 4, the expanded form has today an affinity for the concrete, for that which is extensional; the simple form has an affinity for the abstract or intensional. This seems to have been true in Dryden's day as well.

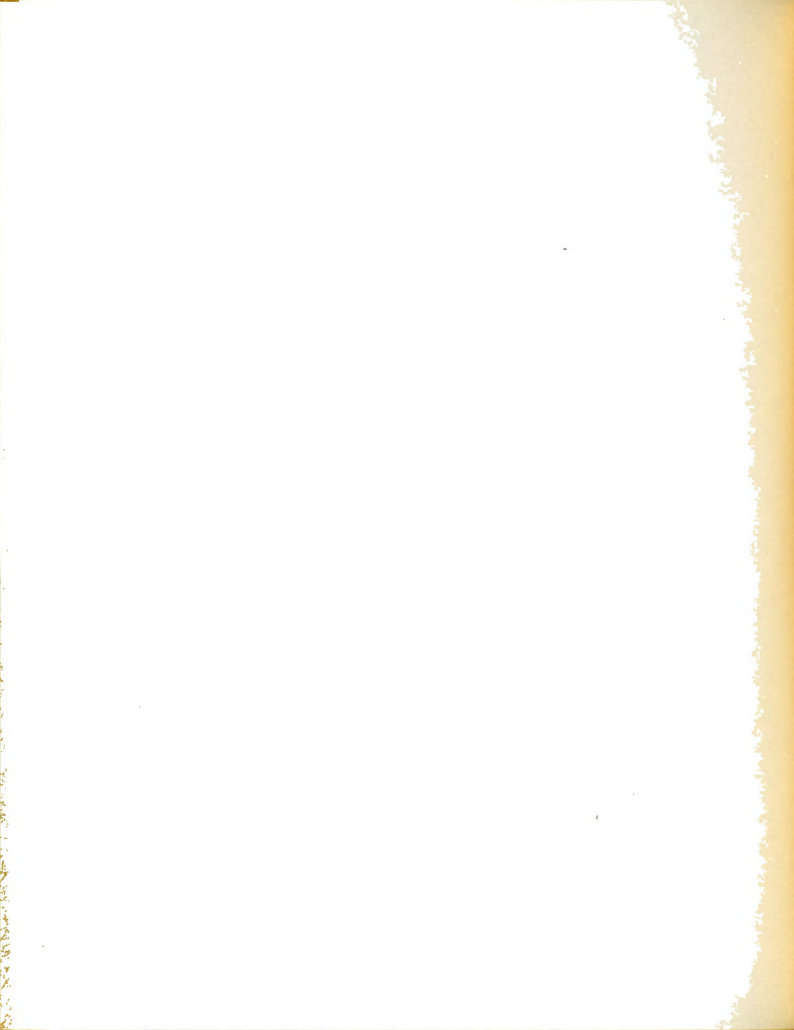
III

Theories of Origin

Three different theories of the origin of the expanded form have been promulgated by various investigators. One theory holds that the modern form evolved solely from the verb to be +

find seventy-eight simple tenses to convert into expanded forms.

⁹"The Present Danger," June, 1953, pp. 44-46.



present participle as adjective. So Sweet believed.¹⁰ By implication both Akerlund¹¹ and Curme,¹² in their histories of the expanded form, support this theory, though they make no direct statements to that effect. Some of the citations listed in Appendix II may be used to support, or at least illustrate, this theory. First, participles of intransitive verbs indicating state rather than motion might have been used with the verb to be:

For I know nane that liffand is. (2174)

. . . freis water and se
 Sal bren als fir and glouand be. (2163)

Ite sembeles that he slepand is. (2164)

Here the participle might still have had adjectival force, without any necessary fusion with the verb. This relatively static, descriptive construction might in turn have paved the way for the use of verbs of motion with to be:

. . . be uader of be house wyste huyche time
 be pyef were comynde. (2165)

Euer he wulde be bowande. (2158)

Here the fusion of participle and verb into a unit seems more complete. So, too, with transitive verbs:

He . . . Ne his siluer til okir nought es giuand. (2153)

Rewed es Lauerd . . .
 Of pa bat him dredand be. (2156)

¹⁰New English Grammar, (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1931), II, p. 96.

¹¹Alfred Akerlund, The History of the Definite Tenses in English (Cambridge: W. Heffer & Sons, Ltd., 1911).

¹²George O. Curme, "Development of the Progressive Form," PMLA, XXVIII (1913), pp. 159-87.

Unhappily this reconstruction depends on a feeling for "verbness" rather than a chronological sequence or a sufficient number of citations. Furthermore, this theory does not consider the question of Latin influence on Old English and assumes that the modern form is a direct continuation of a development which began some time in the Old English period. Failure to consider the possible influence of Latin upon Old English, leaves unanswered the question of whether a construction employed to translate a Latin deponent verb was a construction characteristic of the spoken language.

A second theory is that the modern expanded form is a creation of the modern period and not a continuation of the to be + present participle construction found in the Old English. This theory assumes that the -ing form of the expanded verb is an original substantive which came to stand next to the to be form because the intervening preposition on through aphesis became a and eventually disappeared. According to this theory the evolutionary stages may be represented thus: He waes on huntung > He was a-hunting > He was hunting. Both Walton and Bunyan use locutions which reflect such a development:

I have been a-fishing, and am going to Bleak Hall... (2195)

So as I was a-going home, these words came again into my thoughts . . . (2209)

. . .while he was yet a-coming to him. . . (2208)

Jespersen is the chief proponent of the to be + on + -ing theory. He argues that the Old English to be + present participle con-



struction was not native to the language but a "slavish imitation of the Latin."¹³ He supports his argument that the form was not native in Old English by comparing the dearth of to be + present participle constructions in the native literature with the profusion of forms found in the translated works. For example, he finds but a single to be + present participle construction in the original part of the *Orosius*, i.e. the voyages of *Onthere* and *Wulfstan*, whereas a translated portion of comparable length contains twenty-four. Jespersen apparently assumed that this construction, because it was not native, was not absorbed into the spoken language and thus did not survive. After the publication of Akerlund's work, however, Jespersen modified his position to the extent that he conceded the modern form was "in some vague way" a continuation of the Old English, but he continued to believe that the to be + on + -ing was the chief source of the expanded form and the best explanation of its meaning.

The third theory assumes that the modern expanded form has, in Aronstein's words, "a double root;"¹⁴ that is, the verbal -ing form derives from both the substantive -ing and the adjectival -ing forms. Since this theory utilizes the positive evidence urged by the proponents of both the other theories, it seems entirely plausible.

Mosse's investigation of the origin of the form--the most recent and most extensive--modifies some of the historical facts

¹³Otto Jespersen, *Modern English Grammar* (Heidelberg: Carl Winters Universitätsbuchhandlung, 1931), IV, p.164 ff.

¹⁴"Die periphrastische Form im Englischen," *Anglia*, XLIII (1918), 6-7.

upon which the second theory depends and corroborates the double root theory. Mosse¹⁵ shows that a verbal noun in -ung had become -ing by the end of the first quarter of the Thirteenth Century.¹⁵ Furthermore, the noun in -ing was used to express the same notions expressed by the participial construction, as Mosse's comparison of three manuscript versions of the Northern Passion (l. 479) indicates:

(Ms. G 5) Apon hys knees he fell wepand

(Ms. A d) he felle down on wepyng

(Ms. I) he fel down wepynge

Roughly concurrent with the change of the noun in -ung to -ing was a pervasive phonetic tendency of the -nd combination to shift to -ng. This tendency affected the participial ending inde/ende/ande, which became formally identical with the noun in -ing. Mosse¹⁵ says that, from the point of view of form, the present participle takes the termination of the noun but that, from the point of view of function, the noun is introduced into the domain of the verb. The noun introduced into the domain of the verb Mosse¹⁵ calls a gerund and says it is a Middle English creation. Its verbal characteristics are evident in its ability to take a direct and indirect object and to be modified by an adverb. This noun then acquired the characteristic "verbness" which is not characteristic of other nouns. Mosse's findings pretty clearly establish the "double root" as the origin of the modern expanded form.

¹⁵Mosse¹⁵, pp. 85-86.



Mossé's explanation deviates from Jespersen's to be + on + -ing theory; he shows that the -ing form without a preposition on or a was earlier and more frequent than the form with the preposition. That is, to be doing was earlier and more frequent than to be a-doing. The former type is, according to Mossé, the "true periphrastic", which was reasserting itself at the time when the to be a-doing type developed, but even in the period of its greatest frequency (1500-1700), the to be a-doing type did not occur more than twenty per cent of the time.¹⁶ The development of the to be a-doing type, however, gave some impetus to the growth of the "true periphrastic." Mossé concludes:

Quant à dire que to be a-doing est la source principale, ou même le seule, de la FP [periphrastic form] moderne, il n'est plus personne pour le soutenir sérieusement. La vérité, c'est que he was a-doing vient se perdre dans he was doing comme un affluent dans un fleuve qu'il va grossir.¹⁷

The participle in inde/ende/ande adjacent to the verb to be is generally accepted as a construction which came into English through the influence of Church Latin.¹⁸ It has been

¹⁶
p. 128

¹⁷
p. 128

¹⁸Jespersen, of course, always held this view. Curme, who did not consider the question of Latin influence in his history of the form, in a more recent work (Principles and Practice of English Grammar (New York: Barnes & Noble, Inc., 1947, p. 259) says: "It was a foreign construction that came into the English from the Vulgate." In his preface Mossé says: dans un premier ouvrage nous avons essayé d'établir qu'en ancien germanique la périphrase composée du verbe "être" et du participe présent était d'importation étrangère (grecque pour le gotique, latine pour les autres dialectes) et que ce tour avait échoué partout sauf en vieil-anglais. p. viii.

found in the other Germanic languages as well but it survived only in English and is the accepted explanation of how the participle came to be felt as a part of the verb.

Chapter 2

The Grammatical Environment

The citations for this study were classified according to certain grammatical categories in an attempt to see whether grammar would provide an objective basis for confirming or disproving the meanings attributed to the two verb forms either from observation of the verb word or the intuition of the observer. Unfortunately, the results were largely, although not entirely, negative. The findings lend some support to the meanings of the two verb forms discussed in detail in Chapter 3. This chapter, which constitutes a report of the results derived from the grammatical groupings, includes a discussion of (1) adverbial modifiers in independent clauses, (2) dependent clauses, (3) verb + infinitive, and (4) quasi-imperatives.

I

Approximately the same number of simple and expanded forms are included in the data for this study, but, since some verbs appear only in the simple form,¹ they constitute a special group which is excluded from the data used for studying verbs that alternate forms. Consequently, the sample from which verbs with adverbial modifiers could be selected was smaller for the simple form than for the expanded form. Out of a possible 486 items, simple forms with adverbial modifiers numbered 182, and out of a possible 675 items, expanded forms with adverbial modifiers

¹See Ch. 4, p. 75

numbered 260. These items were grouped according to verb form and word order.

The word-order patterns are the same for both forms with the exception that the adverb stands between the copula and -ing form and before the simple form in such sentences as "He's still singing" and "He still sings." As would be expected, the bulk of the items fall into one of two patterns: subject-verb-adverb or subject-verb-object-adverb. Since the adverb occupies the same positions in sentences, regardless of verb form, word order appears not to be a factor which might indicate the difference between the two forms.

Words, phrase or clauses for which the words then, there, thus could be substituted were classed as adverbial modifiers. The thus, there meanings found with one form exhibited no characteristic which was in any way different from thus, there meanings found with the other form. Something of a trend, however, is discernible in the then meanings as indicated in the tables below.

Table I shows those adverbs which occurred in my data only with the expanded form:

Table I

<u>Adverb</u>	<u>Frequency of occurrence</u>
1. already	2
2. as I write this	1
3. at a good moment (present)	1
4. any minute now	1
5. after all these years (now)	1
6. at the moment	1
7. a little later	1
8. at present	1
9. for the last time	1
10. in October	1
11. in May	1

12.	in a few years	1
13.	in a few weeks	1
14.	in a hydrogen bomb age	1
15.	in the morning	1
16.	constantly	1
17.	continually	1
18.	of the moment	1
19.	Sunday morning	1
20.	soon	1
21.	temporarily	1
22.	this week	1
23.	this evening	2
24.	this morning	1
25.	this afternoon	4
26.	Thursday afternoon	1
27.	tonight	6
28.	Friday	1
29.	this fall	1
30.	this spring	1
31.	day after tomorrow	1
32.	then	1
33.	then (after I'm through)	1
34.	then (two days later)	1
35.	before I'm through	1
36.	June tenth	1
37.	the 16th of next month	1
38.	later in 1950	1

In general the adverbs above (notably Nos. 15, 19, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 31, 37) indicate specific time, and specificity is characteristic of "occurrence" or "action in progress", meanings of the expanded form discussed at length in Chapter 3.

Table II below shows all the adverbial modifiers found with the simple form and indicates which of these modifiers also occurred with the expanded form:

Table II

<u>Adverb</u>	<u>Simple form</u>	<u>Expanded form</u>
1. a year	1	
2. again	1	5
3. always	3	8
4. all at once	1	
5. all day long	1	
6. any old day	1	
7. anymore	1	

8.	at once	1	
9.	at Christmas	1	
10.	at ten, twelve and two	1	(at eleven) 1
11.	day by day	1	
12.	every time we turn our backs	1	
13.	ever	1	
14.	every week	1	
15.	frequently	3	
16.	for some minutes	1	
17.	for the last time	1	
18.	hourly	1	
19.	in no time	1	
20.	in four years of college	1	
21.	in spring	1	
22.	nights	2	
23.	never	6	
24.	now	5	30
25.	no longer	1	
26.	nearly every year	1	
27.	nearly as often	1	
28.	not only when caged	1	
29.	on special occasions	1	
30.	once or twice a week	1	
31.	often	3	
32.	pretty soon	1	
33.	pretty near as often as	1	
34.	only rarely now	1	
35.	still	3	6
36.	sometimes	3	
37.	sometime	1	
38.	to this day	1	
39.	today	1	9
40.	tomorrow	1	6
41.	two or three times a month	1	
42.	three times a week	1	
43.	this time of night	1	
44.	the year around	1	
45.	this season	1	
46.	usually	5	
47.	when clause	8	8
48.	week-days	1	

Contrasted with the adverbs in Table I, most of the adverbs in Table II indicate recurrence of time (notably Nos. 10, 12, 14, . . . 15, 22, 26, 27, 30, 31, 33, 36, 41, 42, 46, 48,), extent of time (Nos. 1, 5, 16, 20, 21, 45), or indefinite time (Nos. 6, 29, 36, 48). This nonspecific or general time is largely compatible with the meaning constitution-of-things, discussed in detail in



Chapter 3; it is less compatible with "action in progress."

Table II indicates the expanded form is not, in my data, modified by the adverbs suggesting the recurrence we associate with custom such as often, frequently, usually. If the expanded form is substituted for a simple form modified by these adverbs, the expanded form is usually unidiomatic:

Usually negotiations take more time. (1103)

"Take nearly every year in California, it rains this season." (2126)

Often Romanoff gets so preoccupied with the egg that he can't sleep. (934)

"For Chris' sake, Jennie! Every time we turn our backs you start that God-damn sweeping." (1760)

The use of concrete terms frequently saves time. (2047)

This usually takes time, several changes of mind. (2098)

Of those adverbs in Table II which occur with both simple and expanded forms, now, today, and tomorrow occur notably more often with the expanded form than with the simple. Since these adverbs suggest a specific time, their frequent use with the expanded form is in accord with the general tendency observable in Table I. Since now and today can refer to an extent of time, their occurrence with the simple form is not out of line with the general tendency in Table II. In all but one item, when the simple form was modified by now or today, the temporal meaning of the adverb was now-a-days or these days:

Trappers ride out to their lines by bus now. (886)

(See also items 912, 919, and 1762 in Appendix I). The ex-

ception to this involved the verb to have, a verb which does not expand when it means "possess":

"And now I have great news for you." (1761)

This verb also occurred in the same meaning when the modifier was today:

Today, for example, the various states have sixteen different methods of marking center lines and three different rules for marking left turns. (2023)

Of the thirty expanded forms modified by now, the time in fifteen was the moment of speaking and the action was "in progress."

"In fact, he's screaming at me now. Here he is." (1581)

"Now I'm waiting for some dame I've never seen before." (1754)

(See also items 7, 1162, 1247, 1249, 1549, 1578, 1579, 1582, 1587, 1592, 1739, 1740, 1755, 1756). The adverb now had the meaning present time in the other items and the action was one extending over a wide time-spread:

Test pilots are working now at altitudes where oxygen must be pumped into lungs under pressure. (835)

The Atomic Energy Commission is now building a battering room to assault this roadblock. (685)

(See also items 24, 421, 572, 574, 1122, 1163, 1227, 1158, 1588, 1738, 1744 in Appendix I). When the adverb today modified the expanded form, it meant this day in three items:

A horse named McCarthy is running in the sixth race today. (1575)

(See also items 1576 and 1577 in Appendix I). In the remaining six items today had the value of currently:

Today the plantation is flourishing and investors are crowding in . . . (927)

(See also 96, 908, 1032, 1102 in Appendix I). The items in which the stated time is tomorrow all refer to a single event. Most of the verbs denote motion: fly, leave, sail, go. The simple form occurred only once: "The Austrian leader flies to Chicago tomorrow." (2018). When the stated time was future, the forms could be substituted for each other without any significant change in meaning except in two expanded-form items which had a suggestion of modality such as we sometimes find with shall and will. Shall seemed a more appropriate substitute than the simple form:

"You see, I'm not so dumb. I'm having the family over tomorrow night. I imagined tonight would be taken." (256)

"But I'm not going away tomorrow, Birdie. There's plenty of time to worry about Horace when he comes home." (1571)

The fact that again occurred with the expanded form more frequently than with the simple form may have some significance. Unlike frequently or usually, again does not refer to customary recurrence of the act or state indicated by a verb. If the expanded form indicates "action in progress" and if the simple form indicates "constitution-of-things", a previous occurrence of "action in progress" is probably more frequent than a previous occurrence of the "constitution-of-things." When again occurred with the expanded form, a single act or state was "in progress" in three out of five instances:

"Well," she said, "Mattie's sulking again." (1248)

(See also items 40 and 41). In two items the action was

apparently not a single event "in progress":

The Swiss are again mining their strategic roads. . . (916)

The psychological study of literature is hotting up again. (556)

The only simple form modified by again is also modified by never, which makes the generalization absolute:

When rats eat of any poison but do not die, they know what has tried to kill them. They never eat it again. (1029)

The adverb still apparently adds the idea of continuation equally well to both simple and expanded forms:

"No, don't reach for that phone yet. I'm still thinking." (733)

"Although Young left a regular job twenty-three years ago, he still acts as senior consultant. . ." (907)

(See also items 21, 1314, 733, 907, 1125, 1717, 1768, 2125 in Appendix I.)

Most interesting of the adverbs that occur with both forms is always. An apparent absolute (like never, which here occurs only with the simple form), always occurs more frequently with the expanded form than with the simple. If always is dropped from the context in which the simple form occurs, the statement retains essentially the same meaning; that is, it remains a generalization. The adverb appears merely to make the generalization absolute:

"You always talk like that when I'm having a good time." (1694)

"Mattie has a lot to do . . . and she's no chicken. She always gets that way." (1306)

"The morning star always gets wonderful bright the minute before it has to go out." (1690)



If always is dropped from the context of an expanded form, the meaning changes. The action is then understood to be an occurrence in present time:

"You are always joking," said Mr. Princey.
 "People think there must be something to
 it." (1308)

"She's always bringing Carole flowers and
 vegetables," Tom said. (1319)

(See also items 1322, 1316, 1473, and 1765 in Appendix I). The expanded form, unmodified, does not in my data express the general meaning the simple form expresses when unmodified.

From this study of adverb modifiers, we may summarize these points:

1) There is a general tendency for adverbs denoting a specific time to be used with the expanded form.

2) There is a general tendency for adverbs denoting recurrent time or an extent of time to be used with the simple form; in this data usually, often, and frequently, for example, occurred only with the simple form.

3) Always appears to be unique among the adverbs recorded; if it is removed from an expanded-form statement in which it occurs, the statement changes from a generalization to a statement of a present occurrence.

II

Dependent Clauses

In the following tables all dependent clauses were classified according to the introductory word; the clauses using the simple form of the verb were separated from those using the expanded

form. Adjective clauses in my data show the expanded form somewhat more often than the simple form (64 to 49 times); substantive clauses, curiously enough, show the expanded form far more frequently than the simple form (100 to 49 times). I have been unable to attach any significance to this distribution, but the distribution itself--apparently meaningless--merits being recorded here.

Table III shows the distribution of verb forms in those clauses which had no introductory word.

Table III²

Word preceding the clause and structurally related.	Word which could be supplied	Simple form	Expanded form
a. substantive	who, whom which	9	24
b. verb	that	8	50
c. adjective	that	0	2

Group (a) consists of adjective clauses, group (b) of substantive clauses. The expanded form is notably more frequent in both groups. Sentences illustrating the various groupings in Table III are as follows:

- (a) "I hope you'll forgive this hideous smock I'm wearing." (1366)

² In a few clauses a substantive stood between the clause and the verb to which it was structurally related, e.g. "But don't tell me you don't think people are getting over" (1352) and "I've told Oxford you're coming." (1190) These clauses were classified with those in which the clause followed the verb immediately as in the sentences illustrating group (b).

- (b) "My boys say they're enjoying it ever so much, my dear." (620)
- (c) "Look here, Martin, I'm glad you're keeping on with science, but. . ." (91)

A second group of clauses essentially like those illustrated above were distinguished only by the fact that the introductory word that was expressed. The distribution of verb forms is tabulated below:

Table IV

Word preceding a <u>that</u> clause and structurally re- lated.	<u>That</u> was equal to . . .	Simple form	Expanded form
a. substantive	who, which	24	12
b. substantive	where	1	0
c. verb	that	16	24
d. adjective	that	0	2

Here the simple form occurs far more frequently than the expanded form in adjective clauses (group a), unlike the results of Table III. In the substantive clauses (here group c), the expanded form continues to be more frequent, but the difference between the frequency of the expanded form and the frequency of the simple form is markedly less.

Table V shows the distribution of simple and expanded forms in clauses introduced by who, which, or what:

Table V

a. <u>Who</u> clauses preceded by:	Simple form	Expanded form
(1) a substantive	10	18
(2) a verb	0	2
b. <u>Which</u> clauses preceded by a substantive	5	10
c. <u>What</u> clauses		
(1) after a verb (object)	6	20
(2) before a verb (subject)	1	4
(3) after an adjective	0	1

Sentences illustrating the groupings represented in Table V are as follows:

- a. (1) What may be shocking . . . is the number of our citizens who fall into one or another of these groups. (654)
- He laughed at himself, like a salesman after a sale who is admitting his humanity. (433)
- (2) I don't know who's giving it to him, but he's got money." (432)
- b. The annual crop of 6000 bushels, which he calls "Old Jim Young's Mountain-Grown Apples," eventually will expand to about 30,000 bushels a year. (984)
- Fifth, there are the private pension funds which are growing fast. (627)
- c. (1) "I don't know what they're complaining about." (1361)
- (2) What the Catholic bishops are fighting is. . . (528)
- What does matter is that . . . (451)
- (3) Isn't it wonderful what we're doing in Korea?" (975)

Here adjective clauses (groups a. 1 and b.) use the expanded form more frequently than the simple form, as in Table III. The substantive clauses (a. 2 and c.) use the expanded form more frequently than the simple form, as in both Tables III and IV.



In so far as I can tell, however, these facts do not contribute toward an understanding of the basic difference in the meaning of the two forms.

Subordinating conjunctions other than that, like the adverbial modifiers, hint at differences in the meaning of the two verb forms. The subordinating conjunctions (other than that) which occurred and their frequency of occurrence with each verb form is indicated in Table VI below:

Table VI

<u>Conjunction</u>	<u>Simple form</u>	<u>Expanded form</u>
after	2	0
although	2	0
as	7	1
as--as	3	1
as--so	1	0
as--though	0	1
because	4	6
before	24	0
even though	1	0
if (in event that)	48	14
if (whether)	2	3
like (as if)	1	1
since	3	1
unless	4	2
until, till	22	0
when	47	29
while	6	10

Unfortunately, for many of the conjunctions too few examples are recorded to allow generalizations about them. For some, however, there is probably sufficient evidence for tentative statements.

The temporal adverbs after, before and until are followed only by simple forms in my data, as Table VI indicates. The data originally included but two before clauses and one until clause. Since the expanded form was not represented, I made a special search for such clauses. In approximately six hundred

pages of reading I collected twenty-two before clauses and twenty-one until clauses, none of which used the expanded form.³ The tabulation below shows all the verbs which appeared in these clauses and the frequency of their occurrence. With the exception of to hear, they are all verbs which expand freely; those which are starred have a high frequency in the expanded form both in independent clauses and in dependent clauses introduced by conjunctions other than before and until:

Table VII

<u>Verb</u>	<u>Before</u>	<u>Until, Till</u>
bring	1	0
*come	1	4
continue	1	0
die	1	2
fall	1	0
find	1	1
*forget	1	0
*get	1	5
get hold of	1	0
*go	6	1
go on (continue)	1	0
hear	1	1
hurt	1	0
kill	0	1
kick	1	0
*leave	1	0
lose	1	0
make	1	0
organize	0	1
return	1	0
*talk	0	1
take over	1	0
*tell	1	1
tie-up	1	0

³An expanded form after before is possible: "He won't be here five minutes before he's telling you he can't write a word"; recorded by A. Poutsma, The Characters of the English Verb and the Expanded Form, Groningen; P. Noordhoff, 1922, p. 79.

The verbs bring, come, go and leave denote motion which can readily be extended over a period of time. Similarly get, die, talk, tell denote processes adaptable to an extent of time. These temporal conjunctions, however, have a point-of-time meaning; and, if the expanded form is substituted for the simple form, the clause is unidiomatic or the action is represented as "in the midst of" at the point of time designated by the conjunction:

After

"That's a conversation I'd like to hear."
"I'll repeat it for you tonight after I talk to her . . . word for word." (362)

"Oh, Bunny, after you get to Washington will you introduce me to some Senators?" (1884)

Before

"I've got to shower before I curdle." (372)

"We got to think fast before those lying reporters get hold of this." (1887)

"Now before you go to bed don't eat more than you would in the Rockies . . . Before you get into bed, put your window shades up . . . Before you fall asleep, concentrate on the time you want to wake up." (380)

(See also items 360, 363, 370, 373, 444, 1821, 1866, 1867, 1868, 1839 1890, 1891, 1892, 1893, 1894, 1895, 368 in Appendix I).

Until

"I guess that will hold him until the gendarmes come." (1220)

"Or---we can put you on temporary duty here in the officer pool till she gets back from Pearl." (375)

"No! No! We don't want him but wait till he gets through." (1876)

"Now don't move until I come back and don't
talk much and remember about his medicine,
Addie - - -" (1872)

(See also items 361, 364, 366, 367, 443, 1224, 1225, 1276, 1430, 1708, 1873, 1874, 1875, 1877, 1878, 1879, 1880 in Appendix I.)

With the simple form, the only temporal notion that seems to be expressed is the point of time suggested by the conjunctions; from these conjunctions, the simple form acquires what Curme⁴ has designated as terminate aspect. The "in the midst of" meaning the expanded form imparts to these items when substituted for the simple form appears to be incompatible with the temporal meaning of these three conjunctions.

As we noted in Table VI, the conjunction when introduces clauses in which the expanded form (29 times) and the simple form (47 times) are both frequent. The conjunction when has many meanings. Webster's New World Dictionary records eight. Among these meanings are time at which and time during which. In thirty-eight out of forty-seven items, when meant time at which. We should expect that while could be substituted for it in its time during which meanings. In the nine remaining items, when had the time during which meaning and not only could while be substituted but the expanded form of the verb could also be substituted:

For while poverty is poverty, it makes a difference what kind of poverty we face
when we seek to find a remedy for our
ills.. (647)

When he writes a novel, he will travel to
the ends of the earth to get data. (85)

"In fact, you don't know what you're talking
about when you discuss mental illness. Is
that right?" (302)

⁴George O. Curme, Parts of Speech and Accidence (New York: D.C. Heath & Co., 1935), p. 232.



(See also items 304, 804, 1222, 2134, 2135, 2136, in Appendix I). Five simple-form items had verbs which occur more commonly in the simple form: see, say, think; but the remaining items had verbs which expand freely. Of the freely expanding verbs, come (6 times) and get (10 times) had the highest frequency. The conjunction before these freely expanding verbs meant time at which, and the expanded form could not be substituted without giving to the verb an "on the point of" or "in the midst of" meaning, which sometimes changed the meaning critically:

"When we go out this morning you shoot the sun lines," said the exec. (301)

"Get what you can out of that young woman and report to me here when you come back." (1176)

"I'm going to take your temperature when I get you home," she said. (1349)

Here when functions much as before and until. It designates a point of time at which the action is over and the simple form is used to show that the termination point of the action is meant.

In eighteen of the twenty-nine expanded-form items, when could be replaced by while:

"How can I serve myself when she's holding that platter over my head?" (1796)

"Evelyn, pass your father his coffee," she said. "And don't look cute when you're doing it," Bill said. (799)

(See also items 15, 455, 514, 606, 639, 641, 642, 978, 1115, 1793, 1794 in Appendix I).

The substitution of if ("in the event that") for when is suggestive. In only three of the expanded-form items could when be replaced by if:

"Speak up when something damn silly is happening to you." (265)

"You always talk like that when I'm having a nice time." (1694)

"My how time flies when you're having fun." (1795)

On the other hand, in twenty-two of the forty-eight simple form items, when could be replaced by if ("in the event that"):

"Emotionally you are about fifteen, and when your hair stands up in back you look like a rabbit, which is frequently." (304)

"When that baby drops through the trap tomorrow, it's a millien votes." (1851)

"Waterbury's a nifty old town with the lid off, when you get to know the ropes." (1848)

"When I send an officer after the dope, I expect him to return with the dope. . . (303)

[Italics on the are the authors.]

Although we get no absolute distinction here, the proportions 3/29 and 22/48 suggest that a condition-tinged when-clause makes use of the simple form more frequently than of the expanded form.

The figures for if in Table VI (48 simple forms, 14 expanded forms) likewise suggest the simple form is compatible with condition more frequently than the expanded form is. Furthermore, with the possible exception of two items (486, 648), the expanded form could not be substituted for the simple form without violating the meaning considerably:

"By God, if it rains," he said, "that would be one too many." (2132)

"You mustn't mind if Sid comes home feeling a bit--gay". (1853)

"All right with you, Mr. Keith, if I smoke?"
(145)

"If I put foot outside this house, I'd
never in the world get back." (1215)

In nine out of the fourteen expanded form items, however, the
simple form could be substituted without affecting the meaning
appreciably:

"Yes, you can see life in Waterbury, all
right--that is, if you're looking for life
in Waterbury!" (1810)

"You do not find it all at once if you are
hunting for it. (18)

. . .for if they are no longer growing in
relative numerical strength, they are grow-
ing in wealth . . .(519)

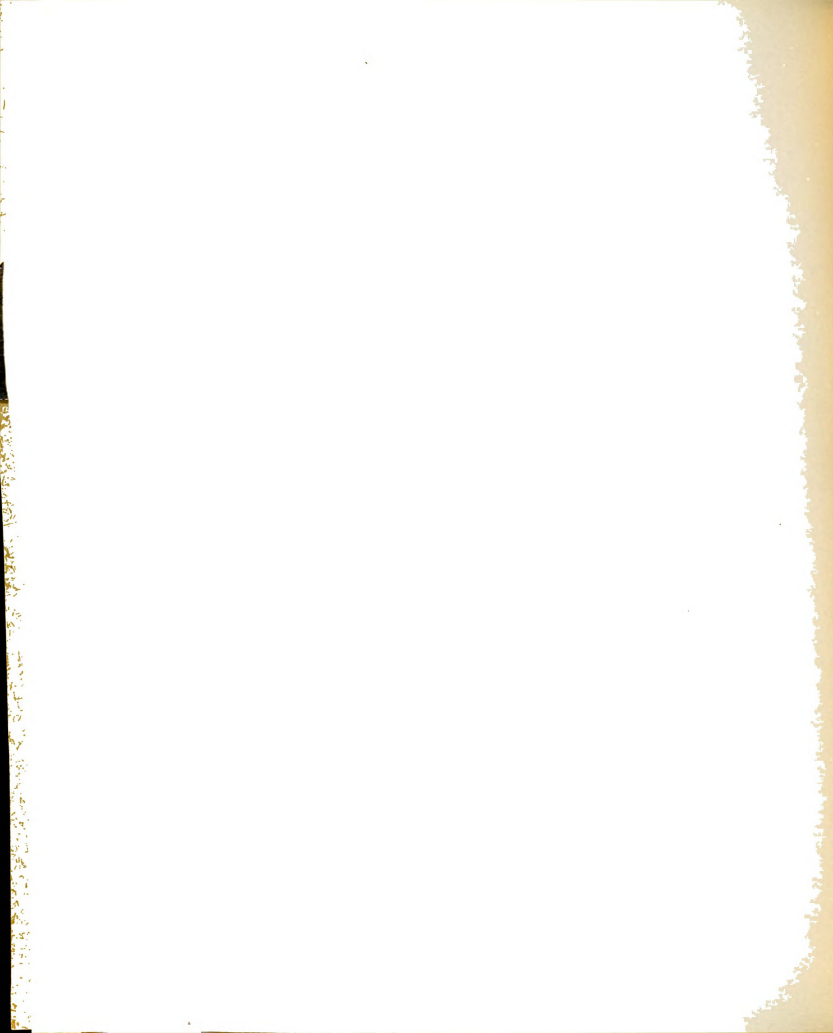
"Would it have to be mumps?" said his
uncle. "Of course, if you're aching for
mumps, I guess it could be arranged." (750)

A condition, as condition, it may be noted, is not "action in
progress."

Of the temporal adverbs, while is the only one in my data
which occurs more frequently with the expanded form (10 times)
than with the simple form (6 times). Of the simple form items,
the expanded form could be substituted in five. (See items 88,
513, 286, 1175, 2144 in Appendix I). In the exception, while
seems to mingle a concessive meaning with the temporal meaning:

Irritating foods and beverages may make your
ulcer grow, while Banthine masks the symptoms.
(1044)

Although the data does not contain examples of an expanded form
with a conjunction denoting concession, it does not appear to be
incompatible with this notion as is evident from the fact that it
would be compatible in the following:



Although the steel controversy occupies the public mind, labor troubles involve such other key defense industries as the railroads. . . (2028)

In the while item above (1044), time appears to receive a double emphasis if the expanded form is used so that the concessive meaning becomes lost.

The conjunction as exhibits a characteristic that sets it apart from the other conjunctions. All the other conjunctions remained stable in their meaning if an expanded form were substituted for a simple form, but as had a strong tendency to change its semantic value from the temporal (while) to the causal (since), as the examples below illustrate:

And leeches they will prove to be as they gradually suck revenue from the railroad passenger till. (497)

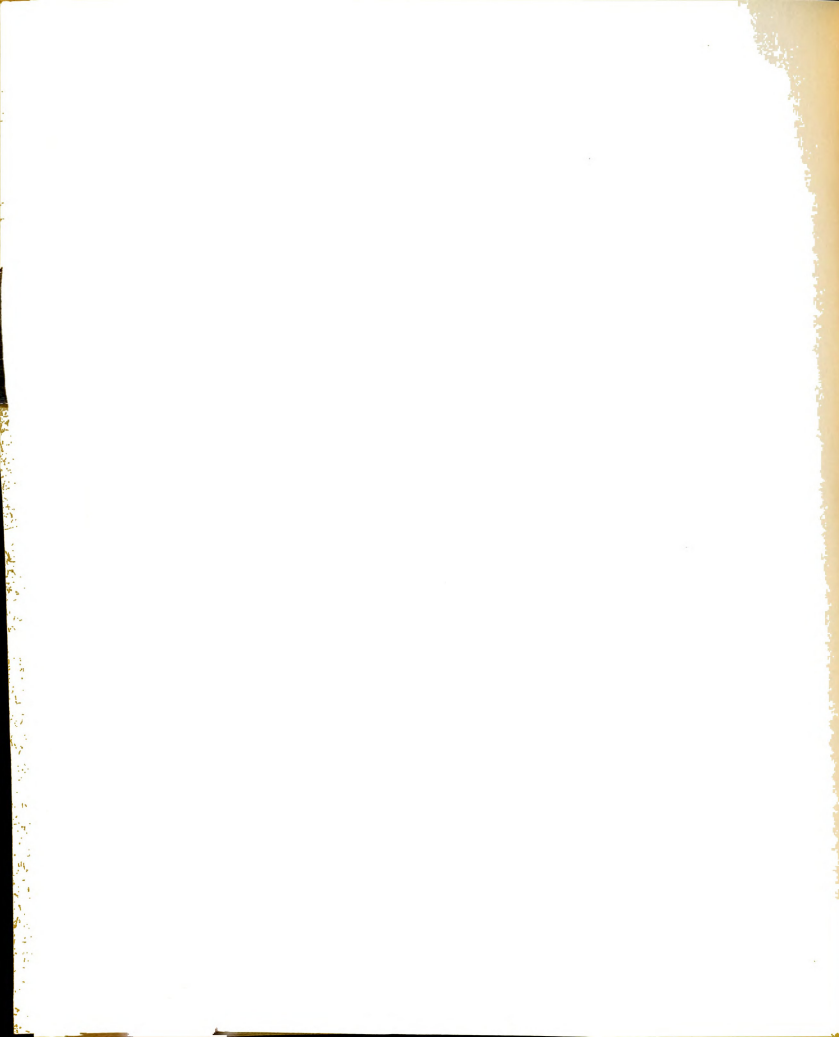
As radio emerges from its blindness. . . and enters into direct competition with the current motion picture product, it is unlikely that audiences will long be satisfied with a double standard of entertainment. (494)

Now as I lean back to think of my friend, I see scenes of importance lightly and pleasantly studding my life. (453)

In the one instance in which an expanded form follows as in my data, it has the meaning since:

. . . in view of the fact that I am giving up chances which to me may prove valuable as I am not growing any younger each day. . . suppose we better just call it quits. (1235)

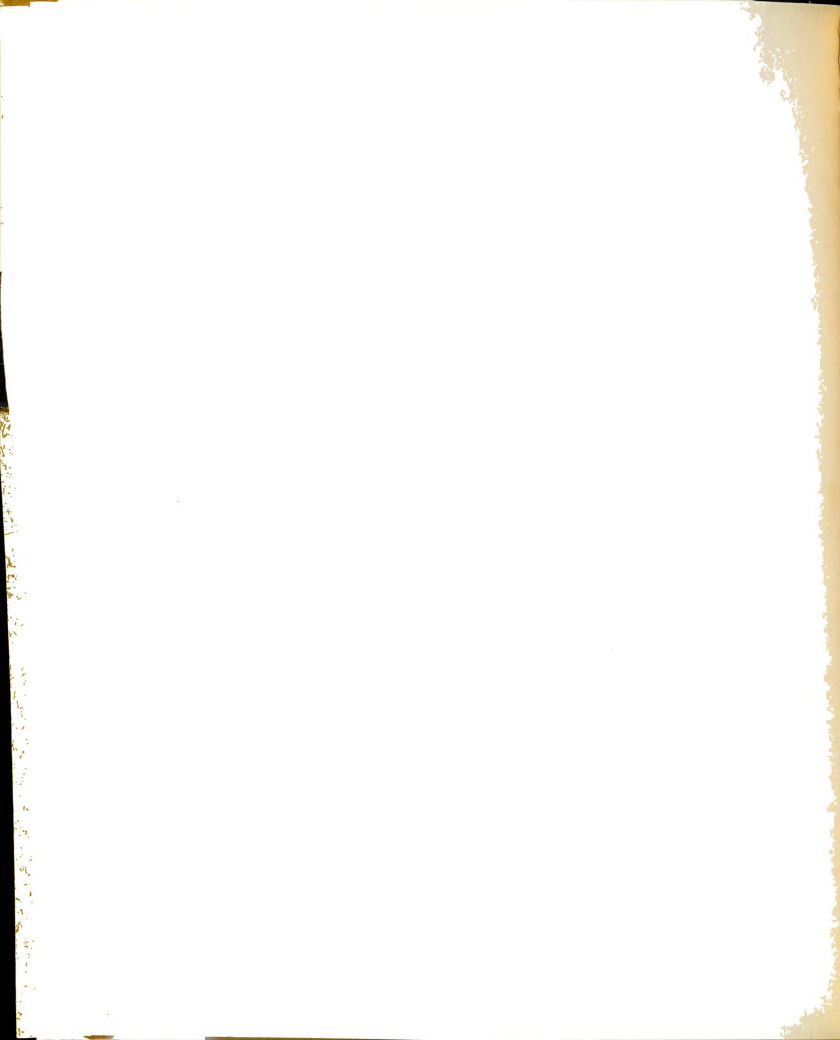
While I am at a loss to explain it, the fact remains that this conjunction develops a lexical instability when the expanded form is introduced--a tendency not characteristic of the other con-



junctions.

From this study of dependent clauses the following points may be summarized:

- 1) In this data the expanded form is markedly more frequent than the simple form in substantive clauses, somewhat more frequent in adjective clauses. This fact appears to shed no light on the difference in the meaning of the two forms.
- 2) There is a general tendency for the simple form to be used with temporal conjunctions having a point-of-time meaning; only the simple form, in this data, occurred with the conjunctions after, before and until; the conjunction when has a time at which meaning in four-fifths (38 out of 47 times) of the simple form items.
- 3) There is a general tendency for the expanded form to be used with conjunctions having a time during which meaning. The expanded form in this data was used with while more frequently than the simple form; the conjunction when meant time during which in two-thirds (18 out of 29) of the expanded form items; the expanded form could be substituted for the simple form in when and while clauses in which the temporal meaning of the conjunction was time during which.
- 4) There is a general tendency for the simple form to be used with conditional if.
- 5) The conjunction as is apparently unique in that it tends to change from a temporal meaning (while) to a causal meaning (since) if the expanded form is substituted for a simple form in a clause introduced by this conjunction.



III

Verb + Infinitive

Both forms of the verb stand before an infinitive with approximately the same frequency. Excluding the form to be + going + to + infinitive, which is treated separately in Chapter 4, the expanded forms occurred before an infinitive sixty-six times. The simple form appeared in this construction sixty-seven times but in twenty of the items the verbs were such verbs as seem, want, love, hate, verbs which either do not expand or expand infrequently.

Frequency is, perhaps, less important than the fact that a few verbs show a tendency to lose their full lexical value and to become quasi-modals. This is true of the verb to be + going + to + infinitive. The simple form have to is, of course, a familiar idiom. Occasionally it appears in the expanded form also: "We made a mistake and now we're having to do it all over again." Like have to, happen to frequently achieves virtual modal status; it modifies the following infinitive with a by chance meaning. In this sense it occurs only in the simple form:

"But I happen to know about her. Didn't I have to write all Tony's letters for him?"
(1704)

The verb also occurs in this sense in an impersonal construction with a clause rather than an infinitive following:

"Now it happens I had occasion to report to Com Ser Pac recently that the engineering performance of this ship was below par. . .
(223)

When the verb means to take place, it is frequent in the expanded form:

The new method. . . would be farcial if it did not throw a tragic light on what is happening to warp the minds of another generation of young Germans. (1171)

The three verbs mentioned here were the only ones which appeared to be different from other verbs preceding an infinitive and the difference was a quasi-modal quality. The expression of modality is not a function peculiar to one verb form, for, while one of the three verbs (to be + going + to + infinitive) is modal only in the expanded form, a second, (happen to) has the quasi-modal quality only in the simple form. The third, (have to) while infinitely more frequent in the simple form, has a quasi-modal quality in the expanded form as well.

IV

Quasi-Imperatives

Some simple forms tied to you subjects make a special group in that they have a quasi-imperative character which distinguishes them. The simple form occurs in this meaning both in statements and in questions introduced by why followed by do + not + you. Statements remained essentially the same in meaning if the subject you was dropped. The meanings shaded from a mere suggestion through a condition involving and and or to a command statement as the following examples illustrate:

(a) Mere suggestion

"You gonna get all the war you want, boy.
You keep little old Keefer and the admiral
happy a few weeks, that's all. (221)

"When we go out this morning, you shoot
the sun lines." (301)

(b) Condition involving and and or

"You go by the book and you'll get no argument from me. (185)

"You tell me a better way to get my wishes obeyed on this ship and I'll take it under consideration." (200)

"You engage his loyalty and he'll deliver the goods." (233)

(c) Direct command

"You watch the road!" (2120)

"You take that back!" (1732)

"No! No! You let go of me! (1700)

"Now you Hildy Johnson, you keep away from me!" (1619)

In questions introduced by why + do + not + you the meaning corresponds to (a) above, i.e. to mere suggestion:

"Why don't you send him some roses, like Molly Malloy [did]?" (1883)

"Why don't you sit down and beat that assignment out now?" (359)

"Why don't you take him out to your house and hang him?" (1864)

The do and you are frequently dropped from the pattern:

"Why not get an appointment to Annapolis?" the midshipman suggested. (1096)

"Most autobiographies are written by corpses. Why not do yours while you are vital, young, in the thick of life?" (1869)

A single item in the data is a hybrid in that an imperative becomes a suggestion by the addition of why + do + not + you formula:



"Go and see your boy friend why don't you?" (1882)

Expanded forms tied to you subjects, whether in statements or in questions in the formula why + are + not + you, did not have this quasi-imperative meaning. With the expanded form, questions in this formula were requests for explanations:

"Why aint you marryin' a woman of your own parrish instead of trapesin' all the way to Frisco to pick out a heretic?" (1832)

"Annie, why aren't you clearing the table?" (1518)

The examples illustrating the simple form in this quasi-imperative function are a special group in that they represent a meaning which cannot be subsumed under any meanings of the simple form with which I am familiar. Perhaps the expanded form cannot alternate with the simple form in this usage because the mood of the expanded form remains clearly indicative.

V

Excluding the observations reported in this chapter, the study of the grammatical environments included two other classifications: (a) Verb forms were classified into transitive and intransitive verbs; (b) verb forms were classified according to the kind of subject to which they were tied (animate or inanimate).⁵ These classifications proved to be unfruitful.

In a further effort to obtain objective data, one experiment was tried. A series of sentences in which verb forms had been

⁵For classification of subjects as animate or inanimate I used the system of correlating forms described by Chas. C. Fries, The Structure of English (New York: Harcourt Brace and Co., 1952), pp. 120-122.

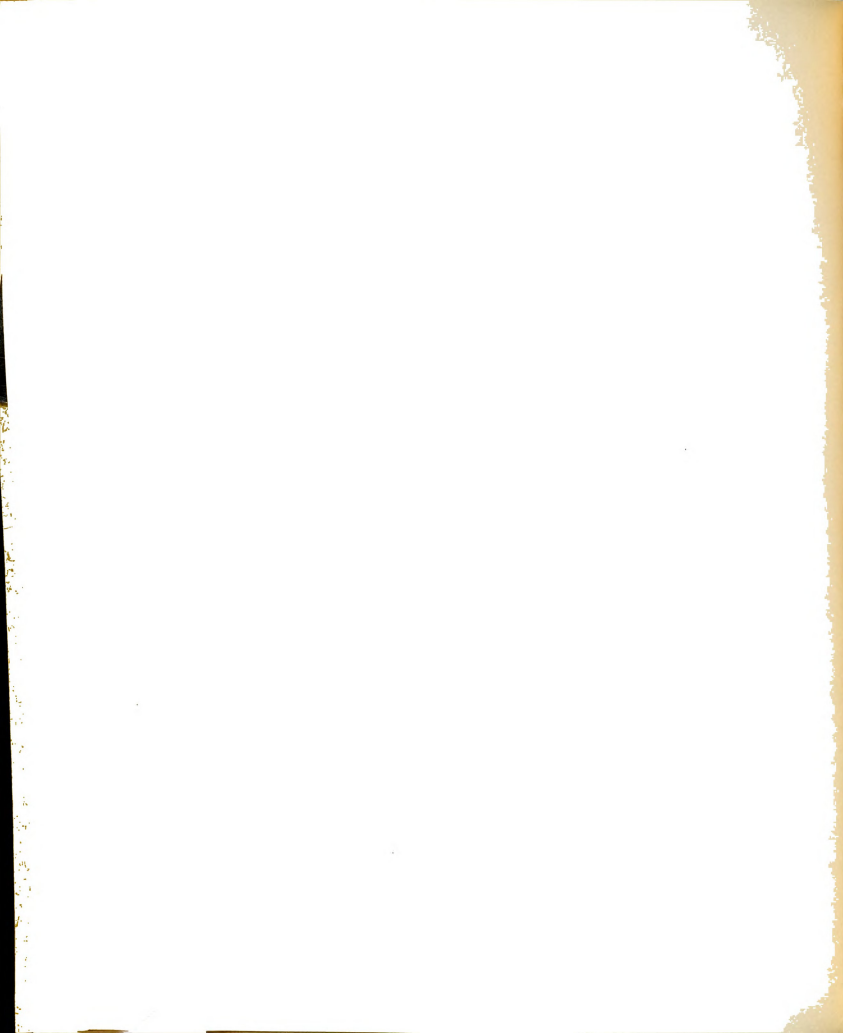


altered were submitted to a group of forty informants who were requested to "correct" any constructions they considered unidiomatic. This experiment showed only that individuals vary greatly in degree of sensitivity to the difference in meaning of these two verb forms. There was agreement among informants on a few obviously unidiomatic sentences such as "State Street is turning straight south," "She is loving the movies," and "It is looking like a lion." Many of the substitute verbs, however, were not detected as such by a majority of the informants. Other substitutions such as "Her feet are hurting her" for "Her feet hurt her" were detected, but the "corrections" of these were not alike. Corrections included substitution of a passive for an active voice, an imperative mood for the indicative, a different verb, etc. While interesting, the "corrections" could not be correlated.

In conclusion, the findings of this chapter may be summarized thus:

1) Adverbs denoting specific time tend to be used with the expanded form more than with the simple form. Adverbs denoting recurrent time such as frequently, usually, and often tend to be used with the simple form. In this data such adverbs did not occur with the expanded form. The adverb always was unique in that expanded-form statements from which this adverb was dropped changed in meaning from a generalization to a present occurrence.

2) In dependent clauses the expanded form occurs notably more frequently than the simple form in substantive clauses and somewhat more frequently in adjective clauses, but this dif-



ference in frequency appears to have no relationship to the difference in the meaning of the two verb forms. Temporal conjunctions with a time at which meaning occur more frequently with the simple form; the conjunctions after, before, and until in my data appear only with the simple form. The conjunction when in the meaning time during which appears with both verb forms as does the conjunction while. In a clause introduced by a conjunction having a time during which meaning, an expanded form could usually be substituted for a simple form. The conjunction if, introducing a condition, is conspicuously more frequent with the simple form (47 simple-form items, 14 expanded form items).

3) The verbs to be going to, happen to, and have to before infinitives have a quasi-modal coloring in some contexts.

4) The simple form of the verb tied to you subjects has a quasi-imperative coloring in some contexts.

The conclusions recorded here represent the only objective indications of a difference in the meaning of the two forms that I could find through an examination of the grammatical environment. For the present, at least, it appears that the difference, to the extent that it can be established, will necessarily involve a subjective analysis. Meanings arrived at subjectively have been assigned by scholars to both forms. In Chapter 3 the most satisfactory of these explanations are presented in detail.



Chapter 3

A Catalogue of Meanings

The to be + ing construction is one of the most remarkable features of the English language, and, owing, perhaps, to the elusive character of the varied shades of meaning, has, naturally, exercised the minds of students and agitated the pens of grammarians in no common degree.¹

The simple form of the verb has not held the same fascination for grammarians that the expanded form has. Any investigation of the studies that have been done will show that until fairly recent times they had two characteristics in common: First, their objective was to ascertain the meaning(s) of the expanded form in all tenses with the result that the information we have on the simple form is meager in comparison with that which we have on the expanded form. Second, with one exception,² the investigators have not described the methodology whereby meanings assigned to the expanded form were derived. Consequently we do not know the precise degree of objectivity these meanings represent. One may assume (a) that those meanings about which there is wide-spread agreement among scholars, however arrived at, are the most valid, and (b) that those meanings which are disputed are the more subjective interpretations. To isolate the agreed upon meanings is itself a task fraught with risks, for writers do not use the same terminology to identify what a reader sus-

¹H. Poutsma, The Characters of the English Verb and the Expanded Form (Groningen: P. Noordhoff, 1921), p. 47.

²Anna Granville Hatcher, "The Use of the Progressive Form in English," Language, XXVII (1951), pp. 254-280.



pects are the same phenomena. Further, the concentration of attention on one form in all tenses has not established at all clearly when both the simple and expanded forms may be used and when only one must be used. Generally speaking, writers on the expanded form have shown a preference in their illustrative material for the past tense without always indicating to what extent these meanings hold true for other tenses.

A reversal in the trend of scholarship thus far described began in 1945 when Edward Calver³ limited himself to a consideration of a single tense, the present, and concentrated on the hitherto neglected simple form. In 1951, Anna Granville Hatcher (p. 261) called attention to the important fact that it is the alternation of the expanded and simple form in certain types of constructions that constitute the "problematic." She set a needed precedent by giving equal care to the analysis of the simple form and the expanded form within one category of the present tense, which she called "a single occurrence." Although for the present study these two investigators provide the most useful information, earlier ones cannot be completely ignored. They recognize most of the features found in Calver and Hatcher but have dealt with them in a less specific and meaningful way.

Since it seems reasonable that we should have before us, in as convenient a form as possible, the results of such studies, it is the purpose of this chapter to present a catalogue of meanings previously assigned to the two forms together with ex-

³"The Use of the Present Tense Forms in English", Language, XXII (1946), 317-325.

amples which the various writers have used to illustrate these meanings. We shall give precedence to the most recent scholarship and add from other sources those meanings about which there seems to be general agreement. Those meanings assigned to the simple form will be presented first, and those assigned to the expanded form will be presented last.

I

Meanings Assigned to the Simple Form

Calver says the difference in meaning between the simple and expanded form is not a time distinction:

Statements which purport to explain the difference between the simple tenses and the progressive tenses may really be nothing but disguised discussions of time. If he writes and he is writing both refer to present time, then the proper distinction between them cannot be a time distinction; they do not refer both to different times and to different meanings within those times; if they distinguish different times, then they do not distinguish anything else. (p. 319)

The basic meaning Calver sees in the simple form is THE CONSTITUTION OF THINGS. By contrast, the expanded form expresses MERE OCCURRENCE; it is the "tense of pragmatism" and is used simply for reporting events as such. The distinction between the constitutional and the isolated occurrence becomes conspicuous if we compare HE IS FUNNY with HE IS BEING FUNNY.

In the following statements CONSTITUTION and OCCURRENCE are successively expressed: "The sun rises at 8:10 today. Sure enough, it is rising on time." Natural law is empirically verified by an occurrence. Such meanings as repetition, continuity, or

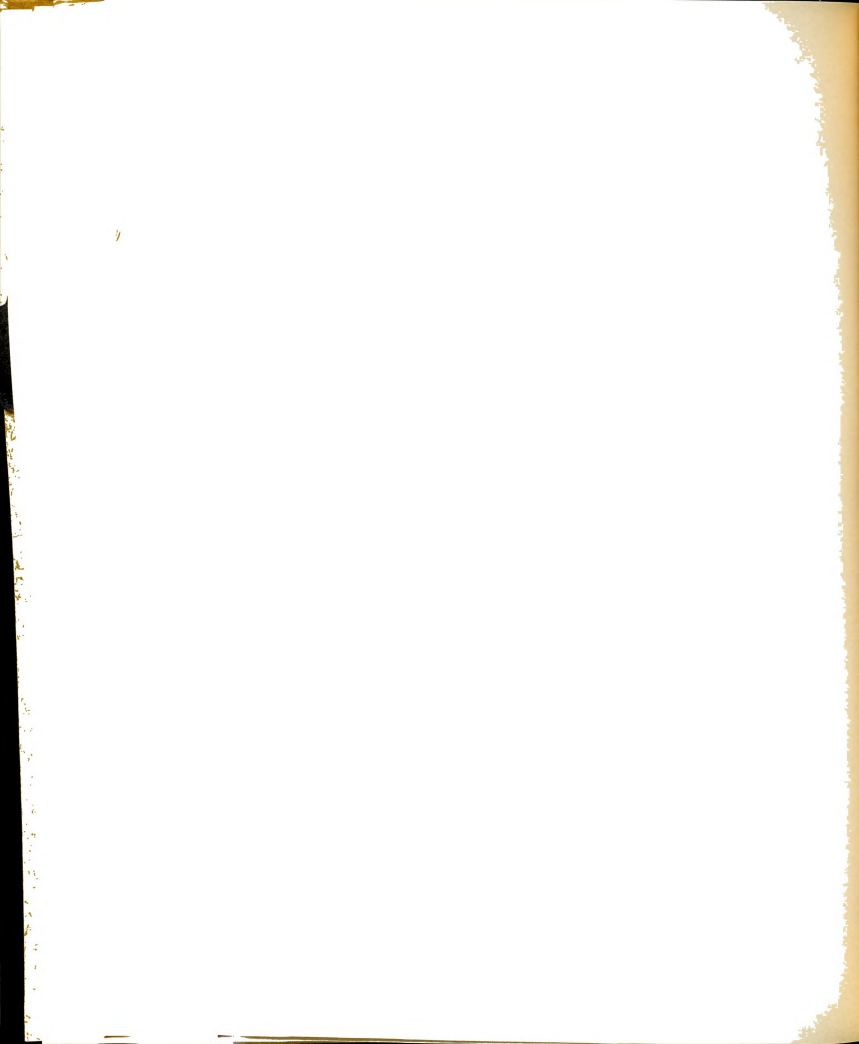


duration, although often associated with the simple form, cannot be basic meanings for the reason that they do not always apply. They are the result of vocabulary, context, or the implication of accompanying adverbs. Thus, "He smokes a cigar" suggests repetition; while, "The sun always shines on the British Empire" suggests continuity. Yet the verb form is the same in both. The meaning which does apply, according to Calver, irrespective of vocabulary, context, etc. is the CONSTITUTION OF THINGS:

logical, "Two times two equals four;" physical, "The human heart beats 72 times a minute;" psychological, "He sings in the shower," essential, "It never rains but it pours." The simple form is the tense of "character and insight," of "natural law and causality."

The limited meanings grammarians have noted for the simple form⁴ Calver argues, derive from a basic meaning. That their difference is superficial rather than fundamental is evident, he says, from the fact that they often shade into each other and retain a common element even when they can be clearly classified as representing one or another of these special meanings. Calver avails himself of these specialized meanings in order to show that the basic meaning common to them all is the CONSTITUTION OF THINGS. The terms he uses to identify these limited meanings are:

⁴The several meanings Calver utilizes are summarized most succinctly by Poutsma: . . . "we find this form in descriptions of general practices, habits and customs; general phenomena and principles, general truths or maxims" (p. 53). The grammars of Curme, (Parts of Speech and Accidence, D.C. Heath & Co., 1935) of Jespersen, (A Modern English Grammar, Carl Winters Universitätsbuchhandlung, 1931, Part IV) and of Sweet (New English Grammar, Clarendon Press, 1931, Part II) likewise contain scattered references to some or all of these meanings.



Logical, Order of Nature, Custom or Habit, Ability, and Directions.

Let us note the inter-relatedness that can be detected between these meanings.

While the verb in "Roses smell" identifies a characteristic of the subject (i.e., a reference to its constitution) the verb in "He plays the violin" identifies an aptitude and, perhaps, habitual activity. Further, "He plays the violin" may reflect the constitutional if it means that the subject is favorably disposed toward the activity. Thus, ability as a specialized meaning involves both order of nature and habitual action. Likewise, the inter-relatedness is evident in direction statements: "You turn left at the corner." "Pours poison in ears." "Enter king and queen." These represent a predetermined design. Directions imply sameness in procedure, as does natural law, and are as impersonal if not as eternal.

In some statements we find it difficult to decide whether the meaning is primarily order of nature or habit. If, for purposes of classification, we wish to isolate the difference, Calver suggests that it can sometimes be made sharp. If, as he points out, we say, "She sings soprano" are we suggesting the nature of her vocal chords or do we mean not very often? Usually the distinctions between these meanings are a matter of vocabulary or context. "He eats breakfast in the morning" is said to denote habit, but "Cows come home in the evening" can be classified as order of nature or habit; some habits are generic; others are not. While acquired habits need not be as invariable as natural law, they develop for constitutional reasons. They



may be agreeable: "He sings in the shower" (because of psychological constitution); they may be essential: "He gets up early" (because of distance to work).

One of the special meanings Calver refers to is the logical: "Two times two equals four." Such meanings are statements about the logical constitution of things; they are abstract propositions to be taken intensionally rather than extensionally. Calver reminds us that the surprise or absurdity we feel in "Two times two are equalling four" disappears from "The sum is coming out less than I thought." In the latter we are concerned with the isolated occurrence, with establishing the logical relation that obtains in a given instance. The process has extensional features.

The verb to equal does not denote action. It expresses a relationship that has only intensional meaning. We cannot point to equality; we can only deduce it from the things we can point to. A number of verbs are like to equal in that they never or rarely expand. Calver notes a few of them: to hear, to see, to know, to remember, to forget, to hope, to wish. Some of these refer to psychological constitution and imply vagarious occurrence ("There is no need to hope for what is bound to come in due time").

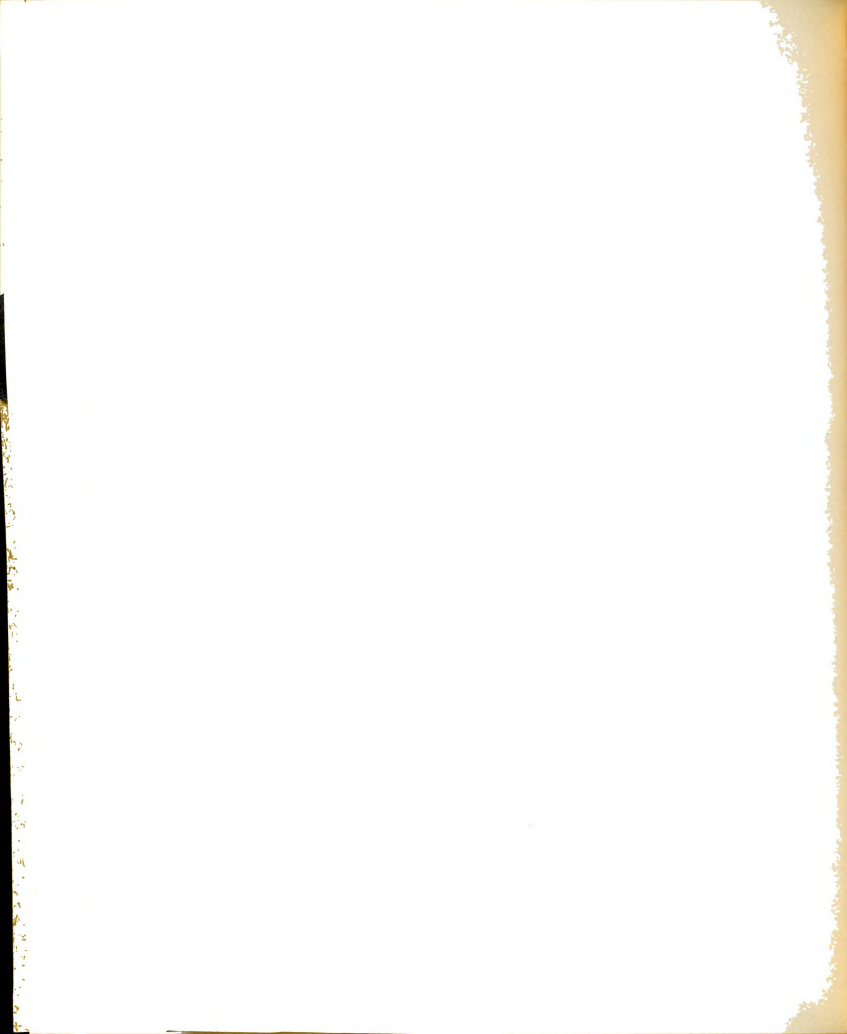
Throughout his discussion of specialized meanings illustrating the CONSTITUTION OF THINGS Calver states directly or implies that time is "the eternal present" and that the occasion is any occasion. Roses, for example, always smell (the eternal present) and any time (occasion) or every time (occasion) we attempt empirical verification of this we find the result is the same.



The contrast between the past and present or between the present and future is at a minimum with constitutional meanings, but contrast is possible. If a speaker is conscious of a difference between past and present and if he wishes to express his awareness of the difference, he does so by means of an adverbial adjunct which places emphasis on the present, e.g., now. "He walks now" can mean change in the constitution of a twelve-month infant, in the ability of a recent invalid, in a habit under gas rationing. When statements contain an expression of futurity, the constitution-of-things meaning, says Calver, overshadows the futurity meaning: "He graduates next year." "He leaves this morning." "He plays Schubert's Serenade tomorrow." These futures imply that the habit, order, schedule is such that the event can be expected to take place. With the verb to be plus an infinitive the futurity, although not expressed, enters in as an implicit condition: "He is to see the dean." "What is to be will be."

In his discussion of the constitution-of-things meaning, Calver neglects a treatment of single-event presents and excludes considerations of the historical present on the grounds that it belongs more properly with a study of past tenses. Bolinger has suggested that a modification of Calver's analysis permits inclusion of both single-event presents and historical presents. He says:

Perhaps we may find a more inclusive rationale for the simple present tense which will account more easily for the borderline case and of which the constitution-of-things meaning will be the most important corollary. We might call the simple present tense the base tense, to which all the other tenses are oriented but which it-



self is oriented to nothing, expressing merely FACT OF PROCESS. The simple present has no confines, but all the other tenses are confined in some way. It is 'timeless' not in the sense of eternal but of 'non-committal' about time. The expanded form is confined by or oriented to a beginning or possible cessation.

Whenever, then, the speaker wishes to avoid the confinement of time implicit in the other tenses he uses the simple present.⁵

This it seems to me, is a clearer statement than Calver's of what Calver demonstrates throughout. His examples show either a timelessness, "Roses smell," or they show that temporal meaning is established by means of adverbs, "The train runs every Sunday during the summer." "He graduates this year." He gives no examples in which the simple form itself establishes a clear reference to past, present or future.

If an activity occurs just once (a single-event present) Bolinger finds both simple and expanded forms commonly used; he finds an explanation for the simple form if the activity itself involves reason and explanation (constitutional meanings). For example, he suggests that when Mr. A. asks, "Why do you take this road?" Mr. B. may well reply, "I take it because there's no other way to go," or "I'm taking it because . . ." The expanded form presumably emphasizes the mere occurrence of the event, the simple form the reason and explanations involved. Bolinger feels that indifference to time without constitutional implications more adequately describes some instances of single-event presents employing the simple form. In a rather effective example, he pictures a man hanging on to the side of a tall building without

⁵Dwight L. Bolinger, "More on the Present Tense in English," Language, XXIII (1947), p. 435.

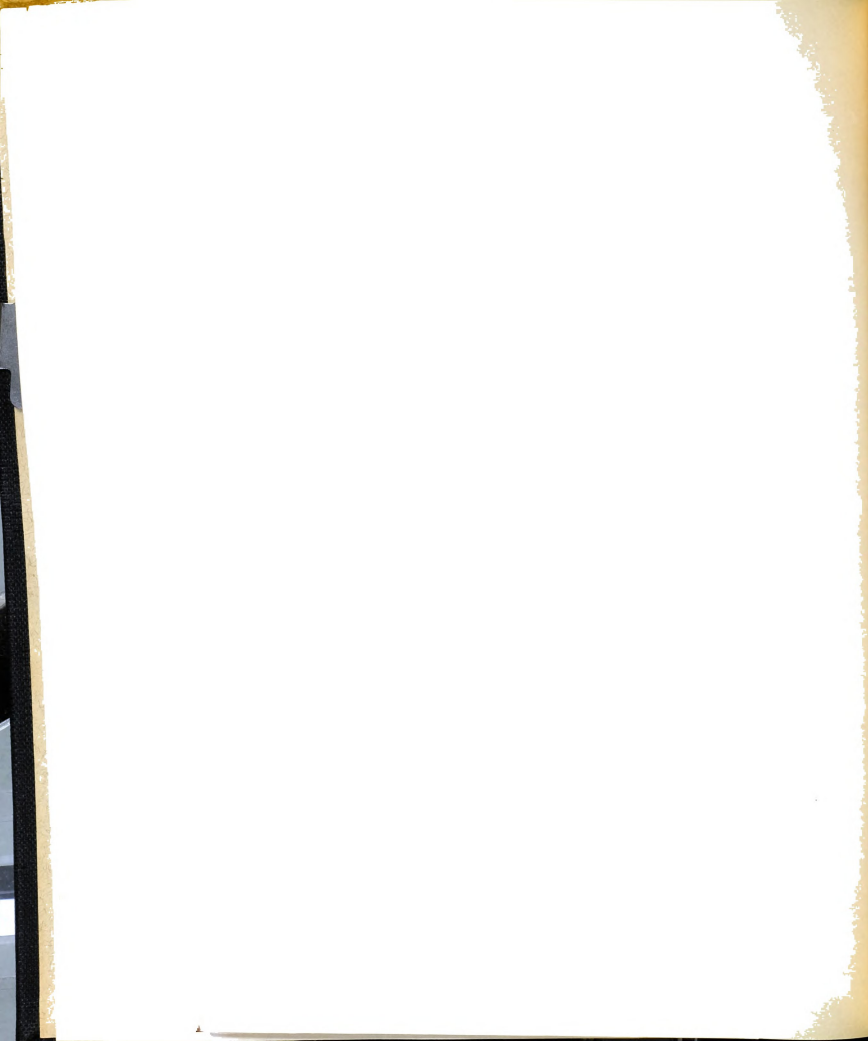


visible means of support. An onlooker, keeping his mind and eye on the human spider, might well say, "What is it he's hanging on to up there that keeps him from falling?" Taking his eye off the object and offering a bystander a topic for discussion, the onlooker is more likely to say, "What is it he hangs on to up there that keeps him from falling?" Bolinger regards the turning away from the event as a turning away from time, as a consideration of a FACT OF PROCESS "whose temporal connections are unimportant." This turning away may be figurative as well as literal. It occurs whenever the speaker wishes to "avoid the confinement of time implicit in the other tenses;" it occurs in all constitutional meanings "where lack of confinement is necessarily pre-dicated;" it occurs when sensory data are so vivid they blank out the temporal context: "It feels good." "It itches." "How sweetly she sleeps there."

An historical present which appears in the context of past tense verbs reflects, Bolinger says, the constitutional meaning: "Jack said that his mother was very ill, and got me to go see what I could do for her. I had to leave my other patients and drive half the evening, which meant all my plans were upset. And then he tells me the whole thing was a hoax!"

Present tense is here used to point up the REALIZATION OF TRUTH, a denouement of fact against a background of supposition--fact being, of course, the constitution of things. (p. 435)

The historical present using only a present tense context, e.g., "She runs to the cop and grabs him by the arm" is more readily explained as FACT OF PROCESS minus any implications of the constitution of things. It is like the instances in which vivid



sensory data blank out the temporal context. A speaker who lapses into this kind of historical present is oblivious of everything but the process itself; time and setting are obliterated. The historical present we frequently encounter in newspaper headlines is, in Bolinger's opinion, the most pointed example of FACT OF PROCESS:

When we read "Henry Ford dies," we accept the occurrence as mere fact; if we read 'Henry Ford Died' we should ask "when," or "Then what happened?" or some other question regarding a temporal connexion. (p. 436)

Bolinger considers "tricky" speech and the inversion of subject following an adverb. FACT OF PROCESS rather than CONSTITUTION OF THINGS adequately explains "Here comes the teacher." He finds no adequate explanation in FACT OF PROCESS OR CONSTITUTION OF THINGS in "What makes, uncle?" "What cooks?" "What goes on around here?" Such "tricky" speech involves only a handful of verbs and the simple form is atypical in these instances. If the simple form usually means CONSTITUTION OF THINGS, then, by reversing the usual practice and using it rather than the expanded form to denote a mere occurrence, the speaker may achieve an effect not unlike the effect achieved by the mock epic; that is, a mere incident is elevated above its true stature and the effect is comic or "tricky". At least, Bolinger suggests that such idioms may have a constitutional coloring and, if so, they can have them simply because the typical use of the simple form involves a constitutional meaning which is recognized even when it is, so to speak, satirized.



The reason CONSTITUTION OF THINGS can be a corollary of FACT OF PROCESS is, it seems to me, that both meanings refer essentially to that which is intensional. While we cannot predict what is in the mind of a speaker who says "How sweetly she sleeps there" we may for illustrative purposes say that such a statement directs the attention, for example, to sleep as an abstract concept; whereas, "How sweetly she is sleeping there" directs the attention to the subject, i.e., to that which is in extension. Bolinger's examples illustrate that even in the presence of an isolated occurrence of sensory data, an intensional meaning can outrank in importance the extensional meaning and find expression in the simple form; or, the fact of occurrence can outrank in importance continued observation of the occurrence itself (e.g., "Here comes the teacher").

Hatcher vigorously objects to Calver and to a lesser degree to Bolinger. For her, the simple form HAS NO BASIC MEANING. To search for a basic meaning in the simple form is to ignore the facts of history. Only the "progressive has today a positive unified emphasis." Yet in spite of the vigor and warmth of her objections one feels she ultimately endorses rather than destroys their concept of the simple form; for, even though the simple form, historically viewed, has no basic meaning, she concedes the encroachment of the expanded form has succeeded in giving the simple form "more clear-cut contours." This is saying that the expanded form has the basic meaning which limits the originally unlimited meanings of the simple form. This limited meaning lends itself to definition and CONSTITUTION OF THINGS or FACT OF



PROCESS is not necessarily rejected. Hatcher is convinced that a search for a basic meaning must be directed toward finding one for the expanded form and that any such investigation must begin with a consideration of the NATURE OF THE VERB; for what kind of verb is the simple form and for what kind of verb is the expanded form the norm? For the simple form she finds it is a verb denoting a non-overt action, for the expanded form, an overt action.

Although he does not stress the point, Calver has, as we have noted, commented on certain verbs that never or rarely expand. They denote psychological constitution. They are also non-overt. Thus, to an extent, Calver and Hatcher use different terminology, equally appropriate to describe the same facts. Further, Bolinger's emphasis on the simple form's antipathy for the overt confirms both what Calver and Hatcher arrive at by different routes. Finally, Hatcher objects to Calver's failure to distinguish between such possible temporal categories as customary action and an act taking place now, but within the latter category, to which she rigorously confines her own investigation, she finds that overt action verbs, when expressed in the simple form, acquire the CONSTITUTION-OF-THINGS meaning. This she graciously admits even as she protests Calver's methodology:

By making use of Calver's label . . . in reference to all the aberrant uses of the simple form so far considered am I not proving his theory to be correct? If so, I have done what he should have done. My main objection to his treatment was not that his theory was wrong, but (a) that he made so little attempt to prove it, disregarding almost entirely the category in question i.e., an act taking place now and (b) that the expression constitution of things was used too loosely. . .
(p. 278, fn. 56)



A few of her examples will illustrate her confirmation of Calver's and Bolinger's analyses. The contrast she sees between "Oh, look! It [the pail] is leaking!" and "Oh, look! It leaks!" is a contrast between emphasis on overt activity and emphasis on constitution. She observes that we tend to respond differently to these two meanings, i.e., we better wipe up the water, or, we better get another pail. Similarly in "You are walking too heavily" the emphasis is on the overt action, but in "You walk as if your feet hurt" the overt action serves merely as the basis upon which the deduction, "I bet your feet hurt," is made. Since the expanded form is the norm for overt-action verbs, the use of the simple form in the above items represents an aberrant use occurring when the speaker wishes to direct the attention to the CONSTITUTION OF THINGS. Some of Hatcher's examples of non-overt action (where the simple form is the norm and the expanded form aberrant) do not necessarily restrict themselves to activity taking place now as Hatcher intends. For instance, "This shoe cuts my instep" might be said whether a person were or were not wearing the shoe. In either case, the speaker turns away from time, as Bolinger has said, quite as much as he expresses non-overt activity.

Hatcher mentions some types which she thinks the constitution-of-things meaning does not cover. Two of these, I believe, can be explained while two remain problematical. One which to me seems constitutional in its meaning is "I smell something funny." Since Hatcher classifies verbs according to the NATURE OF THE VERB, this verb belongs in her reaction-to-stimuli group.

The reaction denoted by the verbs of sensation is, however, an involuntary reaction. In this statement the "action" is an atmospheric change recorded automatically by the sense of smell. When the verbs of sensation clearly mean the mechanical operation of the senses, they appear in the simple form whether the act is or is not taking place now. That their meaning is constitutional is suggested by the fact that "Am I seeing things?" or "Am I hearing things?" imply "Are my senses behaving contrary to the order of nature?" It is quite true that "The sun rises in the east" speaks of something which is predictable as a recurrent phenomenon and is, therefore, different from "I smell something funny," which is a single occurrence. That the latter will take place under given conditions is, however, as predictable as is the action in "The sun rises in the east." The temporal factor is incidental in "I smell something funny." Given the conditions, the act of smelling is as predestined as the sun-rise; it is an act characteristic of the species. The other item which to me seems constitutional is "Let's go see what he does." In this statement the speaker indicates that a cause has been precipitated; thus he expects that an effect will follow. The cause-effect relationship is constitutional.

The two items which do not seem amenable to either the constitution-of-things meaning or the fact-of-process meaning are: "You say you hit him?" and "I suggest that you go." Both items contain verbs of saying. Hatcher would have the first sentence studied together with all references to the past. The second she classes in her own category with non-overt action verbs. The



predication "I suggest that you go" is the act itself; symbol and thing are one and the same. It is non-overt action in Hatcher's judgment because the process it expresses is as intangible as is that of other non-overt acts, and, one might add, as insubstantial. Such extension as it has is ephemeral. In both these items the content of the saying outranks in importance the act of saying and the content is complete. Thus in neither of these sentences do we find the emphases characteristic of the expanded form: activity and incompleteness (orientation to a beginning or possible cessation). It seems best to conclude that these are to be classed as non-overt acts (as Hatcher conceives of the non-overt) or to consider them as instances that are devoid of that strong sense of action which attracts the expanded form.

Hatcher's statement that the simple form, from an historical point of view, cannot be said to have a basic meaning is a valid one and it is reasonable to expect that occasionally, at least, we will find types of construction that fit neither the constitution-of-things meaning nor the more inclusive fact-of-process. Non-overtness is not, by any means, an exclusive category, as we shall see in our consideration of the expanded form. We have no absolute dichotomy in any of these meanings. On the whole, however, "no basic meaning" and "base tense oriented to nothing" are two different ways of saying the same thing. Since Hatcher's findings support Calver's and Bolinger's, we may conclude that FACT OF PROCESS, with CONSTITUTION OF THINGS as the most important Corollary, represents the most inclusive and concise statement of the meaning(s) of the simple form. The constitution-of-things

label in itself synthesizes all meanings I have found stated by other grammarians with the exception of the two types involving verbs of saying noted above. Grammarians record this type but make no attempt to explain it.

II

Meanings Assigned to the Expanded Form

Two writers, Calver and Bodelson,⁶ have assigned a single meaning to the expanded form, thus indicating a basic meaning. Calver, as we have noted, says the expanded form in contrast to the simple form denotes MERE OCCURRENCE, which is to say, the expanded form is the TENSE OF PRAGMATISM. Bodelson says the form means ACTION, a term which I take to be synonymous with OCCURRENCE. Although they assign other meanings as well, several writers recognize this meaning as an extremely important one. Curme's PROGRESSIVE ASPECT⁷ and Poutsma's PROGRESSIVE FUNCTION⁸ (i.e., "an act going forward at a certain point or successive points of time") correspond to OCCURRENCE. It is, according to Poutsma, the most important of the secondary functions. Aronstein⁹ considers the primary function of the expanded form to be that of denoting PROCESS, a term he considers superior for indicating the meaning the English grammarians had in mind when they used the

⁶C. A. Bodelson, "The Expanded Tenses in Modern English, An Attempt at an Explanation," Englische Studien, LXXI (1936), 220-230.

⁷George O. Curme, Parts of Speech and Accidence (New York: D.C. Heath & Co., 1935), pp. 232-237.

⁸A. Poutsma, The Characters of the English Verb, pp. 50-68.

⁹Phil Aronstein, "Die periphrastische Form im Englischen," Anglia, XL (1918), 31.



term PROGRESSIVE ACTION. While the meaning of Aronstein's term is the antithesis of Bolinger's FACT OF PROCESS, the two terms themselves, because of their similarity, are subject to confusion. As Aronstein uses the term PROCESS, it means, I think, the same as OCCURRENCE. All these terms have the same disadvantage: they do not seem to describe with equal appropriateness all the uses of the expanded form one encounters; but, since they are substantially equivalents, it seems appropriate to select one to use in discussing the meaning. We shall use OCCURRENCE. Through the use of examples we shall attempt to establish the boundaries of this meaning.

If we accept Bolinger's explanation of the temporal difference between the simple form and the expanded form (see p. 47) it follows that any action represented in the expanded form of the present tense will have the temporal meaning "orientation to a beginning or possible cessation." Whatever other meanings we may find for the expanded form, we should expect confinement in time to be a part of that meaning. In Calver's example "He is playing Schubert's Serenade right now," both temporal meaning and occurrence meaning are readily sensed. An activity is understood to be capable of sensory verification at the moment of speaking, and both beginning and end of activity are assumed. To test the relationship between orientation to a beginning and occurrence, we may return to Bolinger's example of the human spider. "What is it he hangs on to up there that keeps him from falling?" illustrates, Bolinger says, a turning away from time. An occurrence, in the sense of an activity, is in progress and the



speaker is in the presence of sensory data. In this situation either verb form is possible. But suppose that A. and B. have seen the human spider hanging on the wall several times. Suppose, further, that they pass the scene on an occasion when the human spider is not performing. They are interested in this feat and have a good opportunity to inspect the setting unhampered by the presence of the performer. They pause and scrutinize the wall of the building, looking for means of visible support. A. says, "What is it he hangs on to up there that keeps him from falling?" In this situation the expanded form cannot be used. It must then signal a meaning which does not correspond to the present situation. Since it is the absence of the performer which distinguishes this situation from the one described by Bolinger, we are justified in concluding that a presently occurring activity is a meaning which the expanded present tense form communicates. Since, in the situation described by Bolinger, the speaker has a choice of form, and, since in the situation here described, the speaker has no choice, the implication seems to be that time is a characteristic inherent in a concrete act which may or may not be ignored, but that it is not a characteristic of the non-concrete. Further, if in the situation described by Bolinger the expanded form is used, it is identical in structural meaning with "He's playing Schubert's Serenade right now." In both examples the verbs suggest overtness and expenditure of energy on the part of the subject. In both examples the action is oriented not only to a beginning but also to a possible cessation.

The question arises, in terms of Calver's examples, whether

expenditure of energy (the activity notion) is an essential part of the occurrence meaning. Apparently not, for in his example "He is wearing a white shirt today" the activity notion has disappeared. This verb represents nothing more than an overt sign that an action has had a beginning, i.e., the putting on of the shirt. OCCURRENCE in this sentence simply means confining an overt sign to a temporal period of the duration of one occasion. Thus far the two elements which seem essential to the occurrence meaning are orientation to a beginning and overttness. The fact that activity, a notion we associate so commonly with verbal meaning, and particularly with the expanded form, is not an essential meaning of occurrence suggests that occurrence is the same as at least one of the meanings Hatcher finds for the expanded form. It is appropriate at this point then to consider Hatcher's meanings in an effort to see whether they can be subsumed under Calver's term.

Hatcher, as we have noted, believes firmly that no satisfactory explanation of the difference between our two verb forms will be found until the two forms are studied with equal care and the tense within which they are studied is broken down on the basis of temporal points of reference both forms have within the tense and on the basis of the NATURE OF THE VERBS themselves. Accordingly, she would divide the present tense temporally into four categories:

- (1) References to the past ("Your teacher says that . . . vs. "Your teacher is complaining about you.")
- (2) References to the future ("I see him tonight" vs. "I'm seeing him tonight")

- (3) References to action taking place now ("My nose itches" vs. "My nose is running")
- (4) Customary action ("She always takes the biggest piece" vs. "She's always reaching and grabbing")

She limits her own investigation to the third of these. As I understand her temporal category, the moment of speaking falls between the beginning and end points of the action. Most of her examples have narrow time spreads, but she indicates that the category includes such broad time spreads as is suggested by "He's traveling through Europe this summer." Her category in no way conflicts with anything Bolinger has said about the temporal meaning of the expanded form.

Since the nature of the verbs that normally appear in the simple form is different from the nature of the verbs that normally appear in the expanded form, Hatcher finds overttness and non-overttness to be the most common contrast expressed by these two forms. The expanded form is the norm for actions denoting overt activity: "She is sweeping the floor, washing dishes, changing her dress, etc." These actions are, of course, also actions we easily recognize as occurrences. Overt physical activity involving the expenditure of energy and of motion, no doubt, is expressed by the expanded form, since action verbs whose meanings have been extended must be expressed in the simple form to prevent the overt-action meaning from developing. For example, the expanded form would suggest the literal physical activity if substituted for the simple form in these sentences:

- (1) "You are bowling down Addison Avenue and in no time Addison runs into the leafy campus of the

state veterinarian college." (1160)

(2) "From the Chicago Loop, where sunlight off the lakefront strikes the shining towers, State Street turns straight south." (930)

(3) "It looks like the lion. It is the lion!" (1326)

Hatcher shows some hesitation about whether audible actions such as "I vote no," "I double," and "I pass," belong in the non-overt or overt action group. She classifies them as non-overt acts on the grounds that the act and predication of it are one. Thus by overtness she seems to mean an action which has some extension in space and admits primarily of visual verification, but her hesitation suggests that overtness is not necessarily limited to those rather vigorous physical motion verbs she uses to illustrate overtness. Calver's "He's wearing a white shirt today" would, I think, be classed by Hatcher as an overt action.

As a category, non-overtness does not exclude all expanded forms. Therefore, Hatcher sub-divides the non-overt action verbs on the basis of development-by-degrees vs. non-development. Those denoting development-by-degrees normally appear in the expanded form; those denoting a monotonous continuation of sameness normally appear in the simple form. Thus, on the figurative level, compare: "This is driving me nuts, is getting me nowhere, is beginning to make sense" vs. "This (situation) bores me, pleases me, puzzles me, worries me" and on the literal level: "One of my headaches is coming on. I'm developing a cold, getting hot," vs. "My feet hurt, my back aches, my nose itches." The meaning of DEVELOPMENT-BY-DEGREES in contrast to monotonous

continuation of sameness expressed by the simple form, is essentially a series of changes. As described by Hatcher, development-by-degrees is a loss or gain in momentum. This is to say, in effect, that these non-overt expanded forms contain the notion of progression or movement toward a point of culmination (possible cessation). The movement is detected through a series of changes, a figurative extension of the idea of physical motion. Hatcher (p. 268, fm. 38) does not deny the progressive meaning inherent in the term DEVELOPMENT-BY-DEGREES. "I realize," she says, "that such a phrase as non-developing activity in contrast to development-by-degrees is awkward; but I have avoided the term progressive activity for obvious reasons."

Thus far, the elements for the expanded form which we have isolated from the examples of Calver and Hatcher admit of the following combinations:

- (1) progression + overttness = expanded form ("He is playing Schubert's Serenade right now" "She is washing dishes.")
- (2) progression - overttness = expanded form ("I'm losing my appetite.")
- (3) overttness - progression = expanded form (He is wearing a white shirt.)

In the examples given thus far, overttness and progression appear to be compatible not only with each other but also with orientation to a beginning and possible cessation. But these examples have been of the most elementary kind. Less easily explained are certain variant forms--non-overt, non-developing verbs which occasionally appear in the expanded form. As Hatcher remarks:



. . .there still remain some cases which will resist our criteria i.e., overt vs. non-overt and non-overt non-developing vs. non-overt developing . Why does one say I'm considering the matter carefully but I consider that unfair? And why does one say I'm enjoying this? Here we have to do neither with development by degrees nor with overt physical activity; how is the progressive to be explained? Again, quite the contrary, we find You talk as if nothing happened (vs. You are talking nonsense), though here the predicated activity is overt; how is the simple form to be explained?

These cases can be explained by introducing, for the first time, a criterion of psychological nuances. If we examine all the examples of overt or developing activity so far cited, whether illustrating normal or exceptional usage, we will see they answer one of two (or three) questions: (1) What is happening to the subject? (2) What is the subject doing: (a) what is he busy at, engrossed in? or (b) what is he actually accomplishing? Compare:

- (1) I'm developing a cold. The milk is turning sour. It's falling to pieces.
- (2 a) She is washing the dishes, sweeping the floor, changing her dress, chewing gum.
- (2 b) You're rumpling my dress, squeezing my arm, messing everything up.

But I believe that none of the examples with the simple form so far considered could be regarded as answering any of these three questions. This puzzles me does not mean 'What this situation is actually accomplishing is to puzzle me' but 'I find this a puzzling situation! (and the same is true even of You puzzle me - 'I find your behavior puzzling'); it is therefore different from This situation is driving me nuts (getting us nowhere, beginning to make sense), where we feel strongly the idea of accomplishment (as well as of developing by degrees). My nose itches does not tell what is happening to my nose, as does My nose is running; I tell you he is wrong does not describe what the subject is busy doing, as does He is telling them about the accident. . .

If, then, we can agree that our examples of overt or developing activity all contain one of the three ideas mentioned-- (1) the subject is affected by his activity, (2a) the subject is busy or engrossed in his activity, (2b) the subject is accomplishing something by his activity---I believe we shall understand the use of the progressive whenever it appears with verbs of non-overt, non-developing activity: one of these three ideas will be in question. (pp. 270-271)

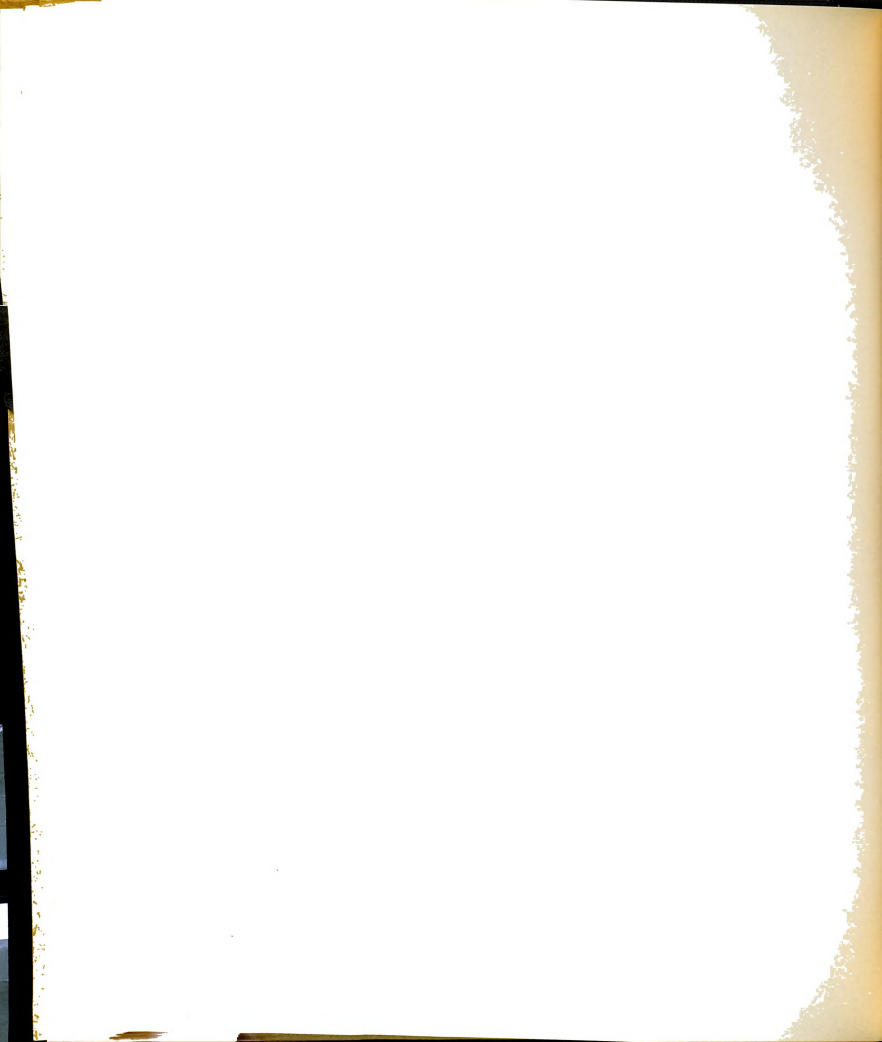
Sentences which may be regarded as responses to the three questions formulated by Hatcher represent the meaning INVOLVEMENT-OF-THE SUBJECT. Although OVERT ACTION and DEVELOPMENT-BY-DEGREES also contain one or more of the three ideas expressed in the questions, the term INVOLVEMENT OF THE SUBJECT serves chiefly as an explanation of the meaning of variant expanded forms.

In her first group of examples, selected for illustrating responses to the question "What is happening to the subject," Hatcher uses the verbs to see and to hear. The simple form is the norm for these verbs; and the statements in the simple form given below, do not represent responses to the questions as the expanded form may be understood to do:

1. (a) Yes, I see the picture
(b) Imagine: at last I'm seeing the Mona Lisa!
2. (a) I see several things here.
(b) What's the matter? Am I seeing things?
3. (a) Yes, I hear you.
(b) Am I really hearing your voice at last?

In her second group Hatcher has examples of variants which suggest in the expanded form that the subject is busy with or engaged in activity. Compare (a) and (b) in the sentences below:

4. (a) I think so.
(b) I'm thinking it over.
5. (a) I consider that unfair.
(b) I'm considering the matter carefully.
6. (a) They expect you for dinner.
(b) She's expecting a baby.



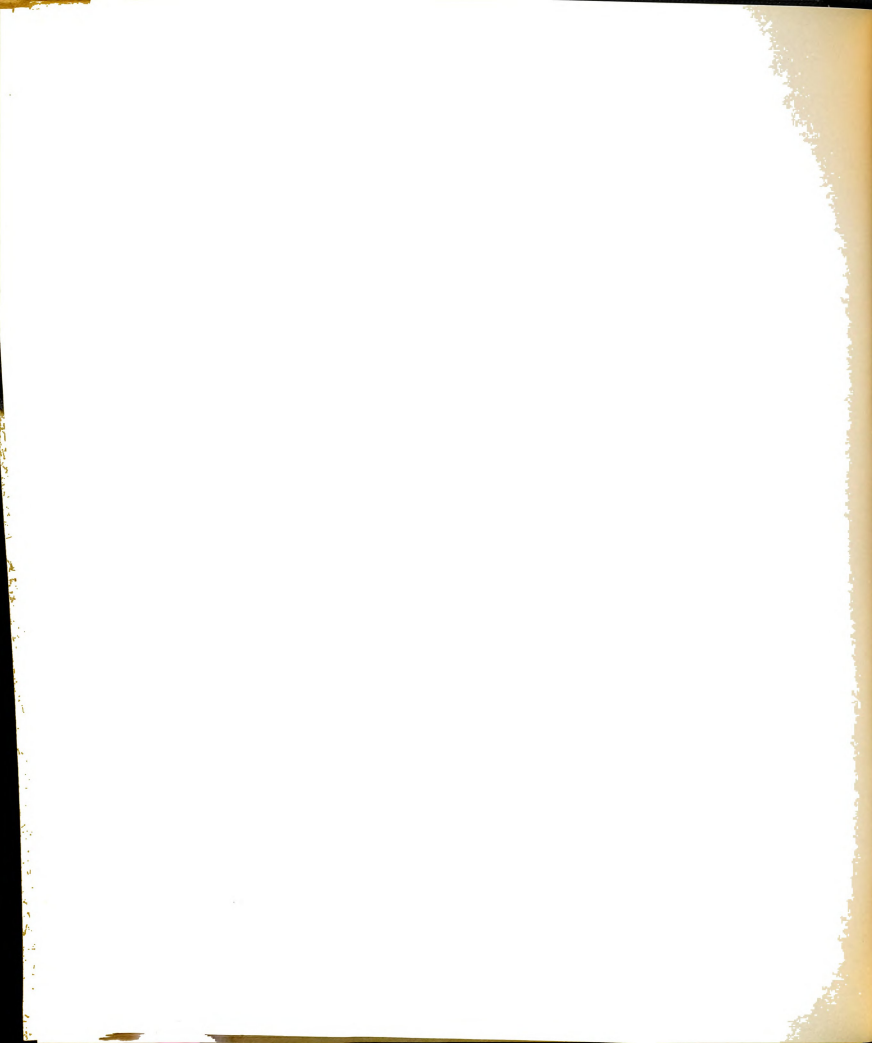
7. (a) She expects him to come.

(b) Don't forget now: I'm expecting you.

8. (a) I wonder if it will rain.

(b) I'm wondering just what is the right way to do this.

Of the verbs in this group, plan, expect, and wonder exhibit considerable fluctuation, to judge by my own data, and it is noteworthy that no clearly discernible difference in meaning can be established between "I plan to see him tonight" vs. "I'm planning to see him tonight," although busyness or engrossment may seem to be more prominent when the expanded form is substituted. In a statement such as "They expect you for dinner" the expanded form is likely to occur. The difference in nuance between the two forms is sometimes very slight with this verb, but, if one examines it in a variety of contexts, one notes that it does not admit of the use of the expanded form when the meaning becomes entirely intensional, e.g., "I expect you don't remember me." (1374) Similarly, to wonder takes the expanded form as frequently as the simple form. In my own data the two forms are represented approximately the same number of times. When hesitation is apparent, suggesting engrossment, the expanded form appears, but it also appears when this hesitation is not apparent. The lexical content of this verb is such that it can and does suggest development-by-degrees and involvement-of-the-subject in the simple form; the expanded form is not essential to add that meaning, but it gives an added emphasis to the meaning. With think and consider, on the other hand, the expanded form seems necessary in order to distinguish the process meaning from the judgment



meaning. In the simple form, think and consider are normally followed by a that clause which contains the judgment or the opinion which the verb serves to link to the subject. In the expanded form, they represent the subject as involved or engrossed in the process of reaching a decision.

The third group of Hatcher's examples are intended as illustrations of the contrast between emphasis on accomplishment and no emphasis:

1. (a) Stop it. You bore me.
 (b) He thinks he's being entertaining
 but he's really boring her to death.
2. (a) I insist (suggest) that you go.
 (b) I'm not insisting, I'm only suggesting
 that you go.
3. (a) I don't blame you a bit.
 (b) You understand I'm not blaming you, I
 only thought that. . .

In this last group, the simple form indicates that the speaker's judgment is expressed; judgment, since it is conclusive, is incompatible with the idea of further involvement (i.e., the cessation point is at hand). By contrast, the expanded forms all suggest that a goal of accomplishment has not yet been reached; thus continued involvement is necessary. With respect to this group, Hatcher's formula is particularly helpful. Here the contrast between development-by-degrees vs. non-development on an intensional level, makes the difference between involvement and non-involvement difficult to ascertain. The question "What is the subject accomplishing?" is, however, a clear and reasonably simple way to establish the difference when the developing



action or accomplishment is non-overt, as, for example, in
 ". . .your faith and loyalty to Rotary may be a fine thing, and
 all that, but it's just costing you the fellowship of your own
 son." ("1266)

The questions comprising Hatcher's formula employ the expanded form of the verb. This suggests the possibility that the verb forms in the formula discriminate in an artificial manner against the simple form statements which we feel can nevertheless be understood to have an involvement of the subject meaning; that is, because we expect the response to employ the same form as the question, simple-form responses may seem unidiomatic even when they have an involvement-of-the-subject meaning. The questions, as well as the responses, however, must fit the temporal category action taking place now which Hatcher insists upon. The do form in the question, while it would not exclude the temporal category now, would not confine the action to that category. Note: What happens to the subject? What does the subject do? What does the subject accomplish? These verbs refer to occurrence (happen); to activity, with or without progression (do); to progression, with or without the notion of activity (accomplish). They have this meaning in either form, but the indifference to time, which Bolinger pointed out as characteristic of the simple form, makes the do form unsatisfactory to use in a question which is, by definition, supposed to fit a specified temporal category. The to be form, on the other hand, in the absence of temporal adverbs to qualify the temporal meaning, confines the question to the specified category now. We have already noted that Hatcher's simple-form examples (e.g., "This shoe cuts my instep," p. 53)



do not suggest the action is confined to the category now. They simply do not exclude it.

Hatcher's formula is useful for verbs which by their nature cannot be readily classified. For example, we do not feel very certain whether such a verb as expect represents action or state, whether it is static or denotes development, whether it is overt or non-overt. It can be any or all of these. It is for such problematic verbs that the formula is chiefly intended. Non-involvement vs. involvement, essentially passivity vs. activity, are contrasts which are helpful but we need not expect to find that they are always clearcut. They are not always absolutes representing either/or; they are as often relatives representing more or less. In some of Hatcher's examples, it becomes a matter of choosing between emphasizing or de-emphasizing involvement (more or less); in others it becomes a matter of introducing the notion of involvement or not expressing it (either/or). She does not claim for the formula that it does more than suggest variation in emphasis. Using her formula as a testing device, we see that the expanded form always commits the subject to involvement and that the simple form is as non-committal about involvement as the lexical content of the verb permits.

Nothing in the meanings Hatcher summarizes under INVOLVEMENT OF THE SUBJECT conflicts in any way with what Calver has called OCCURRENCE, for her non-overt, non-developing verbs, when they appear in the expanded form, have a development-by-degrees meaning or suggest overt activity. The difference between her interpretation and Calver's is that she limits the application



of these meanings, and the limitation she places upon them is a temporal limit. They are valid, she says, only within the temporal category action taking place now. She does not argue that they are invalid for other temporal categories but maintains their validity for such categories as references to the past, references to the future, and customary action must be established and not assumed to hold for all these temporal divisions because they hold for one.

Calver places no temporal limitation on the meaning OCCURRENCE. If the expanded form is used, repeated actions and future actions, as well as action taking place now, mean OCCURRENCE. In discussing these temporal meanings, however, Calver explains the simple form rather than the expanded form. Repeated actions (e.g., "He's earning eighty dollars a week now." vs. "He earns eighty dollars a week now.") he says are vague out of context, but he feels:

"A kind of progression from a mere isolated occurrence to a generalization about the constitution of things can be set. (p. 324)

If we remove the temporal adverb from Calver's example, the statement with the simple form appears to represent FACT OF PROCESS. It has no overtones. "He is earning eighty dollars a week," on the other hand, suggests newness, that the novelty of the change has not yet, from the speaker's point of view, worn off. What prompts one form rather than the other has not been established, but, without the adverb, the same contrast between turning away from time and emphasis on time is apparent. With the adverb, the contrast seems to be the old in the new vs. the

new. The new is, of course, likely to be associated with eventfulness and thus more likely to be viewed as an occurrence than as fact-of-process. All that can be said is that both forms occur and, when they are interchangeable, as they are in Calver's example, the difference in their meaning is not critical. Similarly, with examples of the future, there is no critical difference in the meaning between "He graduates this year" and "He's graduating this year." Calver believes the simple form suggests the constitutional, i.e., the awareness of a predetermined design. Again, if we drop the adverbs, the simple-form statement, out of context, does not seem to be complete; it does not make clear that the reference is to a single event. The expanded form, out of context, and unmodified, refers to an occurrence, a single event. With the temporal adverb, both forms have their meaning modified so that they mean substantially the same thing, although the nuance occurrence and the nuance constitution-of-things make themselves felt. This occurrence nuance, we shall see, creeps through also in the final meaning which remains to be catalogued for the expanded form.

Both Poutsma¹⁰ and Aronstein¹¹ indicate the expanded form has a CHARACTERIZING FUNCTION. This term must then be distinguished from "characteristic", which is a constitutional meaning. Characteristic, of course, refers to the innate (e.g., "Roses smell"). Characterizing, on the other hand, seems to mean action revelatory of what is innate or typical. It is different from customary action chiefly in that the action per se is interesting

¹⁰The Characters of the English Verb, pp. 81-84.

¹¹"Die periphrastische Form", pp. 71-73.

because it is in the action that the characteristic is reflected. Poutsma would interpret "He's always smoking a cigar" to mean "He's a tremendous smoker"; whereas, "He always smokes a cigar after dinner" names a habit without in any way suggesting a comparison between excessive and temperate indulgence.

The CHARACTERIZING FUNCTION is limited by Poutsma to statements containing adverbial adjuncts such as always, constantly, forever, etc., plus the expanded form. Aronstein does not so limit it. Hence he ascribes this meaning not only to locutions such as "He is always smoking" but also to locutions such as "And now Sparrowbill also is drinking," (nicht "Sparrowbill ist jetzt am Trinken, sondern er ist ein Trinker"). Out of context, Aronstein's example suggests the action is a single-event present, but since the sentence depends for its full meaning on a previous statement, the verb can and does have the characterizing function Aronstein attributes to it:

What harm had poor Sparrowbill done me that I should help ruin him. And I couldn't save the unsavable Mr. Paskhorn; I merely yielded him, for insufficient work, here and there a half-crown--which he ofteneest drank. And now Sparrowbill also is drinking. (p. 72)

The expanded form then can apparently have this meaning even without an accompanying adverb such as always. Both writers indicate that the -ing form, in constructions which are characterizing, acquires something of the nature of an adjective in that it is descriptive. Poutsma says:

Whereas the first [He is always smoking] which is practically equivalent to He is a tremendous smoker, is distinctly descriptive of a characterizing habit, the latter [He always smokes a cigar after dinner] denotes a customary, not a



characterizing action. In the first the action of smoking is almost thought of as continuous, in the second it is distinctly represented as intermittent. (p. 82)

Neither Poutsma nor Aronstein give many examples of this function in the present tense, but Poutsma's shorter ones are preferable:

. . . that look of women who are always doing their duty.

It is the unexpected which is always happening.

You are always giving her the preference.

Further differences Poutsma sees between the two forms used with adverbs such as always are the following:

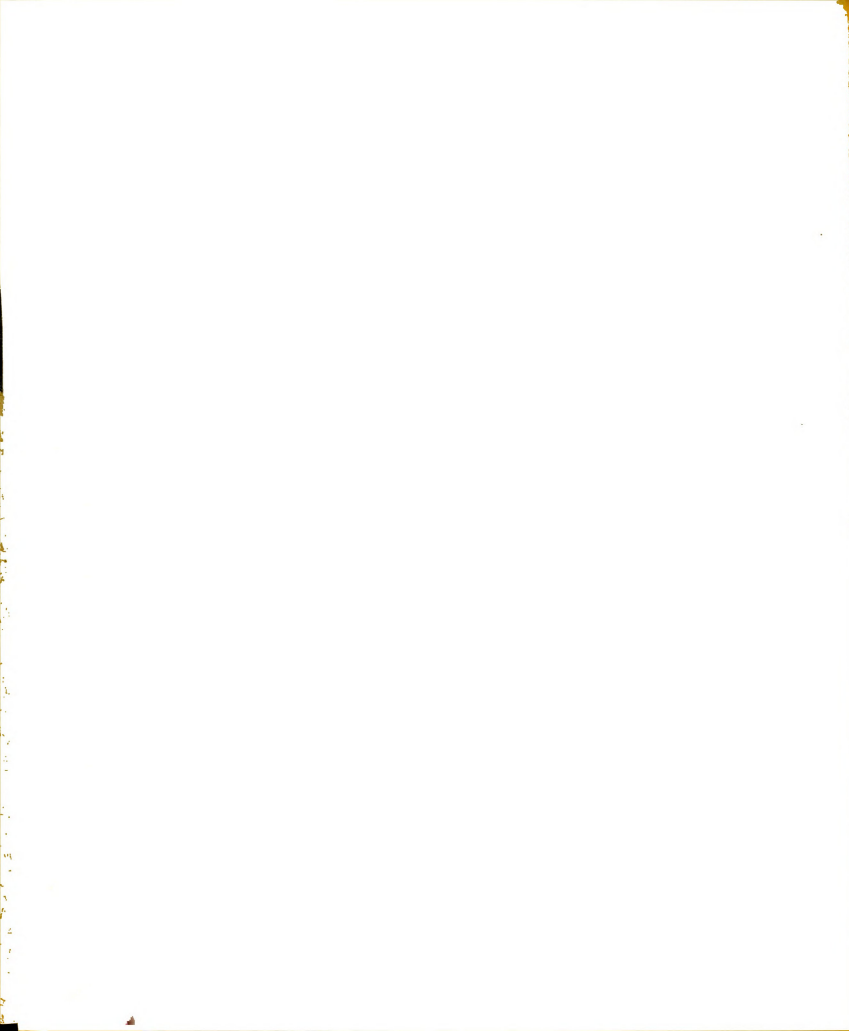
- 1) The first [the expanded form] is usually tinged with an emotional connotation, which is mostly wanting in the second [the simple form].
- 2) The lack of actuality is less pronounced in the first than in the second, the occasion of the first being frequently the actual observing of the action at the time of speaking or the time referred to in the sentence.
- 3) The first, on the strength of indicating something permanent, imparts to the participle more or less the nature of an adjective, which, naturally, is entirely absent in the finite forms of the verb in the second . . . (p. 82)

My own data corroborates Poutsma's second point very well.

In seven of the eight examples I have of the expanded form with always, the action has just taken place or is taking place at the time of speaking.

The use of the expanded form with always cannot be subsumed under the OCCURRENCE meaning in Hatcher's opinion. She does not feel that the idiom has been satisfactorily explained but feels Poutsma has "glimpsed the distinction."¹² In so far as I can

¹²"The Use of the Progressive Form in English", p. 257, fn. 12.



tell from my own data, sentences which combine the simple form and always are generalizations which remain generalizations when always is dropped from the context; sentences which combine the expanded form and always are generalizations which become single-event presents when always is dropped from the context. Such expanded-form items are what Bodelson has said of such idioms "a piece of picturesque exaggeration."¹³ The occurrence meaning creeps through and the subject is visualized as "in the act of."

As a result of our examination of the various meanings assigned to the two verb forms, we see that Bolinger has supplied us with a comprehensive term in FACT OF PROCESS, under which all previously systematized uses of the simple form can be subsumed. Of these meanings, CONSTITUTION OF THINGS is the most frequent and has the broadest application. Not all uses have been systematized, as Hatcher shows by such examples as "I suggest that you go" and "You say you hit him?" They are meanings which the simple form apparently continues to express because the historically more recent form has not, as yet at least, been attracted by these meanings. Similarly, we have noted from our analysis of some of Hatcher's and Calver's examples (e.g., "I plan to see him tonight" vs. "I am planning . . ." and "He earns eighty dollars a week now" vs. "He is earning . . ."), that there are occasional sentences in which a real distinction in meaning cannot be established with certainty.

The meanings OCCURRENCE, OVERT ACTION, and DEVELOPMENT-BY-DEGREES described for the expanded form are meanings which appear

¹³ "The Expanded Tenses in Modern English," p. 231.

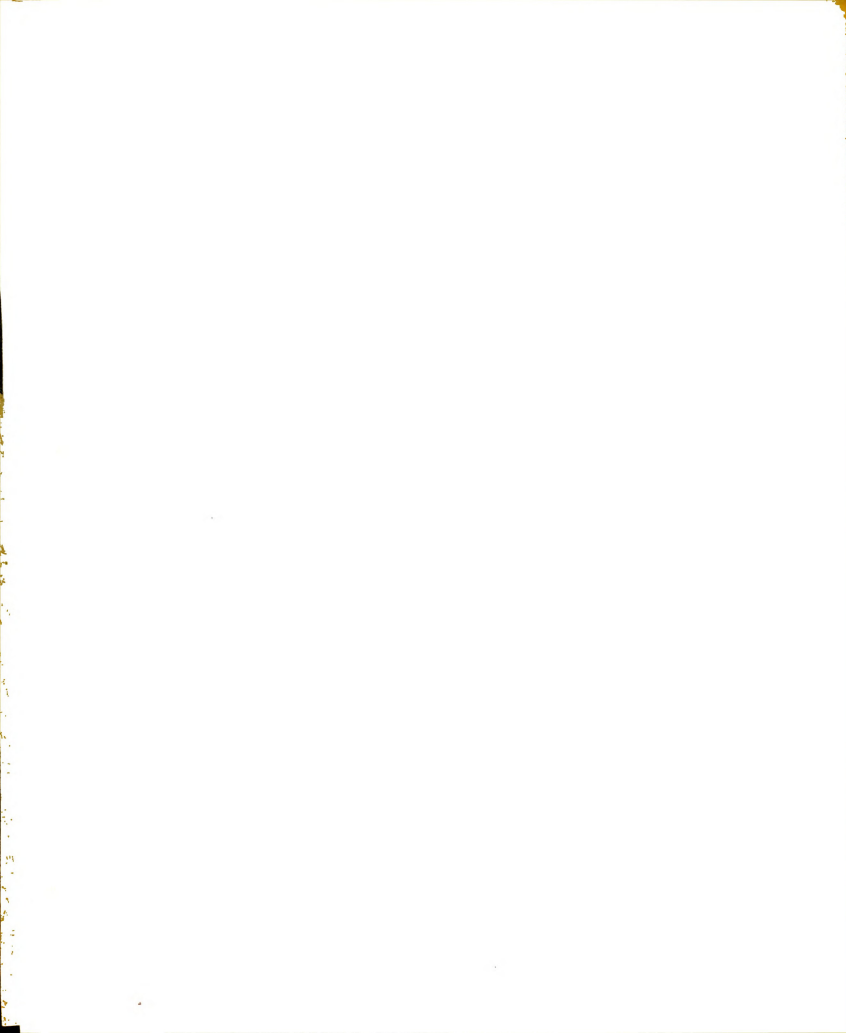
to be closely related. Hatcher's treatment is more detailed, gives more attention to the problematical, and generally clarifies what is only hinted at by Calver. The meaning INVOLVEMENT-OF-THE-SUBJECT, while it does not rigorously exclude all simple forms, is of value in explaining variant expanded forms of verbs which normally denote non-developing, non-overt action.

While Calver insists that the difference between the two forms is not a time distinction, Bolinger's recognition of a temporal difference is significant and bears repeating:

The simple present has no confines, but all the other tenses are confined in some way. It is 'timeless' not in the sense of 'eternal' but of 'non-committal' about time. The expanded form is confined by or oriented to a beginning or possible cessation. (p. 435)

This explanation of a difference between the two forms in no way impairs anything that either Hatcher or Calver have said but helps to clarify some uses of the simple form and the expanded form which cannot be clearly explained on the basis of Calver's and Hatcher's discussions. The difference between the do form and the to be form in the questions used to test the involvement-of-the-subject meaning is a case in point.

With this catalogue of meanings for the two forms before us, we may return to the illustrations from current usage in order to see whether these meanings serve to explain the bulk of some two thousand citations.



Chapter 4

The Verb Itself

Certain verbs in my data were conspicuous for one of three reasons: they appeared only in one form, simple or expanded; or, they were rare in one form as compared to the other, or, they were frequent in both forms. These verbs, which are the basis of discussion in this chapter, are grouped under the following three headings: the simple form, the expanded form, both forms. The verbs in each category will be discussed in the order indicated.

I

The Simple Form

A. The verbs that do not expand. There are six verbs which have a high frequency count but appear only in the simple form.¹ Since these verbs occur often, I stopped collecting them when I found I had twenty or more examples of each of these and comparatively few citations of other verbs. Because I have not since then encountered them in the expanded form, I have assumed that they do not expand. The verbs and the number of instances I have of each are: believe (20), know (33), like (25), mean (26), want (30), seem (23).

When I had collected all my data, I classified all the items, both simple and expanded forms on the basis of their common

¹The lone exception occurs in a speech attributed to an Italian immigrant who demonstrably has not mastered the English idiom, "Nobody is wantin' to be a woman, Joe. . ." (1913)

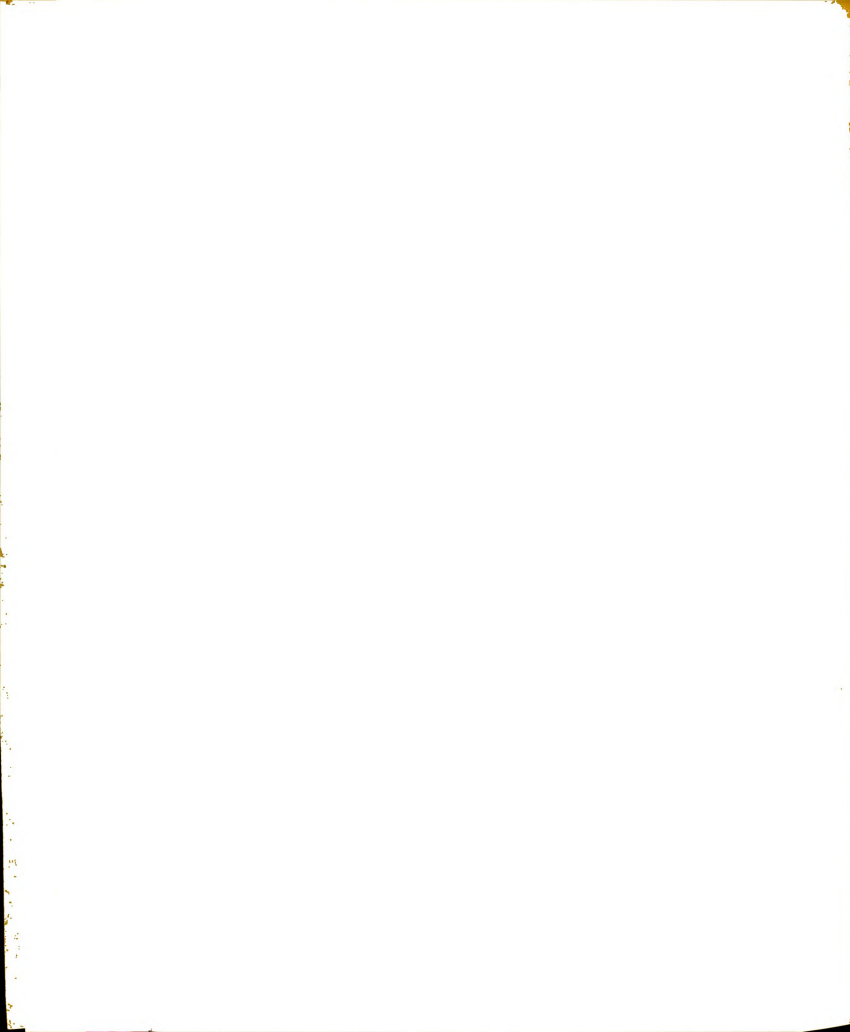


grammatical environment. The grammatical patterns into which these six verbs fitted were in no way unique; that is, expanded forms of other verbs also occurred in the same grammatical patterns. Thus, if there are grammatical reasons which explain why these verbs do not expand, I have not found those reasons. In fact, some of these six verbs appear in some grammatical environments that others of the six do not appear in. For instance, like, mean, seem, want frequently stand before the infinitive; believe occurs in this pattern only once, know not at all. All the verbs except seem were most frequently followed by an object; that is, a substantive (including a phrase or clause functioning as a substantive) having a referent different from the subject stood after the verb more commonly than any other type of construction. The table below indicates the relative frequency with which each verb was followed by an infinitive or an object:

	<u>Infinitive</u>	<u>Object</u>	<u>Other</u>
believe	1	27	2
know	0	26	3
like	6	17	3
mean	3	17	6
seem	8	0	15
want	6	14	6

Two verbs, mean and seem were tied to both animate and inanimate subjects; that is, the subject word had a correlating form in the he/she/it substitute group or one in the it substitute group.²

²For an explanation of the use of correlation forms in dealing with the problem of gender see Charles C. Fries, The Structure of English (New York: Harcourt Brace and Co., 1952), pp. 120-121.



The subject word to which the other verbs were tied had correlating forms in only the he/she/it substitute group. In other words, human subjects were the rule. Adverbs were extremely rare in the grammatical environment of all these verbs. While adverbs occurred in at least one sentence with each of these verbs, they were not usually even in these few instances verb modifiers as the examples below show.

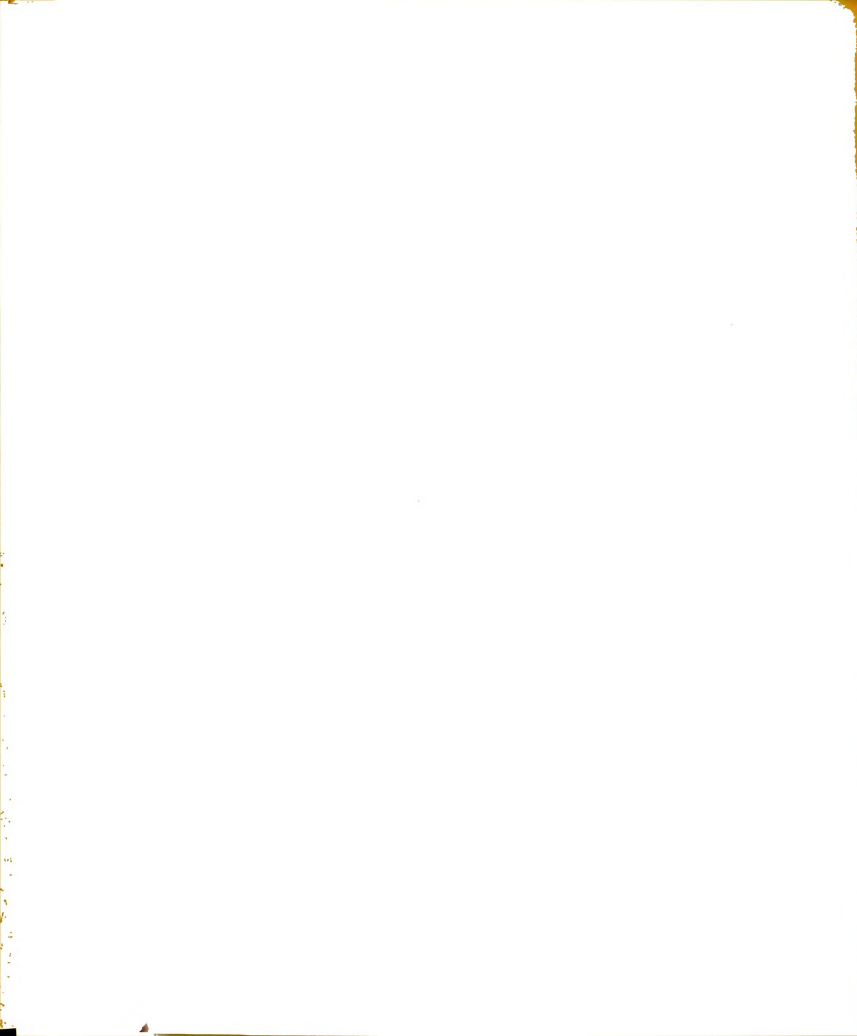
Adverbs stating time

1. Party officials believe this time the Republican opposition will have much more appeal to Southerners than in 1946. (2104)
2. Frequently speakers or writers who know better will cite for propaganda purposes only a portion of a statement by Lincoln to support their views. (488)
3. I like to win just as much today or almost anyway, as I did when I was a young fellow. (1389)
4. You mean he's coming out now? (1986)
5. Now they seem less eager. (1967)
6. "Wait a minute," he said. "I want to think." (763)

Adverbs stating place

1. You know down at the office we have at last collected enough data. . (1398)
2. . . . and Mr. Gorton wants to see you in his room. On the double." (306)
3. What work do you want to do here? (74)
4. Nothing in the move to the east seems to threaten the company's decentralization. (1023)

The infrequency of time and place meanings in the contexts of these verbs suggests that such concepts are more likely to be associated with extensional meanings than with the intensional meaning which are common to these six verbs. Aside from this



inference which the disparity of adverbs permits, the grammatical environment of these verbs is not unique. It does not explain why these verbs do not expand.

In terms of their NATURE these verbs are, it seems to me, more readily conceived of as verbs of state than as verbs of action, but as Hatcher has pointed out grammarians have not established an objective basis for determining what constitutes a verb of state as distinguished from an action verb;³ therefore, a classification into verbs of state or verbs of action necessarily remains a subjective one. In common with the action verbs discussed by Hatcher, these verbs have non-overt, non-developing characteristics. In terms of Hatcher's definition of developing as a gain or loss in momentum, some of these verbs in isolation can be conceived of as expressing this idea; believe, like and want all admit of the notion of intensifying or weakening. In context, however, these verbs all have a static quality suggestive rather of the state which is than of a state in process of becoming:

1. I have been telling them what I believe profoundly. (777)
2. I like it here. I like the air. I like it for my kids. (438)
3. Things are happening, Martin, and I want you--- no Science wants you to take your part in them. (49)

Four of these verbs, believe, know, like, want, denote mental or psychological states and as such may be said to have a consti-

³"The Use of the Progressive Form in English," Language, XXVII (1951), 267, fn. 35.

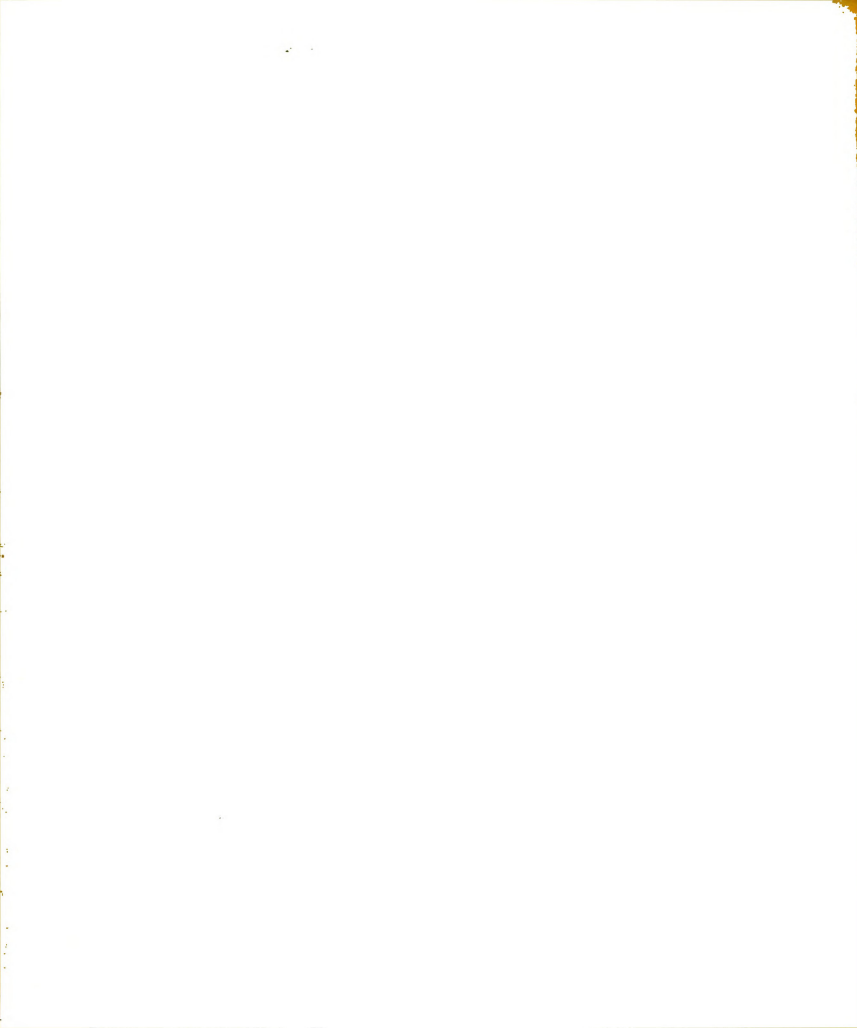


tutional meaning. Although we recognize a semantic kinship between these on the one hand, and mean and seem on the other, it is not easy to say precisely what constitutional meaning seem and mean denote. As a word denoting the fallibility of the senses, we might say seem represents an order-of-nature meaning; mean has sometimes a copula-like quality and expresses a purely logical relationship: "Competition means an over-emphasis on speed."

(106) The verb very frequently denotes a mental state: "I mean it...no matter how much I make fools of your board." (65)

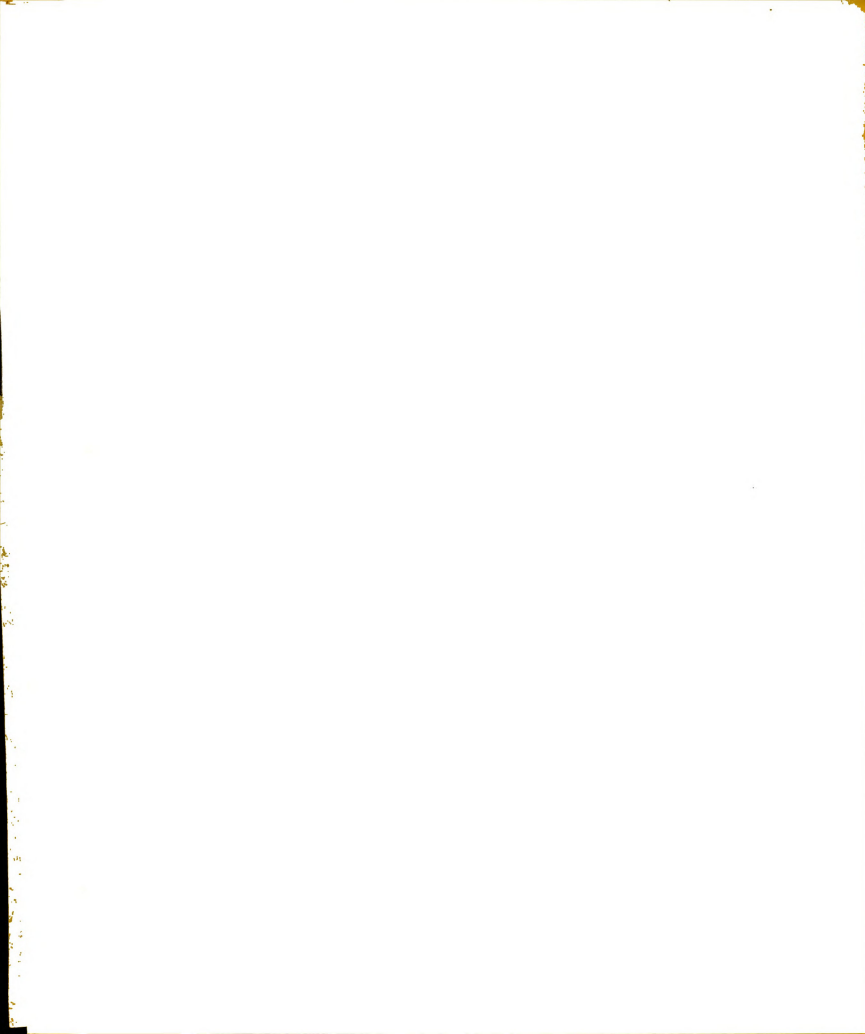
The semantic area encompassed by these verbs is restricted as compared with some other common verbs. For example, Webster's New World Dictionary records six definitions for believe and fourteen for have. The NED shows that some of these verbs have, in the course of their history, occupied the same semantic territory. Believe in the sense of "to hold dear" is closely related to like. The notion of appearance of which is in seem was present in the root liko from which like derives. The NED does not give any meaning for any of these verbs which indicates they have ever denoted overt action. A possible exception is the archaic meaning of mean, "to say" or "to tell" since these verbs denote the audible.

All we can say with certainty in regard to these six verbs is that they do not require a grammatical environment consistently different from grammatical environments in which the expanded form is found; they show the indifference to time we have seen to be characteristic of the simple forms. Although the CONSTITUTION-OF-THINGS meaning is not as obvious in all the items containing



these verbs as it is in Calver's illustrations the verbs themselves are constitutional. They denote non-overt, non-developing states and in that respect conform to what Hatcher has said is the norm for the simple form.

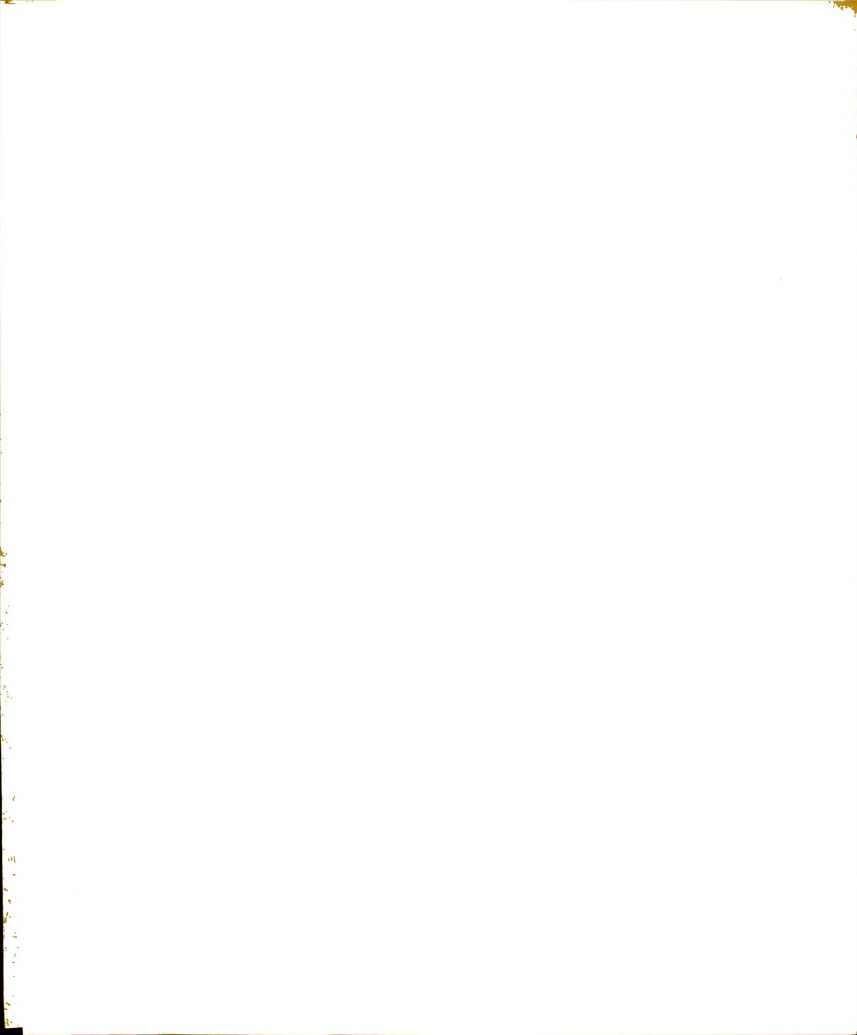
B. Verbs which appeared only in the simple form. Since the frequency of occurrence of the verbs in this group was too low to justify any conclusions about whether the verbs do or do not expand, it is likely that some are in this group only as a result of the limitation of the data. On the basis of a larger sample some of them could doubtlessly be placed in group A above; many would probably belong in group C (verbs which appear rarely in the expanded form) below. Indeed, for a few, idiomatic sentences employing the expanded form come easily to mind; for others, such examples do not readily suggest themselves. In this group there are forty-eight different verbs with a frequency range of one through nine. There are a hundred and forty-two items. In the contexts in which they appear, the characteristic common to all these verbs is non-overt, non-developing action or state. In other contexts, some of them could conceivably denote overt action or development by degrees. In terms of the NATURE of the verb, neither state vs. action nor semantic grouping are reliable criteria for grouping these items. Some admit of semantic grouping; others do not. A few are different in that the -ing form corresponding to the simple form is commonly employed in an adjectival function. Since some division of these items for convenience in discussing them is desirable, they are grouped into (1) the semantically related



group, (2) the semantically unrelated group, and (3) the adjectival group. If we accept physic-psychological states as having a constitutional meaning, the items in group (1) admit of classification under the CONSTITUTION-OF-THINGS label. With one or two exceptions, the items in group (2) may be so classified. Those in group (3) require a different explanation. Since the expression of the constitution-of-things meaning appears to be an important function of the simple form, and, since Calver in his very short treatment of this meaning did not illustrate it extensively, it will be illustrated here as extensively as the data permits, and the basis upon which it is derived will be indicated. It is important to remember, however, that constitutional meanings shade into each other and that isolation of one serves only the purpose of amplification of the term constitutional.

1. The semantically related group. Since the same verb, depending on its environment, has many shades of meaning, no semantic grouping permits mutually exclusive categories. A few of the verbs in this group name emotions: detest, envy, fear, hate, love. Several name mental and/or emotional attitudes: care, doubt, mind, pride, regard, regret. Others name mental actions: contemplate, disagree, notice, presume, recall, recognize, suppose, guess, imagine. Obviously, these verbs suggest non-overtness; while experience tells us they have overt manifestations, this overtness is only inferential.

The subject in all these items, except two, has the correlating form he/she; that is, the subject is a human being. In

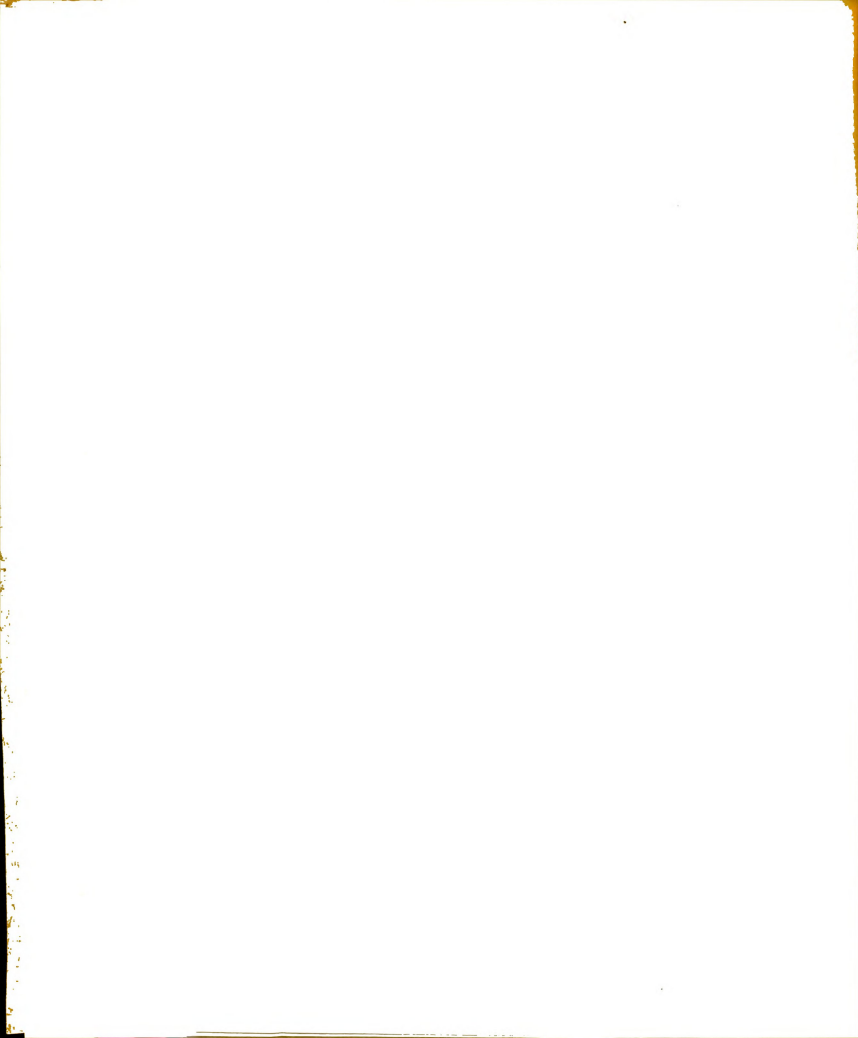


that respect they are different from the items in the semantically unrelated group where inanimate subjects are frequent. The term state perhaps describes the nature of these verbs better than action. Their semantic meaning is such that non-involvement of the subject is difficult to imagine. Yet, according to Hatcher's formula for determining the involvement or non-involvement meaning, only a few of these verbs appear idiomatic answers to the questions comprising her formula:

1. What is happening to the subject? (He is detesting, envying, fearing, loving the object)
2. What is the subject doing, engrossed in? (He is detesting, envying, etc.)
3. What is the subject accomplishing? (He is detesting, envying, etc.)

With these verbs, a reply such as "He is engrossed in fearing, loving, etc. suggests itself, but the involvement meaning we sense is not, apparently, the kind the expanded form expresses; that is, the involvement is not an involvement in activity, or process or accomplishment. These are verbs which Jespersen speaks of as non-conclusive verbs; that is, they are not undertaken with the intention of completion.⁴ One might add they are not volitionally undertaken although that factor would not exclude them from consideration under question 1 above. The verbs expressing attitude also resist the formula, but some of those in the mental action group appear to be idiomatic replies to "What is the subject doing?" (He is supposing, imagining, presuming the

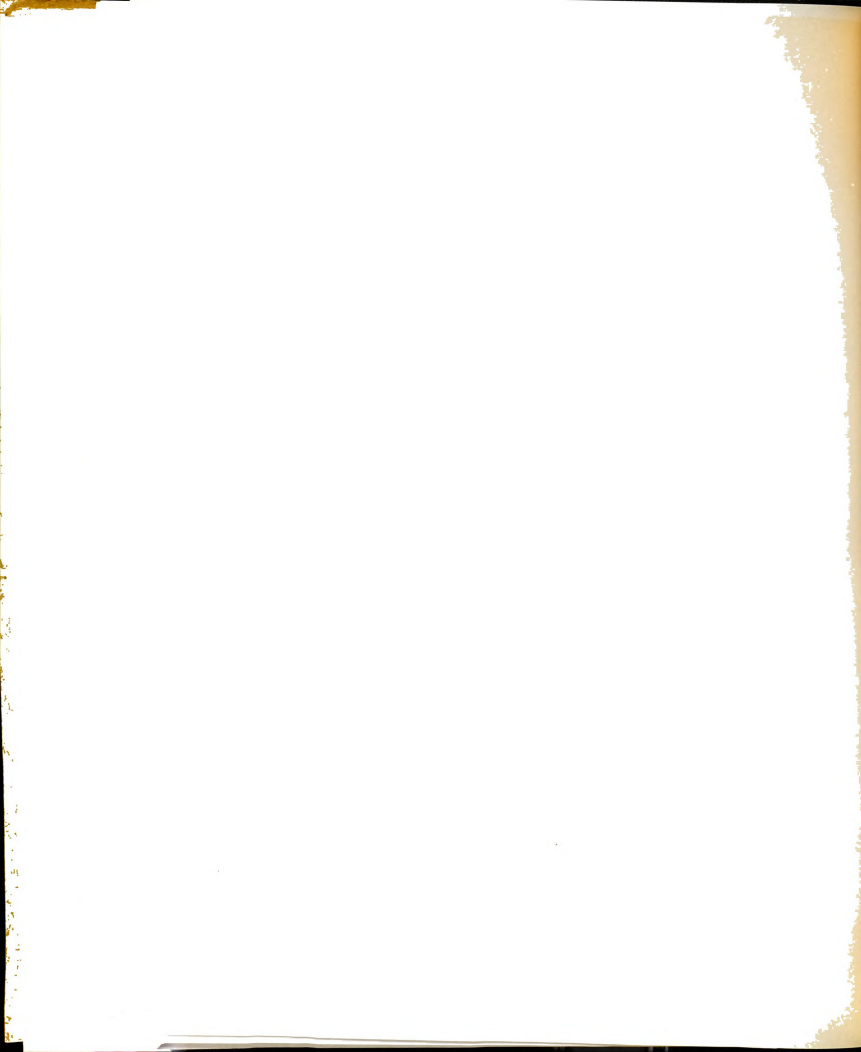
⁴ Otto Jespersen, Philosophy of Grammar (New York: Henry Holt and Co., 1924), pp. 272-275.



object is real. He is recalling, contemplating the object). If we attempt to determine analytically whether these verbs represent constitutional meanings, one feature becomes evident. Many of them represent acts or states which in the human being are not subordinate to will; they may not be mechanical responses to stimuli as are sight, taste and smell, but they are natural responses, that is, in the nature of man and only partially within his control. Those which can be made to expand suggest in that form that the action is volitional.

(a). Verbs denoting emotion.

1. "He detests me, among others." (83)
2. "I had no idea you felt this way about me---you despise me, don't you?" (1956)
3. "I envy you your uniform."
"I envy you yours." (317)
4. "Gentlemen, I envy you your great adventure." (1959)
5. For those who envy us most heartily are often those who are dedicated to the idea of a centrally planned economy. (447)
6. "I don't envy you the experience itself, but I do envy you the strengthening you're going to derive from it." (316)
7. It is not the intense cold, however, but the warm chinook wind from the Pacific that drivers fear most in winter. (1018)
8. ...but I fear that Cole...is not in the present instance doing what should really be done for the cause on this side of the ocean. (610)
9. Ike hates to read any document longer than a page. (1061)
10. "I hate sitting around with a lot of people," he said, "just talking after dinner." (808)
11. I hate to get sore because it makes my collar wilt. (1342)
12. "I hate to be the guy who does this to you." (322)



13. "Evil minded, I'm afraid, Nat, I hate to say it of your sister. (1969)
14. "The little coward! 'I hate her! She can't treat me like that! (1970)
15. Hollywood, which dearly loves a cycle, is embarked on a congenial one: (709)
16. "Why, I---I---love her! I'm going to marry her--after I get out of college." (1984)
17. "You know I love to help." (1983)
18. He loves to tell how at 22 he let his first serious business venture...go bankrupt... (1016)
19. "She loves the movies." (1306)

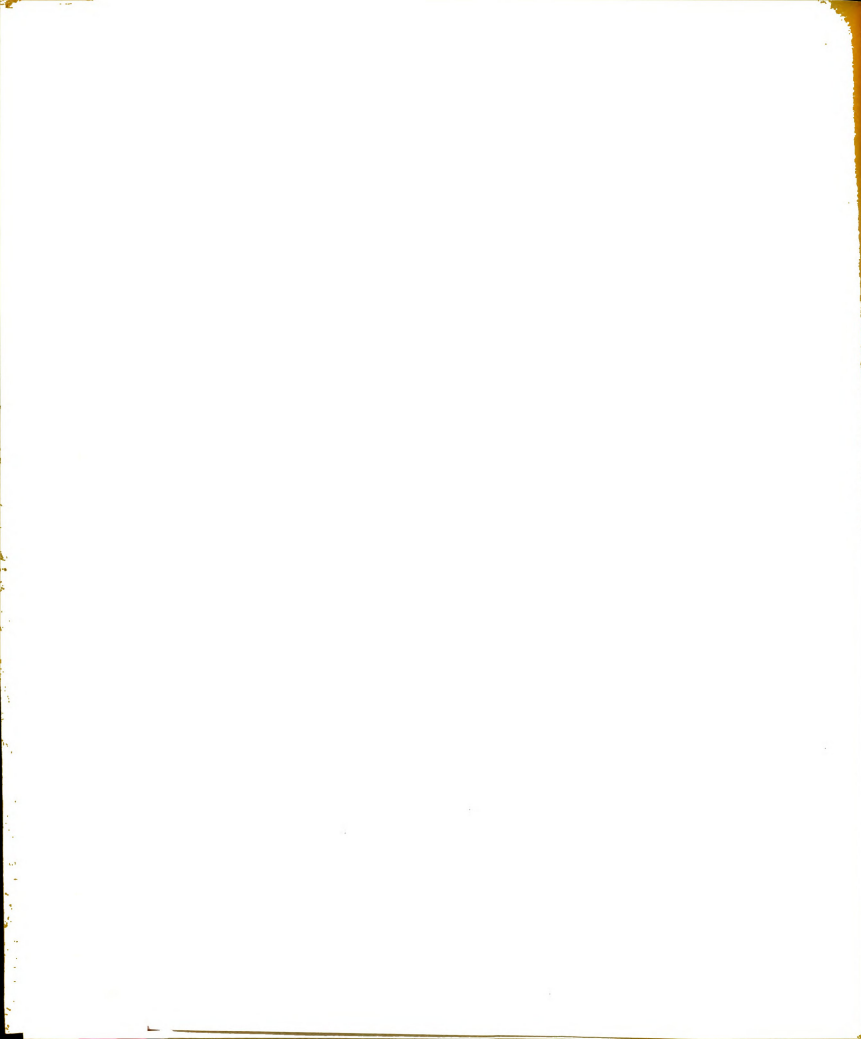
In a vague way a few of these items, 3, 12, 14 can be understood to fit the temporal frame, action taking place now. What is not easily imagined is a beginning or end point which is implied in such a frame. All these items suggest indifference to time. Many of them imply involvement of the subject but not with any emphasis upon occurrence, activity, and process as notions. All suggest psychological constitution.

(b). Verbs denoting attitude.

1. "A hell of a lot you care how he feels." (1949)
2. "Also there is a faint flavor of condescension in the way you say "young man" for which I don't really care." (1947)
3. All the cold victim cares about is whether he can take something that minimizes his misery. (995)

(For further illustration of this verb see items 17, 315, 1948 in Appendix I.)

4. "I doubt whether you can say anything to me more penetrating than the remarks I habitually address to myself." (1957)
5. Does anyone doubt that if these controversies are to be fostered in the educational system, a Catholic parent is fully justified in keeping his children away from the

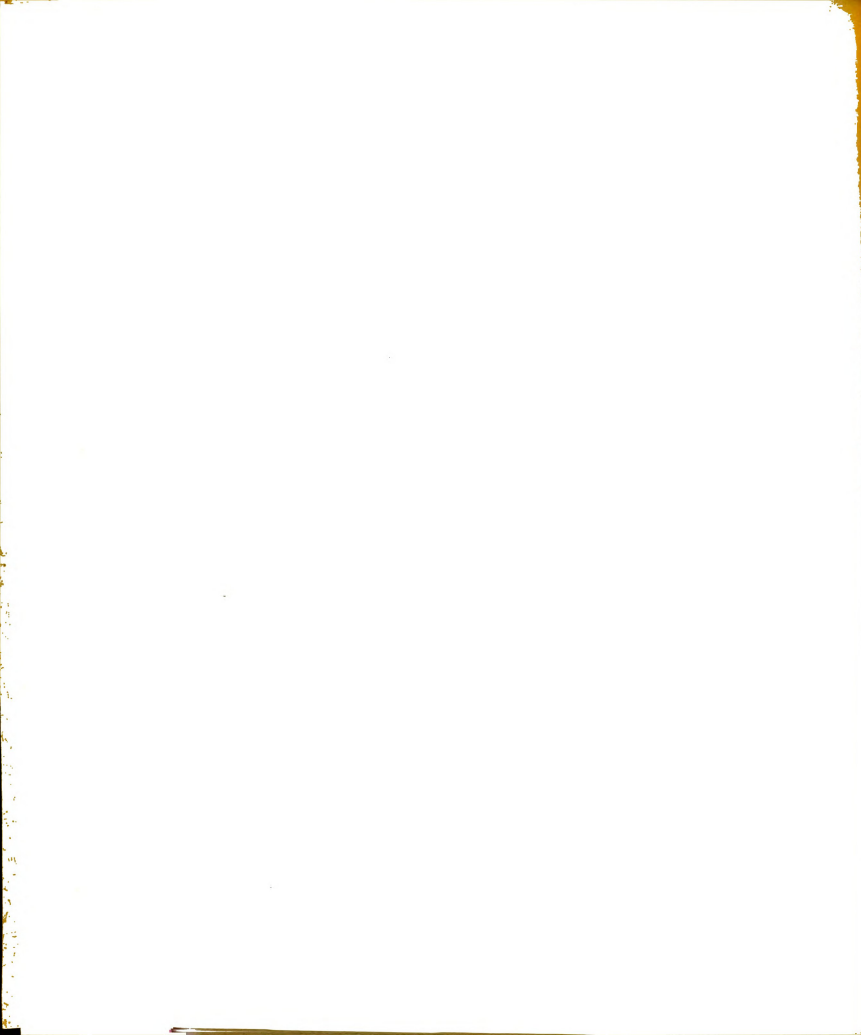


public schools... (475)

6. ...but I doubt whether they fully realize how much more serious are problems it creates for their smaller European allies. (1057)
7. "You guys mind if I turn on the radio?" (334)
8. Though virtually everyone prides himself on his sense of humor, surveys indicate that a surprising number of people are sadly lacking in this department. (1012)
9. "...I don't like to wreck a man's naval career, even when he regards it lightly." "I don't regard it lightly, sir." (343)
10. Millions the world over regard him as the model of all that Christianity should mean. (1009)

(This verb occurred eight times, always in the simple form. See items 340, 341, 342, 461, 462, 1008 in Appendix I for further illustration.)

The verb to care, when it expresses attitude, probably does not expand. In the sense of "to take care of" we might expect the expanded form, but the action would then be overt. Cf. The Red Cross is caring for the refugees. Doubt, the antonym of believe, probably follows the same pattern as believe. The expanded form of mind is familiar in the locution "He's minding his own business," but this locution suggests that the behavior is under observation. In "You guys mind..." the semantic value is the same as care. The verb regard occurred often enough to suggest that it probably does not normally expand. These verbs, in these contexts, suggest the same indifference to time as the preceding group. They also resist the formula for the involvement-of-subject meaning, although non-involvement does not describe them appropriately, for the disinterestedness it suggests is contradicted by the attitudes these verbs express. The term state probably fits their meaning better than action, and if we accept



psychological state as a constitutional meaning, the simple form is explained.

(c). Verbs denoting mental action.

1. Today in New York from his tower, "high up in the air and surrounded by a view on four sides," he contemplates Twentieth Century American life and continues to extend the circle of his panoramic exposures. (82)
 2. As I now contemplate my gentle initiation at Hammie's hands, it seems to me that what I was being taught was a view of life-- (477)
 3. I disagree only in those cases where I think DeVoto mistakes standards for categories. (476)
 4. "What time will you be home, Dad?"
"About ten, I guess---maybe later." (1968)
 5. "You can call me sap if you want to, Gabby---but I guess I'm falling in love with you." (1484)
- (This verb occurred nine times. For further illustration see items 47, 1172, 1348, 1386, 1387, 1966, 2128 in Appendix I.)
6. "I imagine we can make it by midnight." (1982)
 7. "I imagine," said Queeg casually, "that it is mainly a matter of towing rigs of one sort and another." (333)
 8. We notice it, perhaps, when we are out mulching the roses in the afternoon. (1015)
 9. "I notice Hildy Johnson ain't here either." (1985)
 10. "I hope you notice that Clarence is returning the pug dog." (1784)
 11. "I presume you've checked out with Adams?" (336)
 12. "Mart my son," he roared, "do you realize that in this, what some might call a sordid task, we are learning things that will enable us to heal the bodies and comfort the souls of lost but unhappy folks?" (69)

(There are six instances of this verb in the simple form, none in the expanded. See items 69, 338, 1041, 1057, 1295, 1995, Appendix I.)



13. "Sir---sir. if you recall I recommended that you allow Mr. Maryck to recover--" (339)

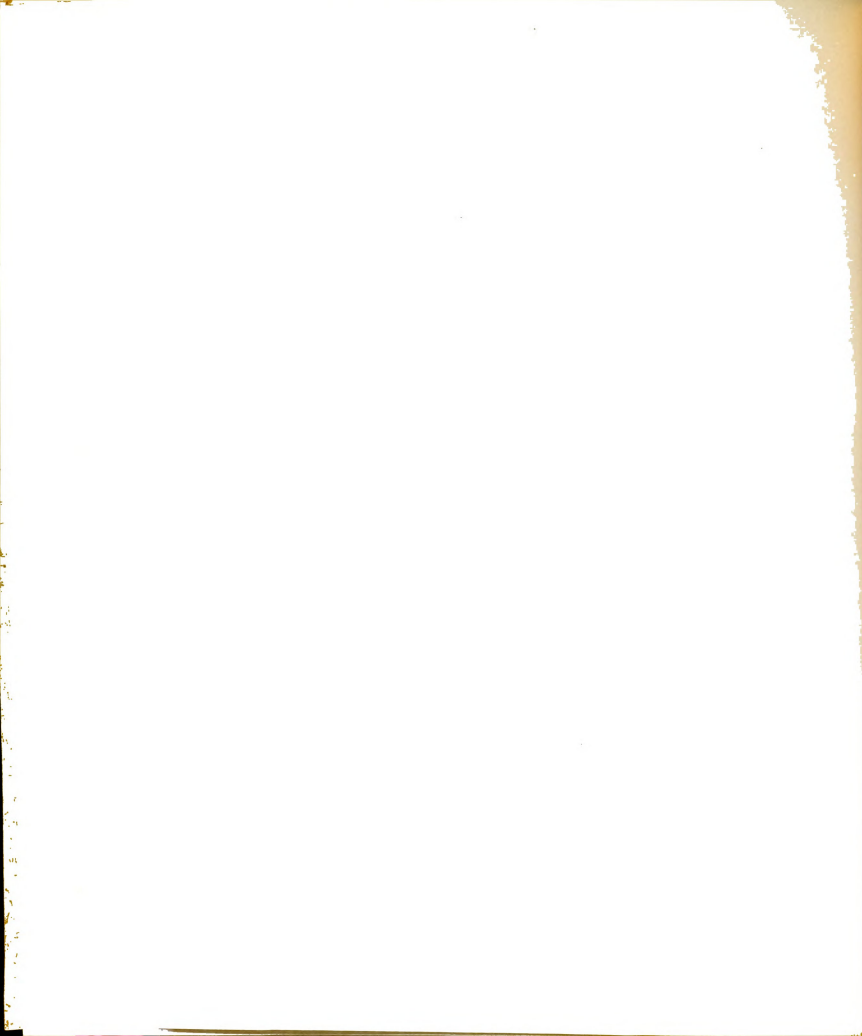
(This verb occurs four times. See items 463, 781, 1010, Appendix I.)
14. The Democratic Party recognizes that man is a three-fold creature. (2115)
15. "I suppose all the reports are up to date?" (346)

(See also items 70, 345, 1383, 1384, 2000, 2001, 2002 in Appendix I.)
16. "I strongly suspect you'll find plenty of them there on the Caine." (348)

With verbs denoting mental action, the activity notion can be strong or weak. When it is weak, the emphasis is likely to be on the result of such activity. Notice that in the majority of these items, 4, 5, 6, 7, 9, 10, 11, 12, 14, 15, 16, a result is expressed. The verbs guess, presume, suppose, suspect, as they are used in these contexts, represent inferences and as such suggest insight and have, therefore, a constitutional coloring. Those in which the action meaning is latent remain idiomatic in the expanded form but seem then to emphasize the action. They all denote non-overt action.

2. The semantically unrelated group. The verb belong occurs eight times. It is a verb which I think belongs in group A (the verbs that do not expand). It cannot be understood as denoting occurrence, overt action or development by degrees. In these items it suggests some kind of order: chronological, moral, social, prescribed, logical. The items follow:

1. ...and if we recognize it (an attitude of an earlier generation) we can do so only because we do not belong to their world. (2133)



2. "You are the chairman--you belong there!"
"I belong where I want to be!" (779)
3. "And all the guys who don't belong in here--well--well--stay here, and keep your faces closed so the watchstanders can do their duty." (313)
4. "He's got seven kids and a mortgage and belongs to a Country Club." (1946)
5. "Oh, she belongs to a very nice family." (79)
6. "He's not giving anything to her that belongs to you, or you would have felt that yourself long ago." (1945)
7. "Mrs. Potter, you come right back where you belong." (1944)

The verb to concern appeared in five items. It has a copula-like quality in each of these items. It does not fit into any of the five specialized meanings discussed by Calver as illustrative of the constitutional; it reflects, however, that which is inherent in the nature of a situation, condition or thing. It fits what I have judged Calver to mean by "the essential." This verb probably does not ever expand. It is devoid of the characteristics of overtness, process, activity, occurrence. It expresses an abstract meaning, the perception of relationship between: it is a logical link with only intensional meaning.

1. What does concern me, in common with thinking partisans of both parties, is not just winning this election, but how it is won. (2108)
2. What concerns me is that its procedures make it extremely difficult for reporters to find out the truth and pass it on to the public. (107)
3. What concerns us here...is the effect such control must have on production. (448)
4. It concerns only that part of him that was immortal and belonged to the Elizabethan age. (479)

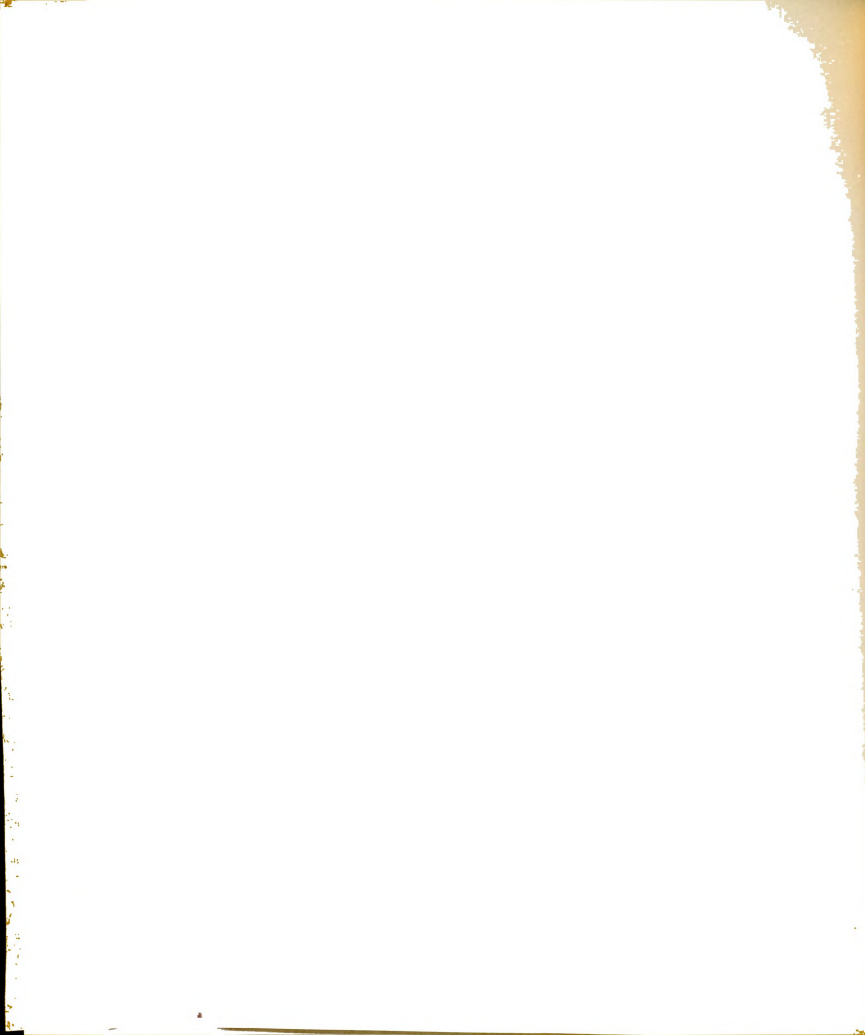


5. "I regret to say it is something disagreeable---disgraceful would be nearer the truth---and it concerns your son, Richard." (1951)

To continue occurs six times. In three instances it stands before the infinitive and serves only to indicate that the action denoted by the infinitive extends over a period of time. Item 4 is a stage direction and item 5 a statement of customary practice; both are constitutional. In item 6, the verb stands in a before clause; I have not found the expanded form in this construction. (See Ch. 2, p.26) The verb would probably expand in some contexts, e.g., "He is continuing his good work among the Indians."

1. If the two lines on the cost graph continue to move in their present directions, however slowly, they are bound to cross some day. (613)
2. ..he contemplates Twentieth Century American life and continues to extend the circle of his panoramic exposures. (82)
3. Again, the famed Viennes, whose work after 154 years continues to charm the majority of music lovers, was given his due. (2033)
4. Margaret continues upstairs. (1426)
5. Daylight operations commence at seven and continue to sunset when night flying begins. (1022)
6. "But before I go on with this message, my dear bretheren and co-patriots, before I continue, I should like to inform you, nay warn you--" (442)

The verb to include, although it appears only in the simple form, admits of expansion, as, for example, "I am including that in my report" or "Are you including John in your plans?" In these constructed statements the development-by-degrees meaning is apparent, but in the citations below the function of the



verb is to show the essential connection between the whole and its parts, a logical relationship with only intensional significance. Note that are can be substituted in item 1.

1. The current objectives of Communist espionage include the following: (991)
2. It includes the states of Viet Nam, Laos and Cambodia. . . (1046)
3. The list includes Milwaukee and Madison, the capital. (1047)
4. The staff includes every specialist and skilled artisan needed to put the air base in operation over night. (1017)

The verb to indicate also admits of expansion, as, for example, "He's clearly indicating a better way." In the sentences in which it appears here, it is synonymous with show, a verb discussed in group C, (p. 96). In these sentences the simple form can be explained on the basis of the non-overt, non-developing; it can also be explained as constitutional in that it suggests the logical or the inferential.

1. The best estimates we have indicate that India increased by fifty million inhabitants during the decade 1931-40. (983)
2. Though virtually everyone prides himself on his sense of humor, surveys indicate that a surprising number of people are lacking in this department. (1012)

Doubtlessly, the verb to involve, also expands since such a statement as "You're involving yourself unnecessarily" seems idiomatic, but in these items it denotes an intrinsic characteristic of the subject; thus it has a constitutional meaning.

1. But tolerance involves submitting to these exhibitions of human weakness; humor involves suspecting that you, in turn,



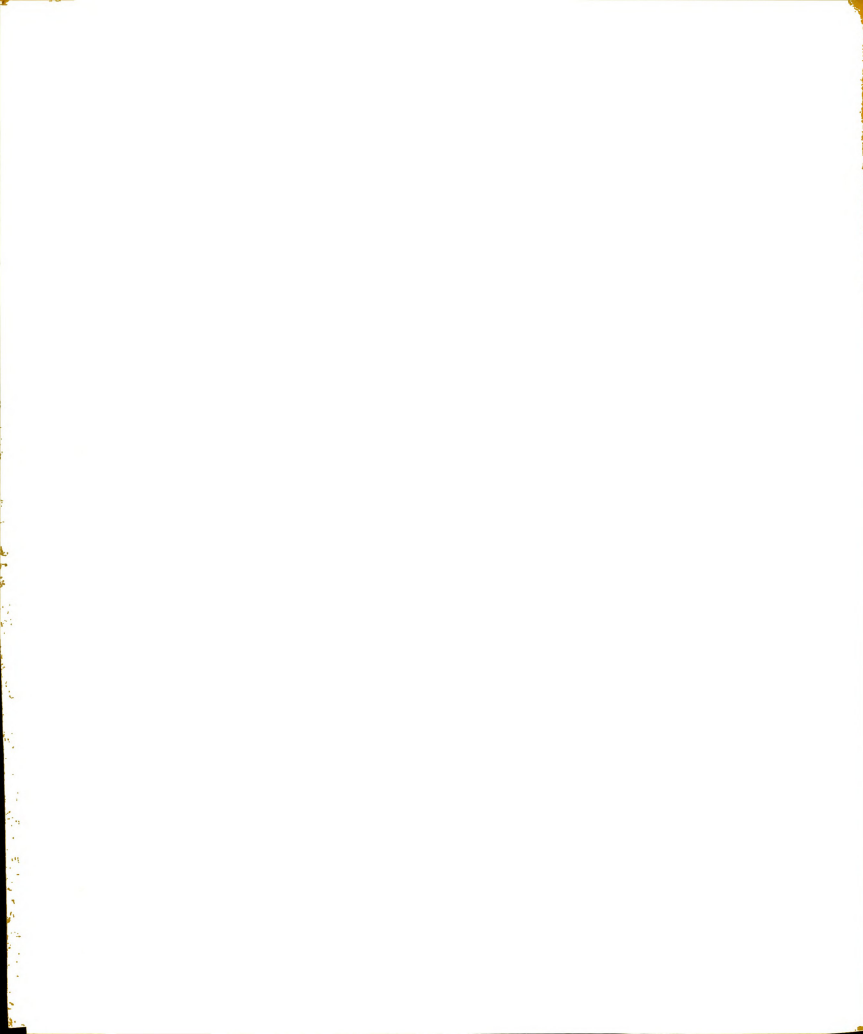
are a cause of tears, temper or laughter in other people. (467)

2. The problem involves the capture of men's minds no less than of their bodies. (1045)

Two verbs which I suspect belong in group A (verbs that do not expand) are owe and own. By its nature owe expresses obligation and as such may be explained as reflecting a moral order. Own expresses an abstract relationship, a connection between persons and things. There is every reason to believe own does not expand because have when it means possess, the equivalent of own, appears in the simple form only. The evidence for judging whether owe is unexpandable is slight; nevertheless, the dictionary definitions of it suggest it would have only constitutional meanings.

1. "If Stephen is a rich man now, he owes it largely to you." (1992)
2. "But I owe it to you." (1989)
3. "I owe everything to my wife--and boy, is she collecting! (1062)
4. I'm waitin' here for the boy to bring over my money...the two hundred and sixty bucks he owes me... (1556)
5. "To hell with him! I own this building." (1990)
6. "Because my girl's uncle owns this building. That's why." (1991)
7. ...and usually they own their own homes and pay no rent. (605)

The verb provide appeared seven times. It has a copula-like quality in the first five sentences; is/are may be substituted. In items six and seven, the expanded form seems idiomatic; if the idea of overt action is added, the expanded form would be



likely.

1. At a time when the Hoover Report is commanding increasing public attention, this book provides a thoughtful and critical consideration of the place of bureaucracy in the American national government. (606)
2. The record of the Negro in health progress, while leaving much to be done, provides an excellent answer to those who challenge the sincerity of our democracy. (854)
3. Buried under two or three feet of solidly packed snow and kept clear by plows, it provides a smooth dust free highway. (997)
4. Americans are beginning to realize that installing more stop signs, etc.... provide no permanent solution. (2024)
5. The resignation and the hopelessness of the Secretary of Interior, counseling us to place our faith in God provide no effective guide for action. (2071)
6. Special treats...are on the schedule for Ellen and Duane arranged by the State Journal which provides the prize trip. (2032)
7. ...and most farm families provide some of their own food... and usually they own their own homes. (605)

The verb require appeared four times. It can expand as in "He's requiring us to speak up" but it probably does so rarely. In the examples in the data, the constitutional meaning is evident in all: prescribed order, inherent characteristic, a logical necessity.

1. One of our four teacher's colleges does not require any course in American history. (855)
2. But on the other hand, it requires absolute attention, as does good conversation. (460)
3. Objectivity requires me, however, to report that those procedures have been praised by many people. (111)
4. The comparison then requires an algebraic equation of the kind familiar to every school child. (1055)



Of those verbs which occurred only once, a few appear to resist expansion. They include constitute, comprise, suit, become (in the sense of suitability). In the sense of "to set up" or "to make up" constitute has a process meaning, but when such a meaning is involved, we tend, I think, to prefer some other verb. Cf. "They are selecting the jury" and "These twelve men constitute the jury." If constituting is substituted for selecting the meaning seems to fluctuate between process and constituent without suggesting either clearly. Comprise is copula-like and expresses little more than equality in the items I have of it. In the citations below, these two verbs can be substituted for each other, and the copula are can be substituted for both. In each citation the verb functions to link the subject to an identifying characteristic; it expresses a logical relationship.

1. Together with the Arco breeder, they constitute a well-rounded reactor development program, thoughtfully balanced between military and civilian needs. (612)
2. Yet the 1612 Penny stores comprise one of the world's most formidable retail organizations. (1020)

The verbs suit and become are synonyms in the contexts in which they occur. The meanings they express shade into logical relationships. The notion of congruency or harmony between things is expressed in these items; such relationships have only intensional meaning.

1. "Well it [the speaker's name] suits this kind of country". (1998)
2. "Fine! Ambition becomes an ensign." (314)



Several verbs represented by a single citation appear idiomatic when expanded. Sentences employing the expanded form are easily constructed for check, cover, exceed, imply, occur, favor, forbid, proceed, tire: He is checking his baggage / Every net-work is covering the coronation / You are implying that Ann Vickers is a better book than Babbitt / Be careful! You are exceeding the speed limit / Accidents are occurring on that corner too often / The referee is favoring the opposition / I am not asking you; I am forbidding you / They are proceeding as if nothing had happened. In the contexts in which these verbs appear in my citations, however, they have constitutional meanings: conformity to a pattern (item 1), an established order abstractly considered (item 2), a quantitative notion abstractly considered (item 3), subject linked to its characteristic (item 4), etc.

1. "Look at it! It checks!" (1955)
2. Today the world-wide network of news sources covers every major spot on the globe. (2064)
3. Today the number exceeds 2.5 million. (2110)
4. The title implies Ann Vickers is the most carefully drawn of all the women in his novels. (84)
5. It occurs chiefly in water from deep wells. (1048)
6. That favors the Republicans. (2111)
7. ...but tradition forbids doing it to one of our fellow citizens when he is engaged in controversy. (110)
8. The consultation proceeds as usual. (842)
9. "I tire so quickly and often for no apparent reason." (1589)

With the exception of some of the citations of continue, the constitution-of-things meaning explains adequately the



simple form in the semantically unrelated group. As is to be expected, this meaning is more obvious in some instances than in others. These verbs also refer to the non-overt so that we might, if we choose, as Hatcher does, explain the simple form on the basis of the contrast non-overt vs. overt.

3. The adjectival group. The question of the adjectival nature of the -ing form is discussed in Chapter 1, p. 1. The verbs in these items tend to become adjectives in the expanded form unless they are followed by a direct object. Used without a complement, or with to, the adjectival nature is dominant. With the possible exception of surprise, the verbs in these items suggest a constitutional interpretation. As it is used here, surprise involves interpretation; that is, abstracting the intensional meaning from what is in extension and as such is far removed from the physical act of surprising, as in ambush.

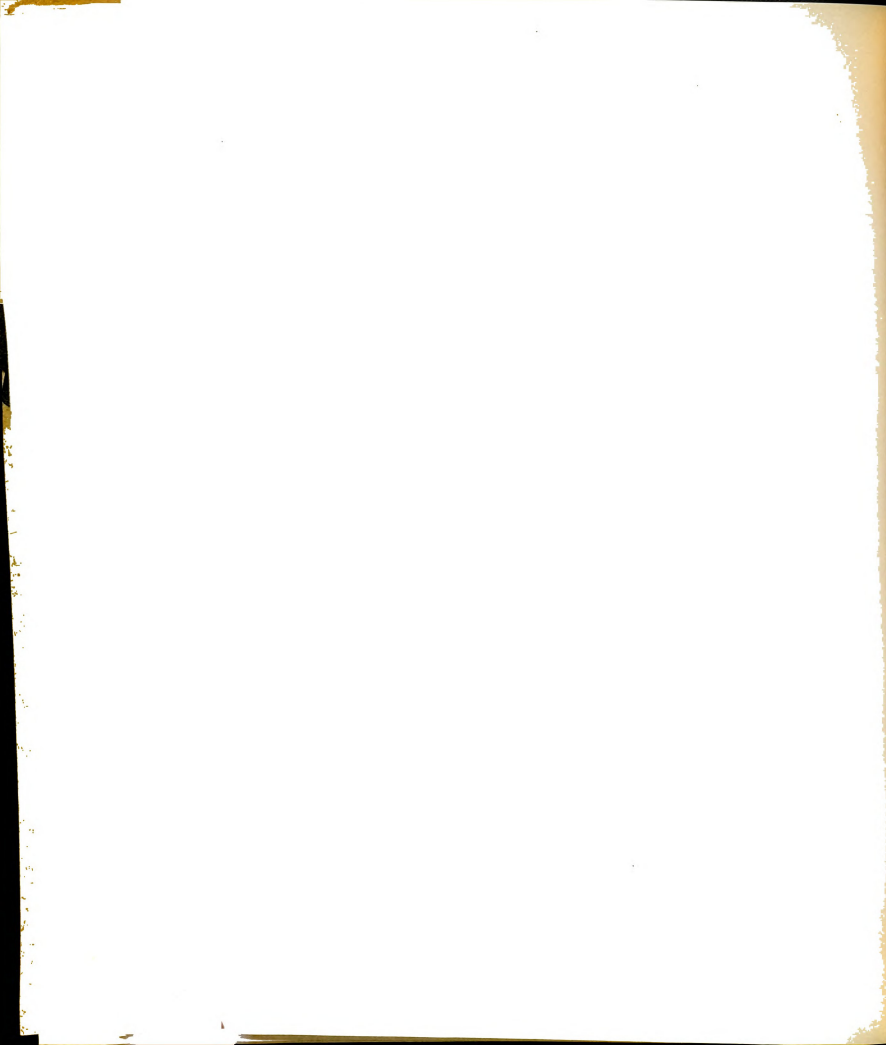
1. What interests European business men and officials about President Truman's tariff on garlic, admittedly a minor question, is this: (2113)
2. But the important questions should not, even in this atomic age, be settled at first sight. And second sight provokes second thoughts. (464)
3. I would not seek your nomination for the Presidency because the burdens of that office stagger the imagination. (2117)
4. "You surprise me," Mr. McWardle said. (1206)
5. Gus shook his head at him. "Flessy," he said, "you surprise me." (1385)
6. "By God, if that's true, he deserves that licking McComber says it's my duty to give him!" (1958)
7. Any mental activity they carry out by means of such words hardly deserves the name of thinking. (2066)



8. "These men are no underdogs, sir. They deserve to get slugged."

C. Verbs which are rare in the expanded form. A group of fifteen verbs are represented by both forms in the data but are more frequent in the simple form. Seven of the verbs appear eight or more times in the simple form and only one to five times in the expanded form. The remainder occur infrequently in both forms, but, since they are (in meaning) more like those which never expand than those which expand freely, it is safe to assume they are relatively infrequent in the expanded form. The tabulation shows the verbs and the frequency of occurrence in each form.

<u>Verb</u>	<u>No. of simple forms</u>	<u>No. of expanded forms</u>
consider	3	1
cost	3	1
expect	5	2
feel	24	5
figure	5	1
hear	7	1
hope	14	1
intend	4	1
need	17	1
remember	9	2
show	4	2
suggest	3	2
see	16	3
understand	8	1
wish	10	1



An analysis of each of these items leads to the conclusion that the simple form of all but three of the verbs, hope, suggest, wish, means, in most of its environments, FACT-OF-PROCESS (i.e. constitution of things or indifference to time). Fact-of-Process in the constitutional sense is apparent in: consider, denoting an essential attitude approaching the habitual; cost, denoting an essential relationship; expect, denoting the logical; feel, denoting insight; hear, denoting reflex action; need, denoting a concomitant of causality; see denoting reflex action, logical conclusion, insight; understand, denoting ability or insight. Fact-Of-Process in the sense of indifference to time is most evident in: feel as a copula and as a statement of attitude or state without implying rigidity; figure, as a statement of point of view or deduction without implying rigidity; hear in the meaning "to be informed of." Verbs which provided no clear basis for classification were: hope, wish, suggest. They denote non-overt actions to which the expanded form adds the notion of greater involvement of the subject.

The features common to all but two of the expanded forms, need and remember, were emphasis on the temporal notion, either orientation to a possible cessation only or in combination with the notion of concurrent time; and (a) activity having some extensional features, or (b) development by degrees, or (c) a combination of overtness and development by degrees. The two exceptions were representative of the characterizing function (Chapter 3, p. 70). The contrast which appears most nearly to encompass all the varying degrees of difference between the two



forms is the contrast between intensional and extensional meaning; the intensional is indifferent to time, to overtness; the extensional presupposes verifiability in time. Analysis based on the citations containing each verb, grouped according to verbs, is appended.

Item Analysis

To Consider

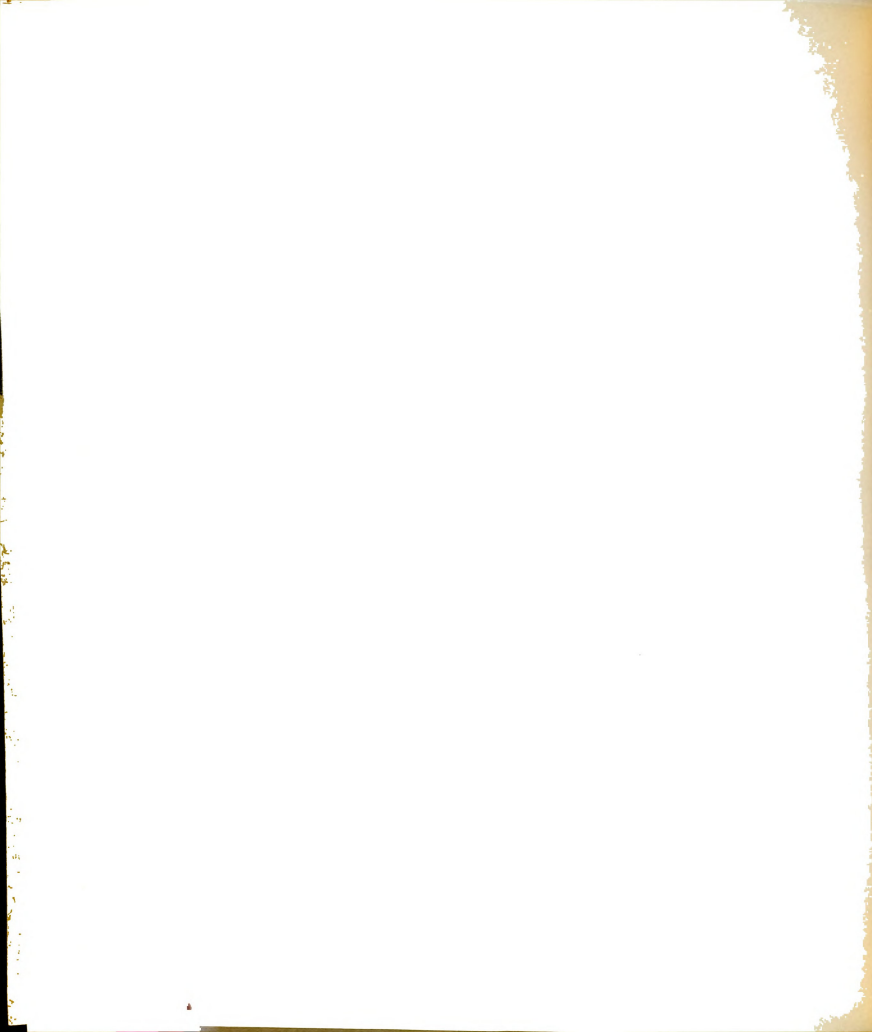
The difference in meaning expressed by the two verb forms is the difference between opinion and process of deliberation-- between non-overt, non-developing state or action, vs. non-overt developing-by-degrees action; indifference to time vs. orientation to a possible cessation.

The simple form

1. So universal has the fame of the prairie philosopher-President become that whenever the protagonist of a controversial issue can support his views with a pointed saying of Lincoln's, he considers his case just about clinched. (478)
2. But nothing in the move to the East seems to threaten the company's decentralization, which top management considers unique and unbeatable and which the company officers have absorbed over all of their working lives. (1023)
3. By the way, I think we'll get rid of Pearl Robbins; she's been useful but now she considers herself indispensable. (81)

The expanded form

4. "Have you ever written anything about that?"
 "Off and on."
 "Any definitive work, I mean?"
 "I'm considering doing that right now." (1744)



To Cost

The primary contrast is non-overt, non-developing vs. non-overt, developing-by-degrees. The indifference to time vs. possible cessation is also a difference between the two forms.

The simple form

1. "Would you like to hear a song, Mister? It costs two pennies." (843)
2. "Yeah? Well there it [money] is---most of it, except what it costs to get to New York." (1954)
3. And they [glass curtains] cost about the same as the finest cotton curtains. (844)

The expanded form

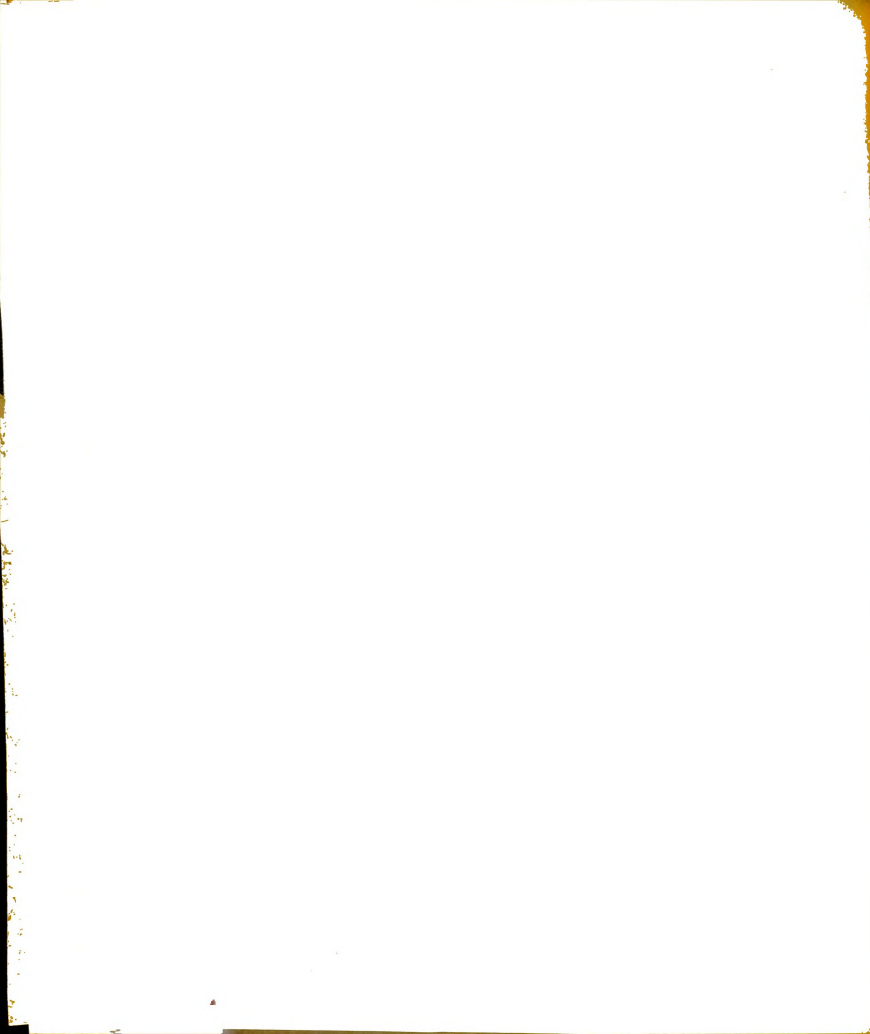
4. "Look here, Mister Man," I says to myself, "your faith and loyalty to Rotary may be a fine thing, and all that, but it's just costing you the fellowship of your own son." (1266)

To Expect

Excepting item 5 below, each simple-form item is followed by an infinitive or a clause, indicating purely mental (non-overt) activity. Item 5 is similar to items 6 and 7, in which the expanded form is followed by an object. A comparison of these three items suggests the contrast between waiting in real time (6 and 7) and the turning away from time which is usual in generalizations (5).

The simple form

1. ...more producers are making more pictures and expect to be raking in more and more profits with them. (709)
2. Anyone hearing us expects to find that by looking in the same direction, he will experience a similar event in his nervous system--- (2067)



3. "Oh, it's in the yard?"
 "No, no. It's at sea."
 "Well, then, how do you expect to get to it on a sooter?"
 (318)
4. "I expect you don't remember me. It's been three years since I left Watertown." (1374)
5. The people of the North expect the Alaska Highway to bring them a permanent economic boom some day. (1019)

The expanded form

6. "Is Mrs. Whitaker expecting you?" the attendant asked. (807)
7. "Is this the right road?" he asked.
 "Straight ahead to the traffic light," said the cop. "They're expecting you, Doctor Mellhorn. Shall I give you an escort?"
 (737)

To Feel

The simple-form items fall into three groups: (a) those in which the verb approaches the meaning of seem or be and is followed by an adjective, like (as if) clause, or a prepositional phrase for which thus can be substituted; (b) those in which the verb has a semantic value akin to believe, know, or think and is followed by a direct object, a noun or a that clause; (c) those for which no synonym readily suggests itself for the verb and the verb is followed by an adjective or about. The five expanded forms, in contrast to the simple forms, all contain the developing-by-degrees notion as in recuperating from illness.

The simple form

Group (a)

1. "It may not be patriotic of me, and I feel sorry for Martinsville." (738)
2. You feel like you are pampering a spoiled child. (2027)



3. It's a handsome offer but I just don't feel up to accepting it." (740)

(See also items 112, 1303, 1381.)

Group (b)

4. In general, he allows for no deviations, variations, or other possible explanations, and he feels no uncertainty about anything. (470)
5. "Dear Mr. Whiteside, may I show you a few mementos of the past? I somehow feel that you would love them as I do." (1961)
6. The worst of it is. I now feel your mother would have stood by me and lived modestly if I'd really insisted. (319)

(See also items 320, 1962, 469, 1369, 468.)

Group (c)

7. "Naturally, I can't blame you, if that's the way you feel about it." (1379)
8. This is how I feel about Dwight Eisenhower. (1059)
9. "Ah, this is a great coke. I feel good." (321)
10. "I feel lucky today." (1965)

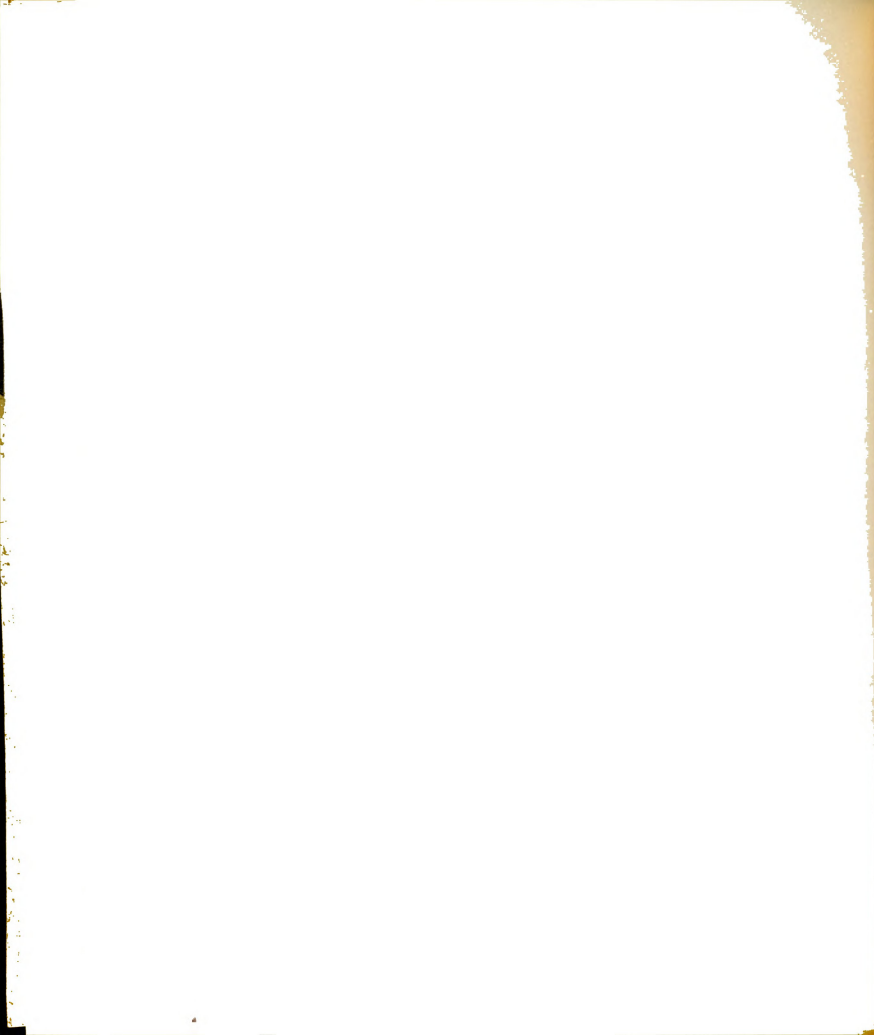
(See also items 1060, 1373, 1380, 1378, 2020.)

The expanded form

11. "What's the matter, Tony? Ain't you feeling good?" (1963)
12. "Oh, hello, Vinnie. How're you feeling today?" (1964)
13. "You are feeling sufficiently well, Professor Malzius?" (739)
14. "Oh, that! Well, I'm not feeling so good lately." (2007)
15. "I'm feeling my age this summer for the first time. I am sixty, you know." (1305)

To Figure

This verb is like consider. In the simple form it refers to opinion, i.e. a conclusion rather than a process. The item con-



taining the expanded form represents what Jespersen⁵ calls the "dramatic present", the speaker is acting out an imaginary scene as a demonstration of his ability to act. Accompanied by pantomime the action has extensional features. The primary contrast is non-overtness vs. overtness.

The simple form

1. I figure now that it could not have been many seasons before Hammie returned to the Eastern seaboard from the vulgar briberies of Buffalo. (471)
2. Democrats figure they have an equally simple formula. (2112)
3. "You figure your candidate Willie has any vitamins?" (30)
4. "That's what I figure." (439)
5. "I figure," he said, "that they'll come to me anyway, so first I'll go to them." (440)

The expanded form

6. "Now I'm standing on the corner of Third and Market. I'm looking around. I'm figuring it out." (1755)

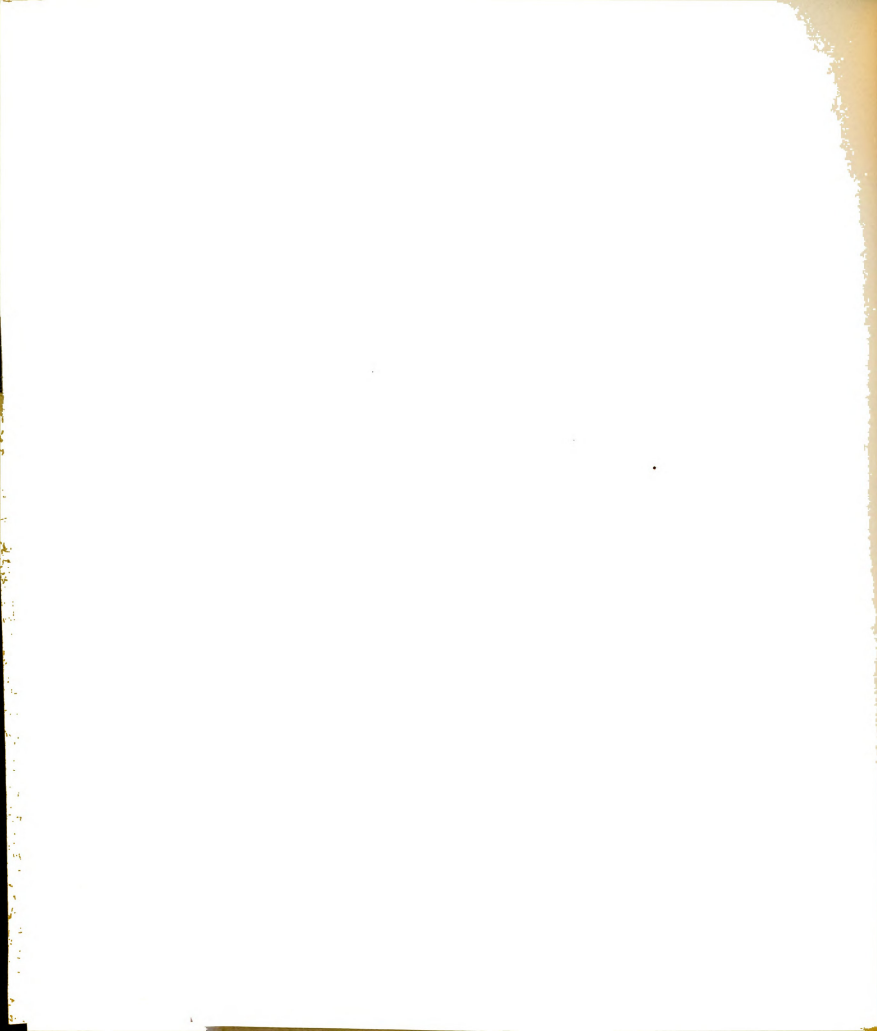
To Hear

To hear represents the non-overt, usually the non-developing; hence it is most frequent in the simple form. Where overtness or present occurrence are being emphasized, it is possible to use the expanded form. In the one example I have of it in the expanded form it is equivalent to is listening to.

The simple form

1. "We hear you're getting married." (1971)

⁵ O. Jespersen, A Modern English Grammar (Heidelberg: Carl Winters Universitäts buchhandlung, 1931), IV, p. 19.



2. "You hear dat, Joe? Any is askin' you for to stay." (1627)
 3. "But please, Willie, don't say such things---he hears." (324)
- (See also items 323, 325, 1364, 1972.)

The expanded form

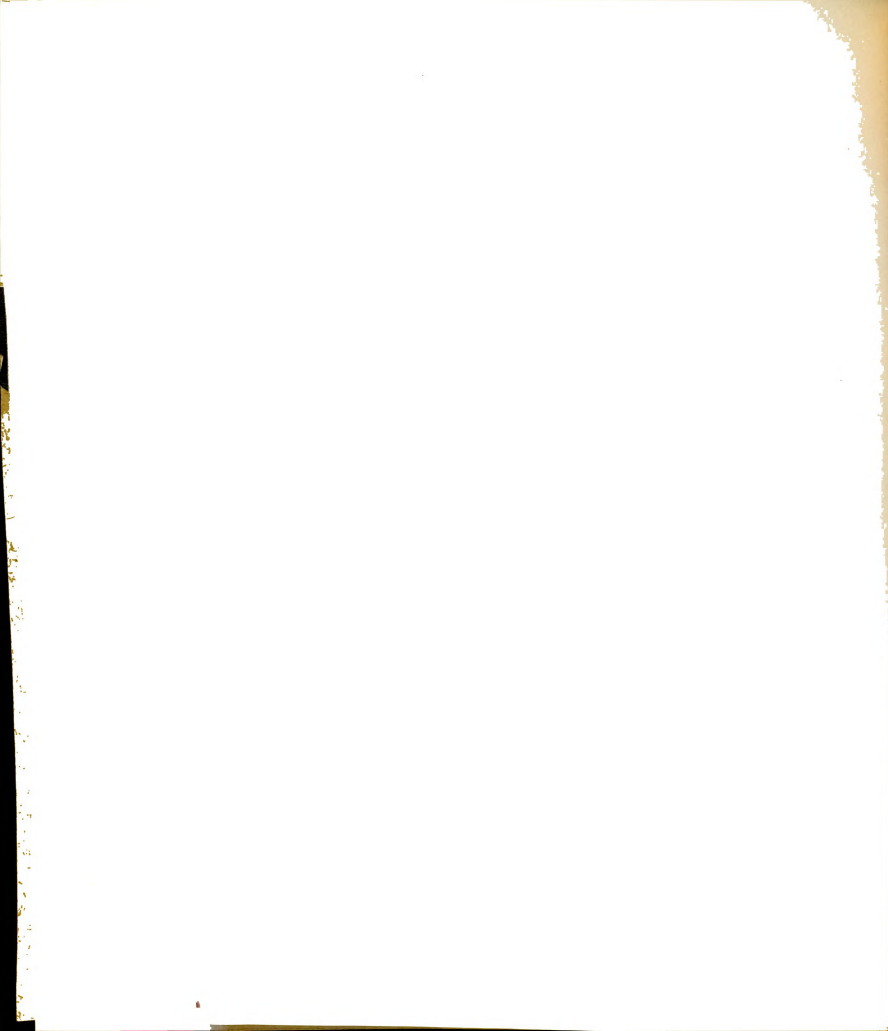
4. "Mom's hearing that." [That refers to the father talking irrationally to himself.] (381)

To Hope

This verb is problematical. In approximately a third of the simple-form items, the expanded form can be substituted without causing any appreciable change in meaning, and in the one item in which the expanded form occurs, the simple form may be substituted without any appreciable loss of meaning. The best explanation of the contrast between the two forms seems to be non-involvement vs. involvement of the subject. If one asks "What is the subject doing?" the simple-form items do not appear to be idiomatic explanations; whereas, the same items, using the expanded form appear to be. With this verb it is illogical to think of the subject as not involved, but it seems logical to recognize varying degrees of involvement. With the expanded form, the verb, which is neither clearly an action nor clearly a verb denoting state, acquires enough intensity in the expanded form to suggest the subject is engrossed in activity.

The simple form

1. "I hope I can be of some service." (1532)
2. "I hone every little tummy is a-flutter with gastric juices." (1974)
3. "But I hope you're joking Clif." (51)



4. "She can still visit me here. I hope you will too." (328)

(See also items 326, 327, 329, 330, 331, 780, 1784, 1896, 1366, 1977, 1979.)

The expanded form

5. "That's why he came out on top of his class. I'm hoping before you leave New Haven they'll find time to teach you reading is a good habit." (1930)

To Intend

Intend stands before an infinitive in all five citations and is semantically close to to be + going + to. Perhaps this explains why there is no appreciable difference in meaning if one form is substituted for the other in these items. Occurrence of it in the expanded form is, however, rare.

The simple form

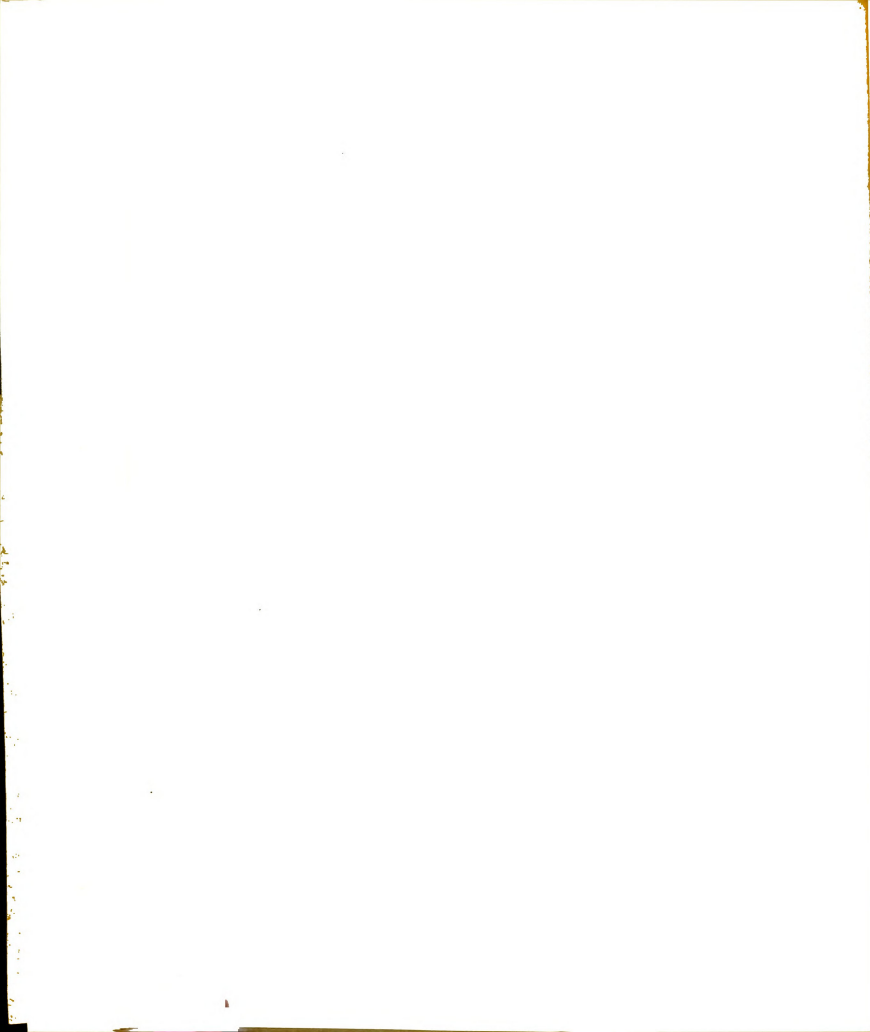
1. "That's exactly what I intend to do, and don't kid yourselves about that!" (332)
2. "...but it [the army] has few inducements to offer them unless they intend to make a career in the service. (609)
3. "I don't intend to profiteer on an unfortunate and I'm not going to risk my kids on a cut-rate job." (698)
4. "If these people intend to have their friends using the front door---" (1981)

The expanded form

5. His very expression of preference for a Republican Congress after the next election is evidence that he is not intending to try to break down the two-party system. (379)

To Need

Like most of the verbs we have examined, need denotes nothing we can point to in extension. It represents rather a



necessity inhering in circumstances and as such suggests the constitutional. Very likely it is rare in the expanded form. In the citation I have of the expanded form, it is modified by always, which functions to neutralize the temporal meaning of the expanded form but does not neutralize the activity meaning; consequently, the subject is represented as if engaged in an activity which in turn reflects a characteristic. The one citation illustrates adequately, I believe, the use of both forms. Other illustrations of the simple form may, however, be found in Appendix I. (See items 77, 335, 741, 743, 744, 745, 1013, 1014, 1042, 1173, 1672, 1987, 1988, 2069, 2114.)

"Ferguson needs more amalgam," said Doc Melhorna.
 "And that last batch wasn't standard. I wouldn't use it on a dog."

"He's always needing more amalgam!" said the inspector bitterly. "By the way, my wife tells me I need a little work done myself---but we won't go into that." (742)

To Remember

Remember normally denotes non-overt, non-developing mental action. Of the two citations of it in the expanded form, one contains the adverb always and the verb functions to denote a characterizing action; in the other, the expanded form adds the meaning "resolution to remember" and emphasizes the notion of involvement of the subject.

The simple form

1. "You remember Mike, don't you?" (1174)
2. "You were out for a week-end. Maybe you don't remember it." (746)



3. After college we must have been separated for a time because I distinctly remember that Hammie's announcement of his first job came in a letter from Buffalo. (459)

(See items 344, 602, 780, 782 for further illustration of the simple form.)

The expanded form

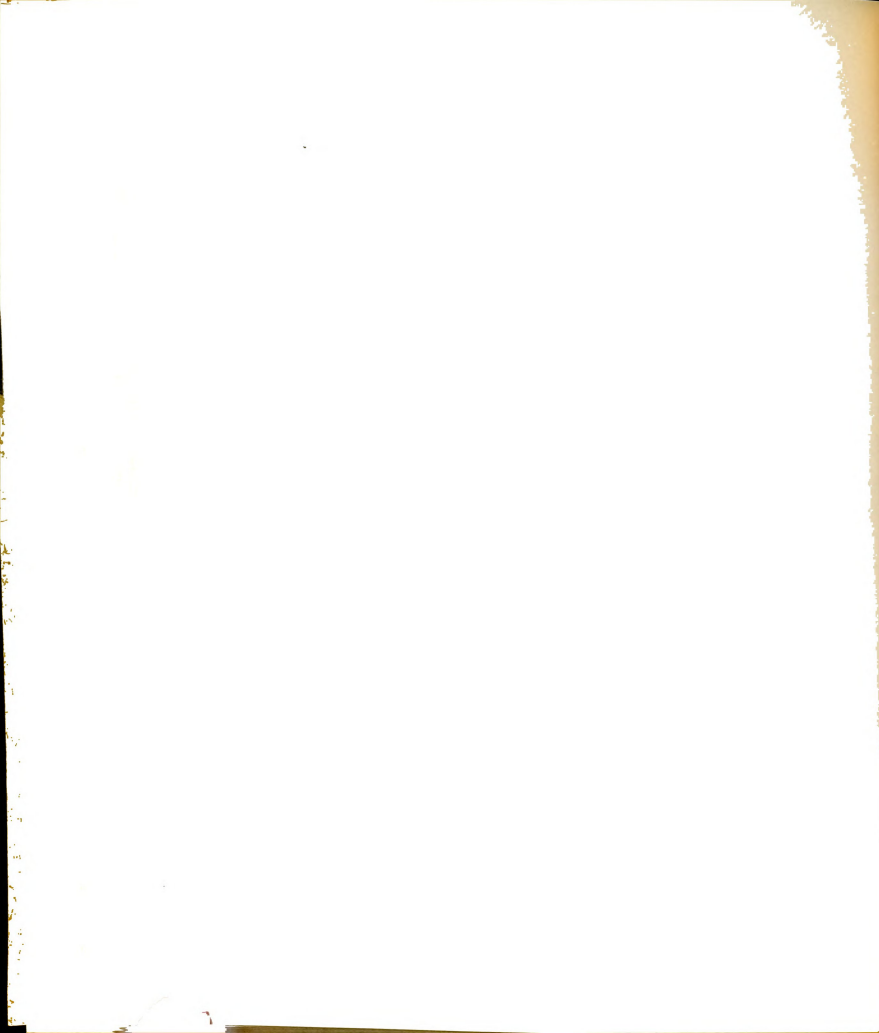
4. "Did he die? You're always remembering about people dying." (1997)
5. "What do I care what you believe? I do the dirty work and then----" "I'm remembering that. I'm remembering that, Leo." (1996)

To Show

The two expanded forms of this verb denote the overt as do two of the simple forms (items 3 and 4). These two simple forms suggest that the expanded form might be likely if the reference were to a single occurrence rather than to the characteristic or the customary. Those which denote the non-overt, non-developing action (items 1 and 2) are not replaceable with the expanded form. The basic contrast appears to be the non-overt, non-developing vs. the overt.

The simple form

1. A number of studies show that a keen appreciation of wit and a lively sense of humor tend to go hand-in-hand with intelligence. (940)
2. In a democratic legislature, shared power shows itself in a strong opposition. (2044)
3. "We show our competitors through the plant any old day." (1101)
4. At least the surface of Mars shows a seasonal change such as we might well imagine the forest clad earth would show to an outside looker. (2053)



The expanded form

5. Pardon, your slip is showing. (1032)
6. "Of course I'm showing off." (1642)

To Suggest

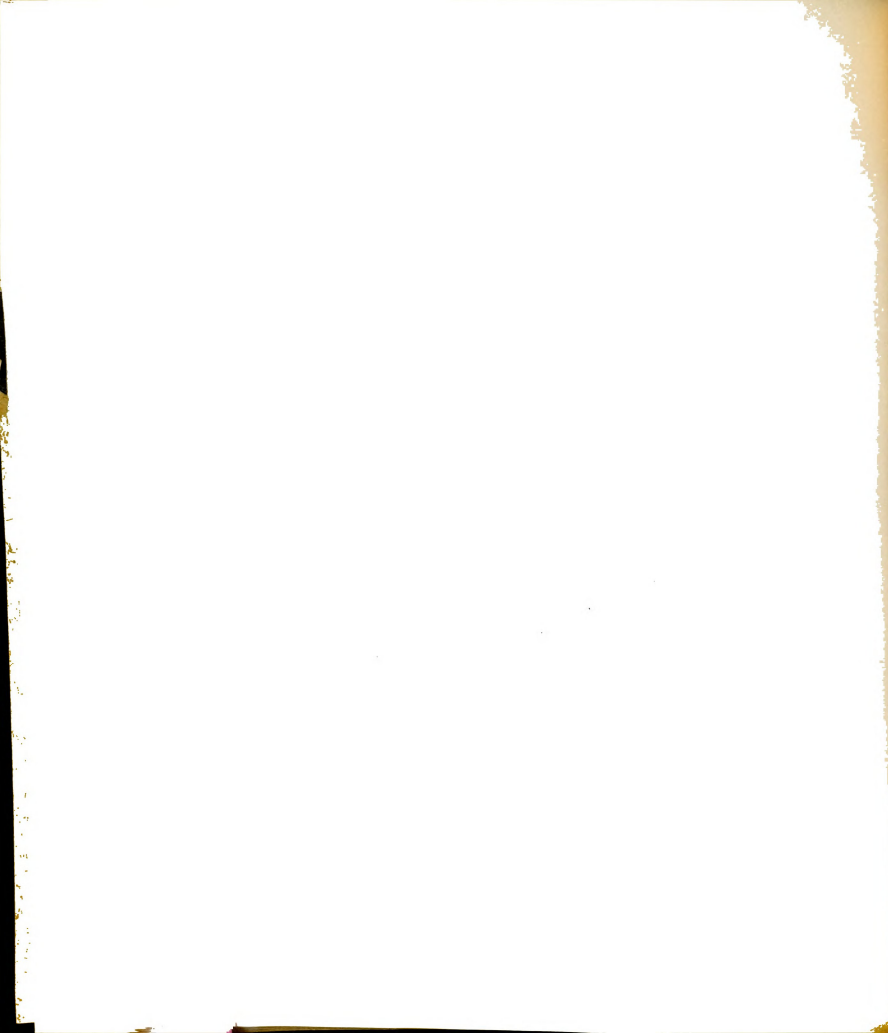
As native speakers of the language, we would expect this verb to be more common in the simple form, although the data provide no substantiating evidence for such an assumption. We noted in Chapter 3, (p. 54) that the constitution-of-things meaning did not adequately explain this verb in the temporal category action taking place now. In my data the two items in the simple form fit no temporal category; there is the usual turning away or vagueness about time; the verb has no process meaning. In the two examples showing the expanded form the action is in progress and the meaning development-by-degrees is obvious.

The simple form

1. Surveys suggest, incidentally, that when a racy story is recounted in mixed company the men show a greater tendency to become embarrassed than the women do! (922)
2. In general, the connotations of words suggest approval, disapproval or neutrality. (2050)
3. Sheen suggests that among bishops the habit isn't confined to Catholics and that among Catholics it is not confined to bishops. (456)

The expanded form

4. "I'm not suggesting a thing," Queeg said with a sly grin.
"I'm stating plain facts that everybody knew who had eyes to see." (347)



To See

Whether this verb denotes the physical (sight) or the mental (insight), it has a constitutional meaning. It is static, denoting the non-overt, non-developing. Two of the three expanded forms denote development by degrees (watching) and the overt (interviewing). Possibly the third (item 6) suggests development-by-degrees; it seems to emphasize a present occurrence.

The simple form

1. "Come on. I see daylight down at the other end." (350)
2. "I see! My mistake!" (441)
3. Now as I lean back to think about my friend, I see scenes of little importance lightly and pleasantly studding my life. (453)

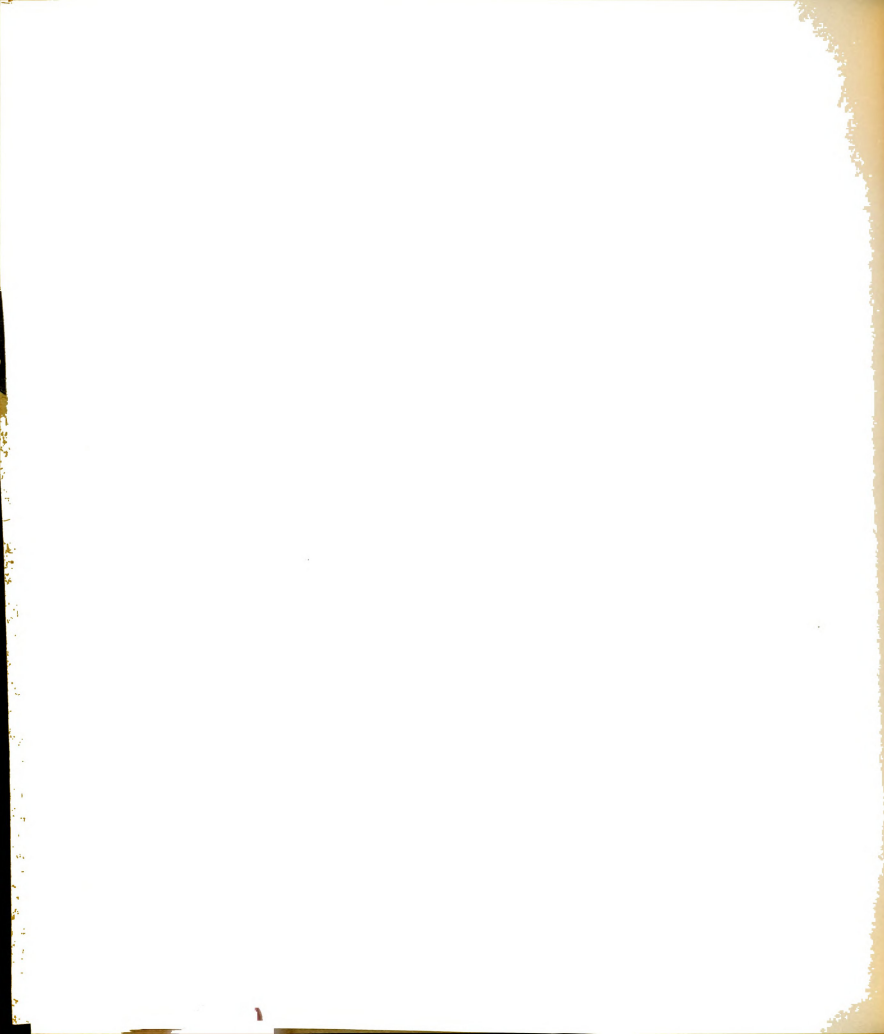
(See also items 86, 454, 455, 782, 809, 998, 1119, 1343, 1382, 2004, 2116 in Appendix I.)

The expanded form

4. You see this at the same time that you are seeing the offensive pattern unfold. (1205)
5. "I'm sorry---Mr. Whiteside is seeing no one." (2003)
6. "Am I seeing things?" said Willie when the cab pulled up in front of the Grotto Club. (349)

To Understand

Semantically, this verb is closely related to know and suggests an achieved state rather than the process of achieving. In the simple form it has the usual characteristics: non-overtness, non-development, indifference to time. The one example of it in the expanded form is structurally ambiguous because a period follows. If the period is removed so that the



why-clause as direct object follows without interruption, there is no ambiguity. The context suggests the expanded form is used here because of an attempt to suggest the process of achieving.

The simple form

1. "And auntie's your friend who understands." (599)
2. "Great," said Willie. "We understand each other." (352)
3. "I understand you had five months in communication school. (305)

(See also items 452, 748, 1404, Appendix I.)

The expanded form

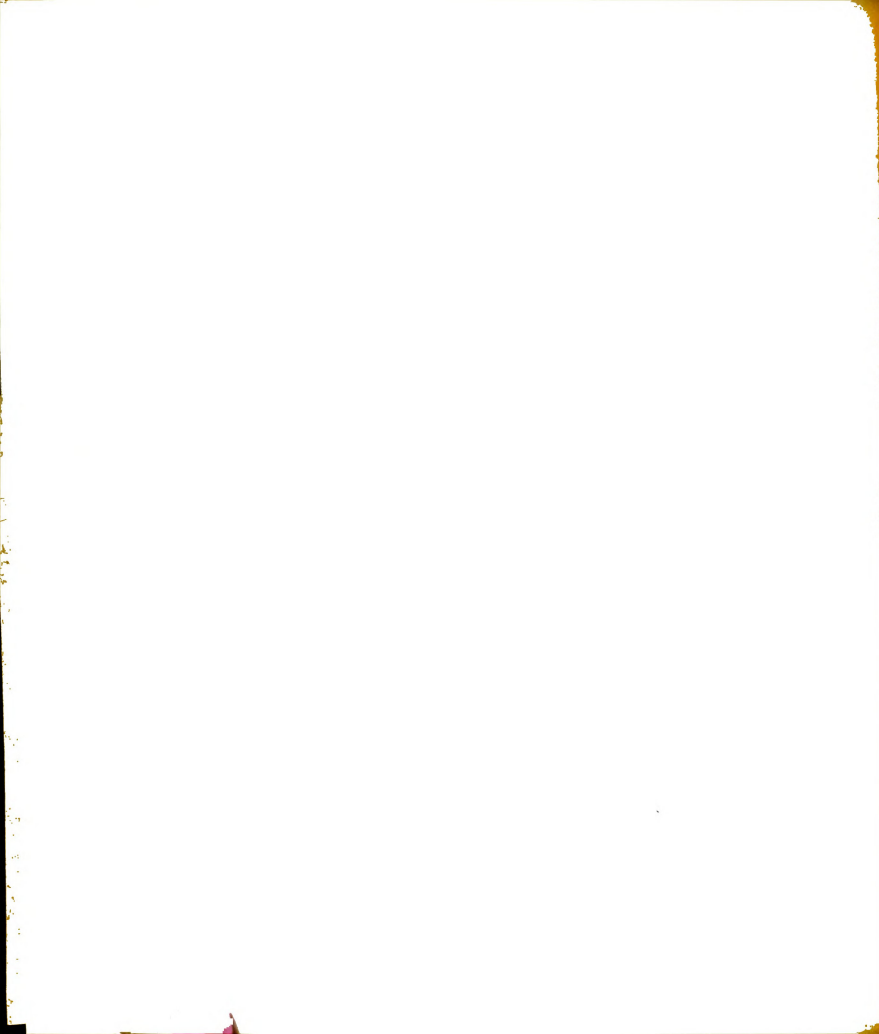
4. "Ever since you came here as a tiny tot with no mother and daddy, I've known some day I'd have to tell you that you were different from other people. Now you're understanding. Why nobody comes here. Why I have a high safe wall. . . (598)

To Wish

Only one example of the expanded form occurs; it is in a context in which the simple form also occurs:

"I wish," he said, "that the attache had never dreamed up this gold-plated chase. The Pentagon puts a great deal more faith in Intelligence sometimes than the traffic will bear. And while I'm wishing, I wish I hadn't brought you along." (1223)

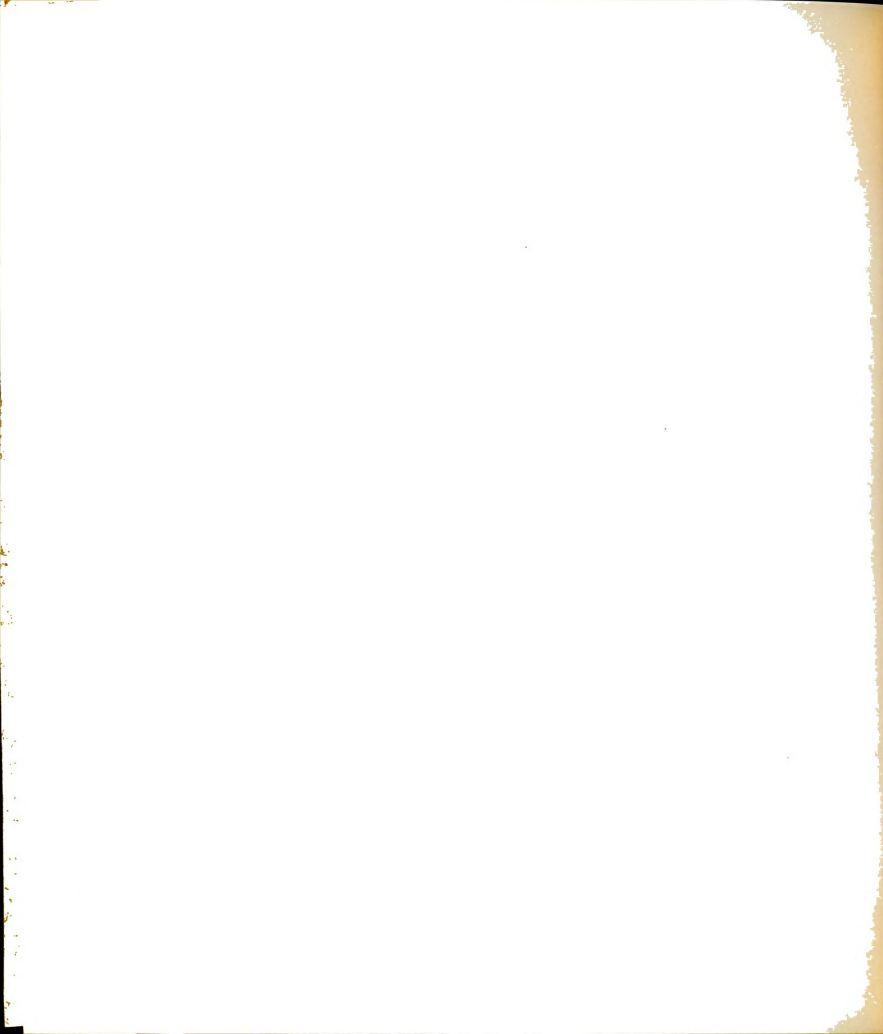
The extent-of-time notion indicated by while is apparently compatible with the expanded form since the form, as in this instance, occurs frequently in while clauses. In this item the expanded form means occurrence in real (present) time. Since it is not followed by an object clause, as both simple forms are, it is accompanied by a notion of incompleteness suggesting action in progress. In the simple form, the verb seems to represent a



state of desire, rather than action, but becomes an act of expressing desire in the expanded form. Desire varies in intensity and doubtlessly the expanded form is used to express a more intense degree; at least the fact that to yearn for and to long for, semantically stronger expressions of the same notion, take the expanded form would suggest such an explanation. The formula involvement vs. non-involvement is applicable to this item, although, as with verbs such as love, hate, etc., it is semantically at variance with the notion of non-involvement.

As with hope, the expanded form of wish is infrequent. Of the eight remaining simple forms in my data, the verb is followed by a noun clause in four items: 810, 2005, 2006, 2124; by a noun as direct object in two items: 23, 1004; by an infinitive in one: 727; and occurs in an if clause in one: 994. In all these items, the verb has the same static quality it has in the simple forms of the citation above.

Of the fifteen different verbs examined in group C (verbs which are rare in the expanded form), those in the simple form denoted non-overt, non-developing action or state; those in the expanded form denoted a single present occurrence usually with the non-overt, developing-by-degrees meaning, but occasionally suggesting overt action. In the simple form the verbs could likewise be explained as Fact-Of-Process (constitution-of-things or indifference to time).



II

The Expanded Form

A. To Be + Going + To + Infinitive. As we have seen, six verbs in the data have no counterpart in the expanded form (p. 75). Only one verb, and that in a specialized sense, has an expanded form with no counterpart in the simple form. When the idea of motion is lacking, an expanded form, without counterpart in the simple form, occurs in the formula to be + going + to + infinitive. This verbal phrase is not formally distinct from the verb of motion which has an alternate in the simple form both when it is and is not followed by an infinitive. Compare:

1. He goes to Africa. He takes What are you going to Nova
pictures. (1233) Scotia for? (1666)
2. It isn't every day he goes He's going to get the car.
to fight a war. (295)

When the idea of motion is lost, however, other ideas take over and make the form, in effect, an auxiliary verb.

One may hazard a guess about how to be going to came to be used as an auxiliary verb. Of the verbs of motion, to go has the most general meaning. Verbs such as walk and ride designate something of the manner; come restricts the motion toward a place; go has no such restriction. This lack of restriction in meaning may explain the ease with which go has developed into an auxiliary; its non-specific-meaning, as it were, would lend itself to the abolition of specific meaning. An extent of time is implicit in motion verbs like to go; going requires time. The "action in progress" indicated by the expanded form likewise pre-supposes an extent of time which can include future time.



Thus an implication of the expanded form is compatible with an implication of the verb; the two implications may thus have "selected" future time as a meaning of go in the expanded form. Since going is usually motivated by a purpose, the purpose may out-rank the going in importance. When the achievement of purpose is paramount, go may lose its idea of physical movement entirely. The idea of purpose or intent remains and in expressing this idea, is (are) going to functions as a modal auxiliary.

An evolution at least approximating what has been sketched here is suggested by current usage. The following bit of dialogue shows to go used simply as a verb of physical motion as well as in its transition from a verb denoting real action to an auxiliary verb since it is followed by an infinitive and the idea of purpose is present.

"You aren't going out, sir?" he asked. "If there's anything I can do---"

"I'm going up and take a look at that sunken road." (1119)

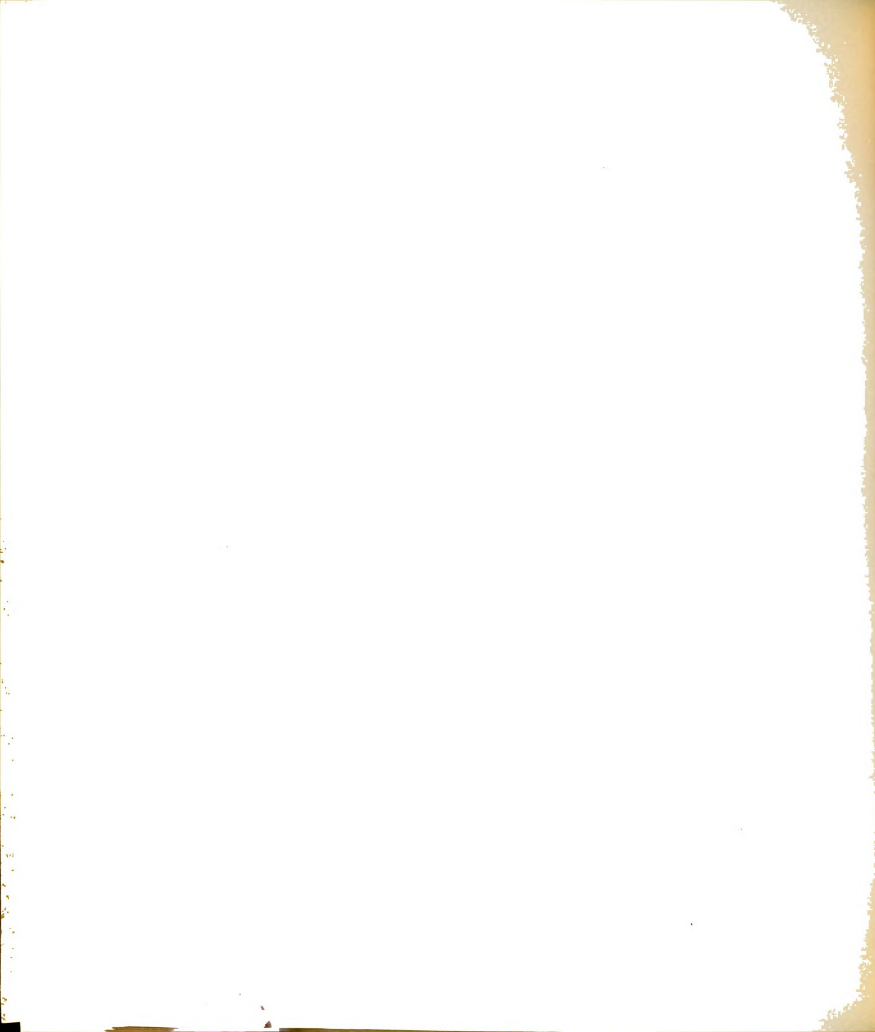
In this item, physical action is in progress, but, clearly, the idea of purpose as well as future time is present in and take. In the following, the idea of motion has been lost; one does not go to need nor go to sit where one is:

...but General Motors is going to need a new president in a few years, and it is certainly going to need new production men. (897)

"I'm going to sit here and wait until you go in and get something to eat for yourself." (1276)

Here futurity is expressed; shall (will) may be substituted for is going to. The idea expressed by is going to is repeated in a standard future form in the following:

"It's going to be like that--it's always been that way, and it'll keep on being like that." (31)



Varying shades, ranging from a fairly weak to a very strong degree of modality are evident in the following items:

She looked at him. "I'm going to take your temperature when I get you home." (1280)

"Now that's the beginning of the story. I am not going to take up the whole book because we have to throw this [discussion] back and forth." (707)

"My mind's made up, all right," she said. "And you're not going to do it." (1273)

"Believe me, if I ever have any kids, they're going to behave!" (1464)

The formula to + be + going + to + infinitive occurs very frequently and as a modal auxiliary it has no counterpart in the simple form.

B. Verbs frequent in the expanded form but infrequent in the simple form. Three verbs were conspicuously more common in the data in the expanded form than in the simple form. Their relative frequency may be seen from the following:

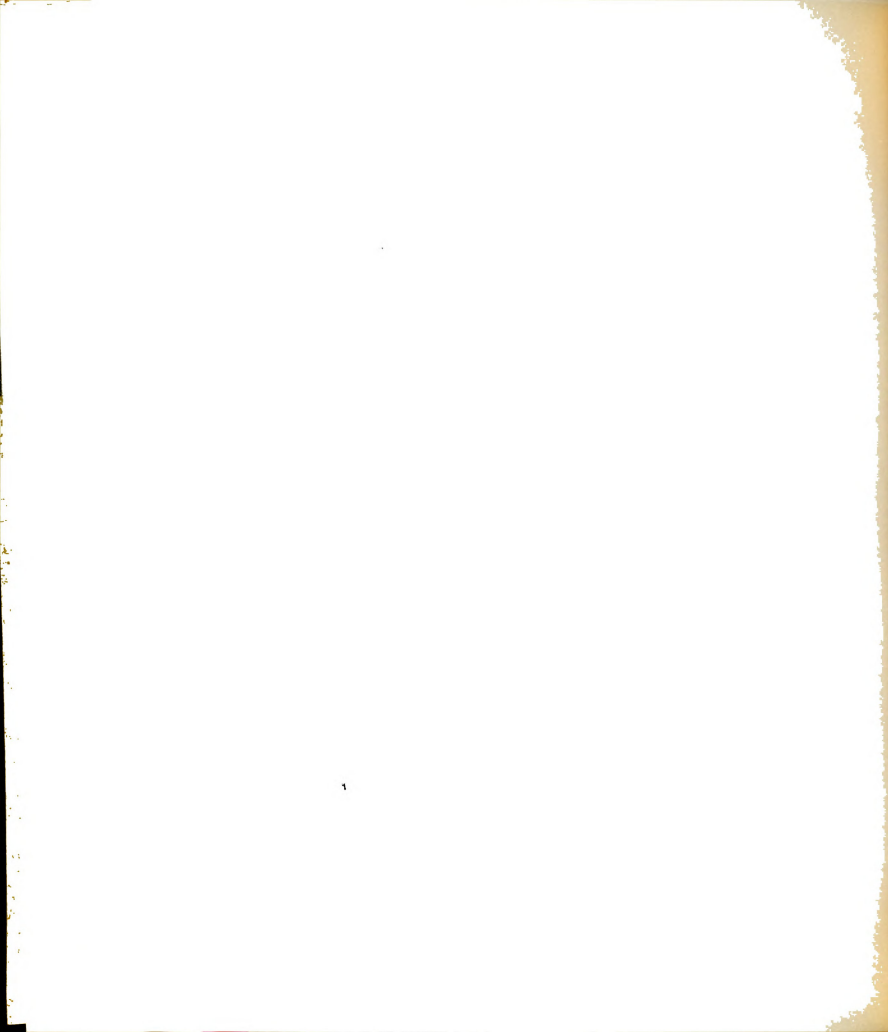
<u>Verb</u>	<u>-Number of occurrences in Simple Form</u>	<u>-in Expanded Form</u>
begin	2	15
talk	4	21
try	2	24

To talk is different from begin and try in that it does not stand before an infinitive. It stands most commonly before a preposition, usually about. Out of twenty-four items it is followed by a preposition thirteen times. In my data, the two forms appear in identical structural patterns. Compare:

1. "They talk about it in the A and P." (1258) "He's talking about your job on the Caine, Willie." (158)
2. "You talk as if you were an old woman, dear." (1560) "Mr. Newman you're talking like this never happened before." (407)



Of the four simple forms of talk, two are generalizations: "They talk about it in the A and P." (1258) and "You always talk like that when I'm having a nice time." (1694). Two are to be construed as referring to a single occasion: "You talk as if you were an old woman, dear" (1560) and "You talk like a horse-trainer." (1559). In the single-event presents, the speaker turns away from time; that is, the speaker is not so much interested in the activity of talk as he is in characterizing the subject (you) by means of the talk. The speaker's interest has shifted from the action to the subject; the simple form has a Fact-of-Process meaning. In "Mr. Newman--you are talking like this never happened before" (407), the interest remains in the content of the talk, the developing action, and we anticipate that the conversation will be pursued further. Conclusiveness vs. inconclusiveness with respect to the action appears to be a contrast. Out of context, there is no way of determining whether "You talk like a horse-trainer" is limited in its application to a single occasion or whether it is intended as an observation about an inherent trait. We feel certain that out of context "You are talking nonsense" (1124) refers to a single occasion. Our tendency to associate the expanded form with the single event and the simple form with the general no doubt stems from the frequency with which the two forms occur in these meanings; at least the distribution in my data would suggest that. We have noted that of the four simple forms, two were generalizations and two were single events. Of the twenty-one expanded forms, sixteen were indisputably single events, but only one, containing



the adjunct always, was indisputably a generalization.

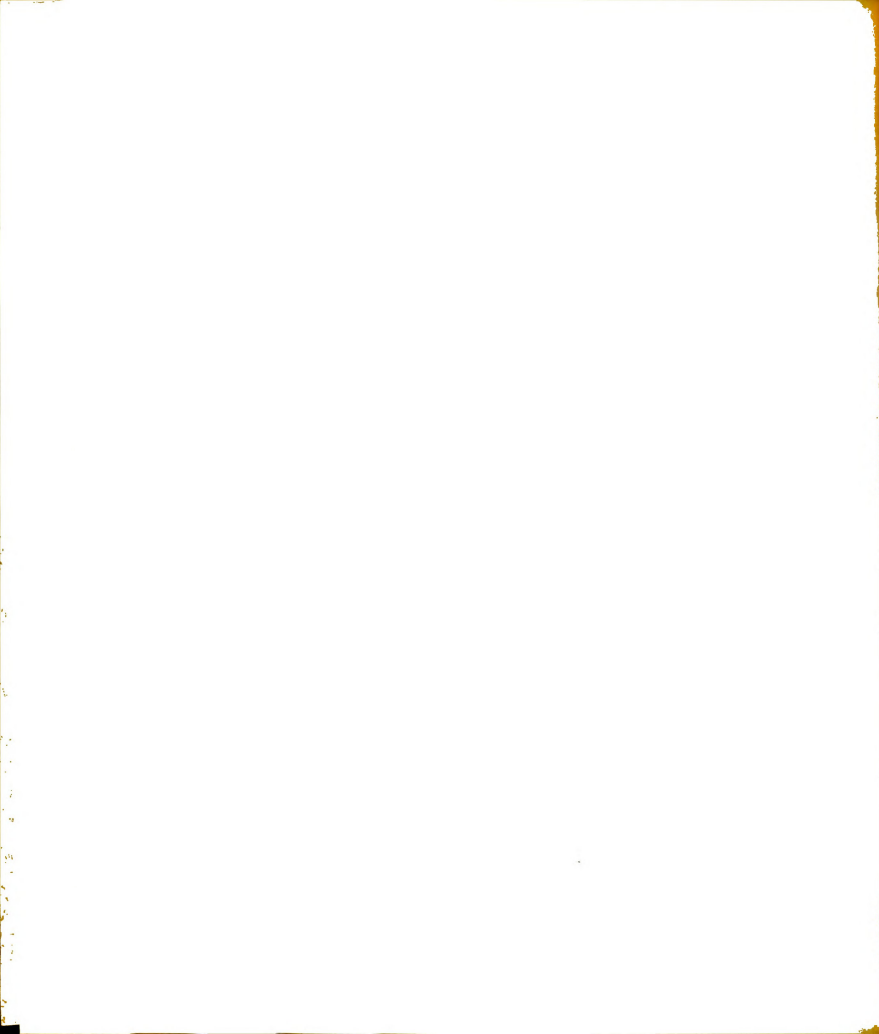
In the generalization "Moralists are always talking of the grand and comprehensive happiness" (1072) the adjunct always negates, it seems to me, the meaning "action taking place now" without eliminating the activity meaning. If the adjunct is dropped, the meaning becomes "action taking place now" as it is understood to be in "Union leaders in the big labor centers are talking against Eisenhower" (2088). With the simple form, the adjunct would not, I believe, negate the "action taking place now," it would simply function to make the generalization more absolute. "Moralists talk of the grand and comprehensive happiness," without the adjunct, is still a generalization.

Two items are of interest because they refer to something written in books:

1. Willie turned to the Bible passage with shaking hands...The words were underlined with wavering ink lines. Besides them Dr. Keith had written in the broad margin: "He's talking about your job on the Caine, Willie." (158)
2. True, Dr. Hafstad is talking about what is theoretically possible, not what can be done right now. (667)

In these two items the speaker is not summarizing (a generalizing function) but is explaining the action. The context makes clear that the reference is to a single occasion and the single occasion is compatible with the expanded form and its indication of present occurrence.

Two of the expanded-form items, in context, suggest not only present occurrence but even volition. In the simple form they would be understood, I believe, as statement of general practice:

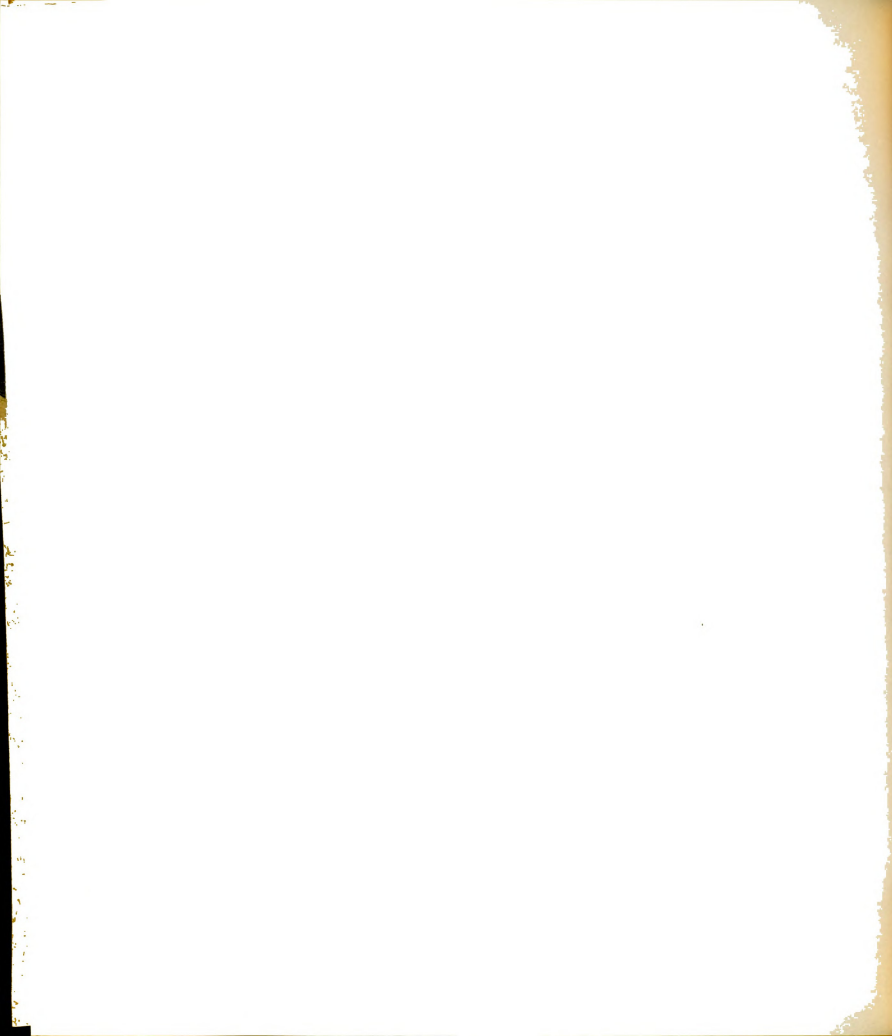


1. Beyond that, the Navy isn't talking. The Underwater Demolition teams are again top-secret units. (1094)
2. The terror in the small boy's eyes spread to the rest of his face and to his body. He strained away from Flassy and tried to free his hand but the hold on his wrist did not relax.
 "He's not talking," Lou said.
 "He'll talk," Flassy said. (1254)

The remaining expanded form items refer to action in progress, indicating in all but one that a conversation is being pursued. (See items 405, 406, 407, 703, 887, 1124, 1251, 1252, 1253, 1546, 1547, 1548, 1549, 1550, 2088 in Appendix I.) The exception is a report of behavior verifiable in present time: "She's kinda restless. She's talking in her sleep and twisting and turning." (1551) In general, then, we may say that the two forms of this verb have the same meanings we have noted for other verbs; the distribution suggests that the verb talk occurs more frequently in single-event, action-in-progress situations than in generalizing or characterizing situations. Talking, is, of course, an overt action normally verifiable by both ear and the eye.

The verb to begin cannot denote an action of as specific a nature as to talk. Its lexical content denotes aspect of some other action. When it is not followed by an infinitive (as it is in fourteen out of seventeen instances in the data), the nature of the action involved is implied in another word:

1. Construction is beginning in the spring. (663)
2. Jimmy is beginning adolescence. (555)
3. A popular writer on crowd psychology. . . begins by pointing out the cruelty. . . of a crowd. (2037)



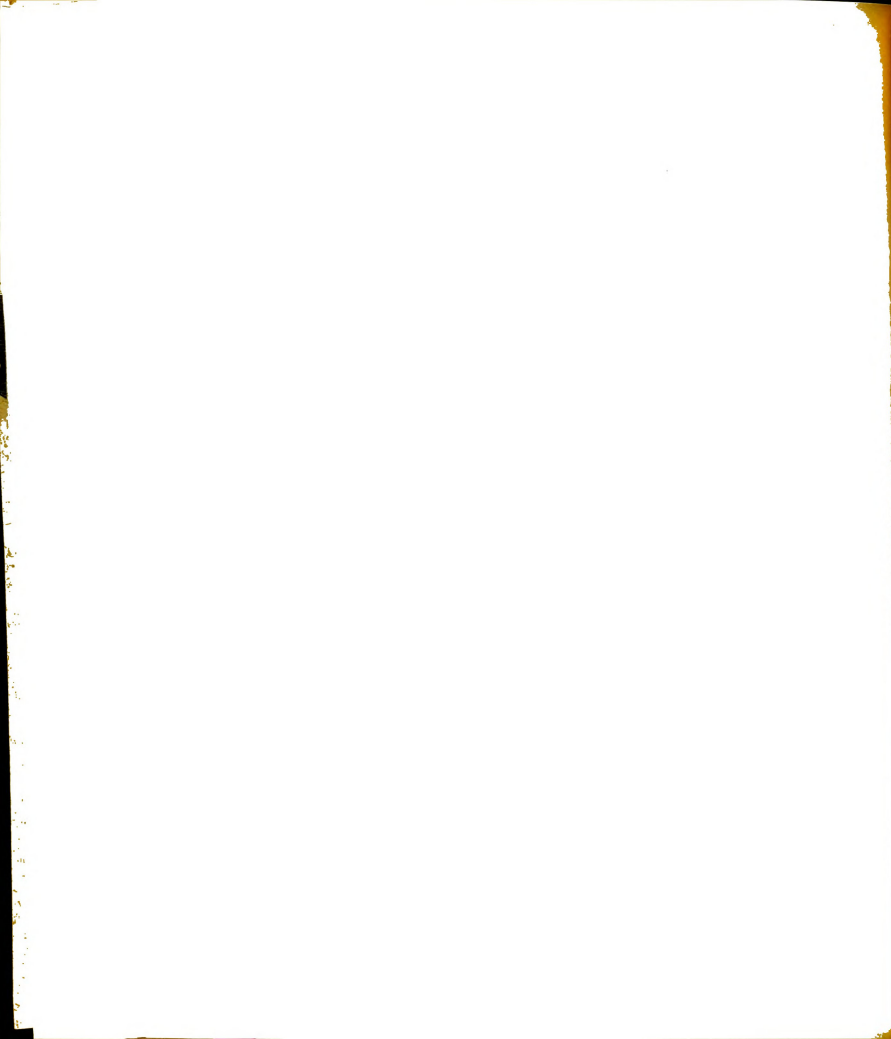
When it stands before the infinitive, the nature of the action is, of course, indicated by the infinitive. In three examples, the substitution of the alternate form does not change the meaning beyond, possibly, a slight shift in emphasis. The items appear to be illustrations of situations in which there may or may not be a turning away from time, depending on the speaker's point of view. Compare:

4. Freight that no one has ever associated before with trucks to any marked degree. . . begins to appear more and more often on trucks, until long lines of these trailer trucks. . . have become a familiar sight. (564)
5. The American woman seems to be pretty tranquil this spring, maybe even a little reactionary, for her headgear is beginning to look like a hat. (664)
6. It's beginning to look as if he doesn't want to come home. (1566)

In the following items the infinitive denotes the non-overt in both, but the context in one sentence contains the particle just, suggesting immediacy.

7. "Leo? Oh, I see. I am beginning to see. Everybody will get theirs." (1563)
8. "Yes, sir," Charles had said. "I'm just beginning to see that everything fits into banking." (788)

It seems to me that the simple form would not be noticeably unidiomatic in (7) above but that it has an unidiomatic quality in (8). Whether this is because the particle just emphasizes immediacy or whether the development-by-degrees meaning is stronger in (8) cannot be demonstrated. When the development-by-degrees meaning is strong, the simple form seems quite unidiomatic if substituted:



9. "Clarence! 'Why, you're beginning to talk as crazy as your mother." (1565)
10. The Atomic Energy Commission is placing heavy emphasis on cost-cutting research, and it is beginning to pay notable dividends. (665)
11. (After a moment) "Well--maybe you're right." "You're beginning to admit it." (1564)

Probably the compatibility of the simple form in item (4) may be explained on the basis that realization, which does not imply an extent of time, is as appropriate an interpretation as a gradual dawning of understanding, which implies an extent of time (development by degrees) and which the expanded form seems to imply.

All the expanded forms can be construed as action taking place now, but they cannot all be construed as single events:

12. Americans are beginning to realize that installing more stop signs, etc. . . . provide no permanent solution to the problem. (2024)

In most of the citations of begin the infinitives which follow it suggest the non-overt: to think, to wonder, to see (understand). All the expanded form items have the development-by-degrees meaning. The great frequency of the expanded form with begin probably reflects the fact that speakers are likely to think of beginnings as developing-by-degrees rather than as abrupt, fixed points. Where a beginning is definitely fixed and non-developing, as in item 3 above, the simple form is obligatory.

The two citations in which the verb try is not followed by an infinitive are as follows:

1. Nobody ever tries out any of the gay, mad chic that Harper's Bazaar...and its competitors think up. (666)
2. Voices (in the jail yard) "Watch the gate! He's probably trying the gate!" (1558)



Obviously the expanded form denotes a single present occurrence and the simple form denotes general practice. The only other instance of the simple form likewise denotes a general practice:

3. "On times like that I get a certain feeling about those people. To me they ain't regular. But I try to stop my thoughts about them." (409)

Of the nineteen citations which I consider as containing an expanded form before an infinitive, the infinitive is implied rather than expressly stated in three:

4. "Haven't you got through to Corps yet, sergeant?"... "Not yet, sir, ...I'm still trying, sir," he added unnecessarily. (1125)
5. "Well, I never tried [i.e., to intimidate], " the boss said, "Yet. And I'm not trying now." (7)
6. "Well, just make the best of things anyway." "I'm trying to! I'm trying to!" (1555)

These are present occurrences and the action in (4) is clearly an overt physical action. The meaning "present occurrence" applies to all the expanded-form items and in addition to items 4, 5, 6, above, the action in eight other items is understood to take place on a single occasion. (See items 408, 554, 704, 1126, 1257, 1554, 1255, 1557). In the remaining nine, the single-occasion meaning can not be clearly established, although the "action progressing in real time" (present) is clear:

7. "Where are you stationed boy? I want you to come again often." "I'm trying to catch up with the U.S.S. Caine, sir." (159)
8. The propertied middle class is small--ten per cent--many have fled earlier, and the rest are trying to cling to what they have. (1127)
9. "My God, I'm trying to keep this phone clean and I'm not going to have you fellows coughing and spitting in it either." (1462)



(See also items 43, 705, 1070, 1071, 1256, 1553).

Action going forward in present time--that is, developing by degrees--whether clearly overt ("I'm trying to find the page . . . 704) or non-overt ("I'm trying to get over it." 554), explains each of the expanded-form items. The great frequency of the expanded form of try (as of begin) probably reflects the compatibility of the lexical meaning of the verb (expenditure of effort in try) and the notion of developing by degrees.

III

Verbs Frequent in Both Forms

Verbs in the data which alternate forms freely are tabulated below:

<u>Verb</u>	<u>No. of occurrences in expanded form</u>	<u>--in simple form</u>
come	23	19
get	31	17
have	18	26
make	14	21
say	13	23
take	21	20
think	13	20
Total: 133		Total: 146

Of these verbs, say and think will be treated separately in section B below.

A. Summary of findings with respect to come, get, have, make, take. These verbs were classified when possible into one of three groups: (1) single events in past, present, or future time, (2) action taking place now (actions in real time but not single events); (3) fact-of-process. I sought by this means to establish the extent to which the two meanings Occurrence (in-



cluding overt action and non-overt, developing action) and Fact-of-Process (including the turning away from an overt action in real time and the constitution-of-things) would explain a cross-section of verbs which alternate forms freely. Table I shows the distribution of items which could be classified as single events.

Table I

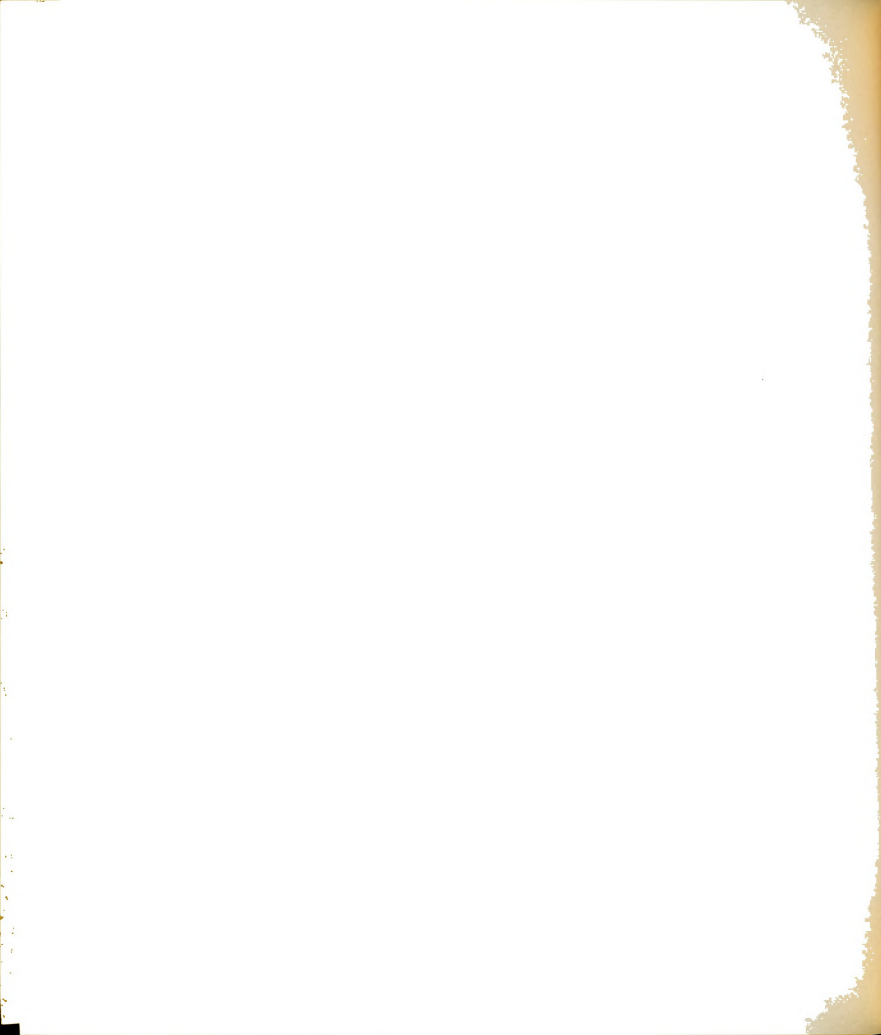
Single Event*

	(present time)	(future time)	(past time)
come	5 (expanded) 1 (simple)	7 (expanded) 1 (simple)	2 (simple)
get	5 (expanded) 1 (simple)	6 (expanded) 1 (simple)	
have	1 (expanded) 1 (simple)	6 (expanded)	
make	2 (expanded)	1 (expanded)	
take	2 (expanded) 2 (simple)	8 (expanded) 3 (simple)	

Totals: 41 expanded forms; 12 simple forms

*The verbs classified according to the above table may be found in Appendix I under the following numbers: come (present time) 1520, 1521, 1527, 1578, 1591, 1; (future time) 734, 1238, 1247, 1523, 1590, 1593, 1766, 1944 (past time) 1617; get (present time) 177, 400, 1471, 1482, 1739, 1742 (future time) 395, 735, 1096, 1269, 1574, 1577, 1535; have (present time) 394, 718; (future time) 256, 1328, 1357, 1457, 1718, 1745; make (present time) 12, 1435; (future time) 1440; take (present time) 248, 1298, 1660; (future time) 196, 197, 422, 1402, 1403, 1658, 1721, 1724, 1725, 1732, 1747

As is evident from this table, and as we should expect, the expanded form denotes the single event much more frequently than does the simple form. I suspect a temporal meaning can be assigned to these simple-form items because they are single events,



for time, with respect to past, present and future, seems more easily ascertained for such actions.

The archaic word order illustrated in items 1 and 2 below (i.e., the reversal of subject-verb after an adverb) may be instrumental in retaining the older form (simple) regardless of meaning:

1. "Sure, leave it to the Queegs. Then along comes the war and you get a Queeg over you, and you scream bloody murder." (184)
2. "Look! here comes the old one!" (1)

The degree of generality suggested in item 1 makes its classification as a single past event doubtful. In item 3 below, even though the particle now is used, the action is a single past event:

3. "Now you go along with another of your moron blunders---the worst of your whole career." (1617)

Regardless of temporal category, these three items seem to emphasize Fact-Of-Process rather than Occurrence in real time.

Like go the verb come implies an extent of time. In the expanded form, unless there is an adverbial adjunct, the difference between present and future time cannot be clearly established. Cf.:

4. (into phone) Hello, Elsie? (listens) You're coming down? (elated to saloon) She's coming down! (1590)
5. "I want to talk to you Horace. I'm coming up stairs." (1593)

In item 5 the action may be underway. This verb and take and leave occur frequently in the expanded form with verbal adjuncts denoting future time. The items in Table I were classified as present time, if the situation or an adverbial adjunct did not clearly indicate futurity. The expanded forms were overt actions.

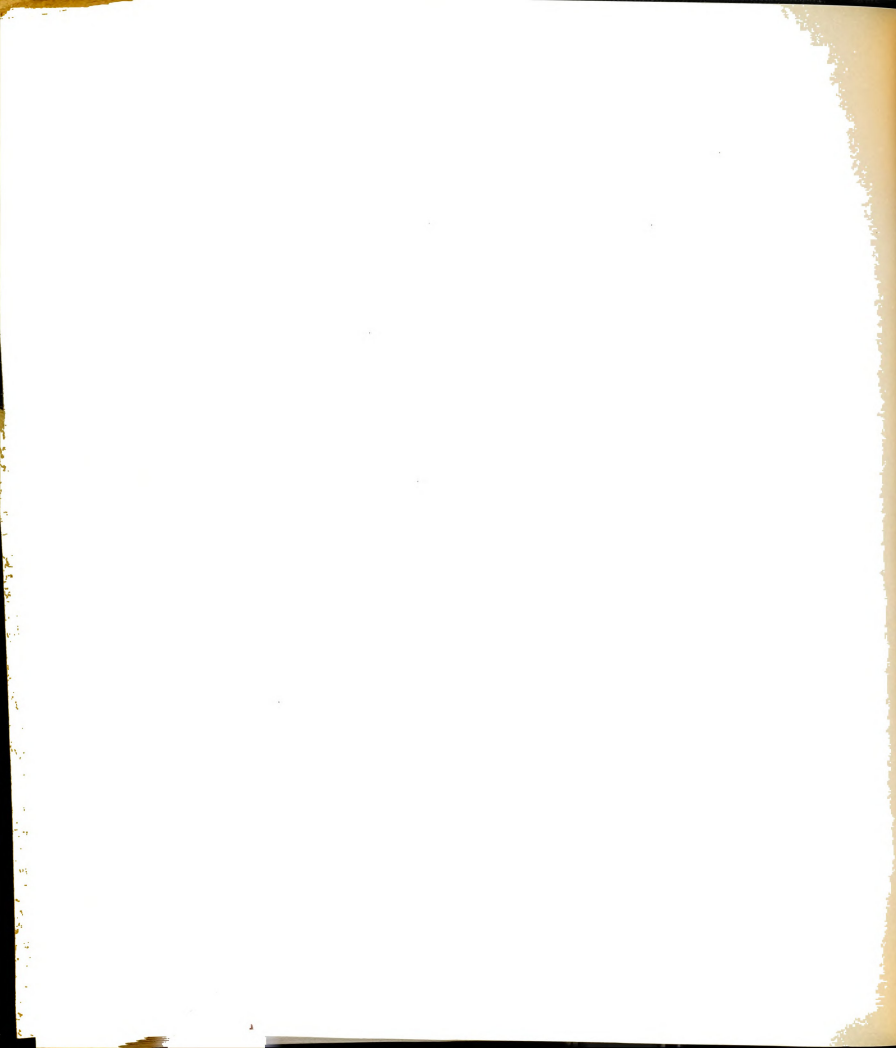


Table II

Action Taking Place Now But Not Classifiable*
As A Single Event

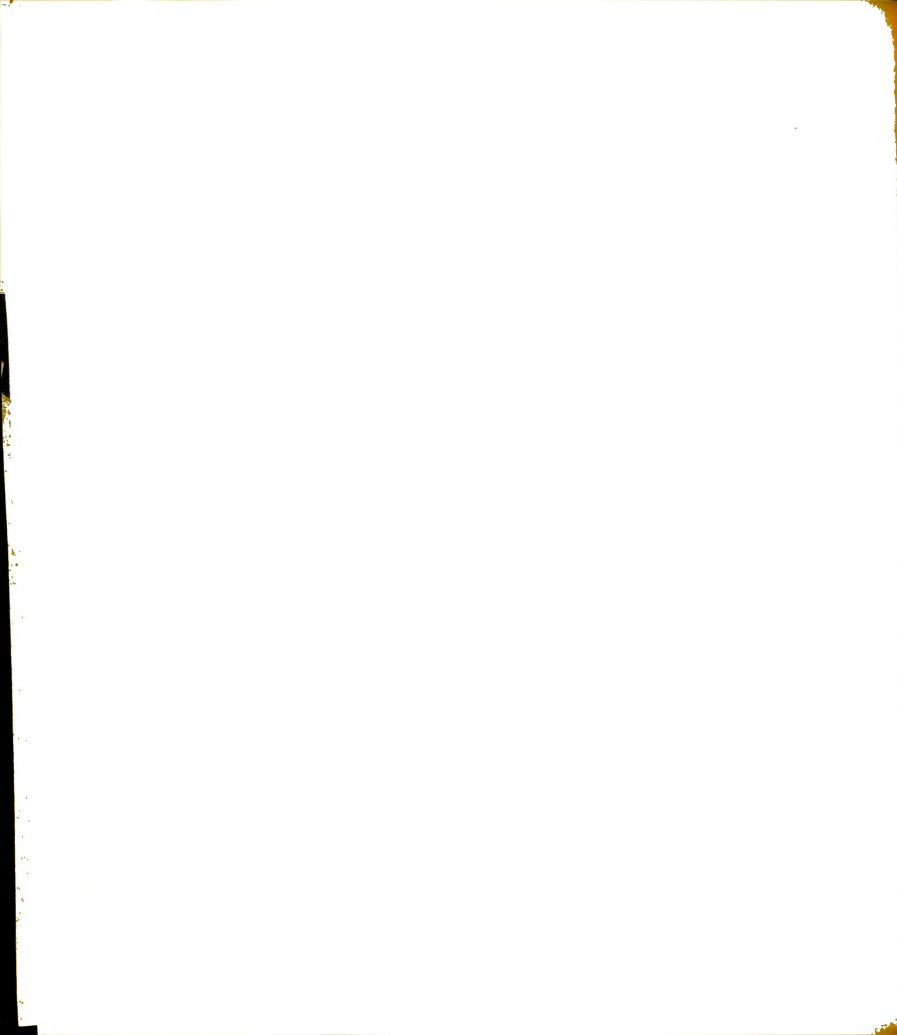
	Non-overt, non-developing	Non-overt, developing	Overt, developing
come	none	6 (expanded)	2 (expanded)
get	none	19 (expanded)	none
have	3 (simple)	3 (expanded)	3 (expanded)
make	3 (simple)	7 (expanded)	3 (expanded)
take	3 (simple)	9 (expanded)	none

*The verbs classified according to this table may be found in Appendix I under the following numbers: come (non-overt, developing) 46, 101, 143, 149, 1066, 1603; (overt-developing) 389, 1073; get (non-overt, developing) 42, 140, 396, 399, 546, 793, 881, 1133, 1472, 1475, 1477, 1478, 1479, 1480, 1481, 1483, 1484, 1485, 1486; have (non-overt, non-developing) 56, 50, 1095; (non-overt, developing) 1286, 1502, 1809, (overt-developing) 268, 544, 1079, 1285; make, (non-overt, non-developing) 64, 214, 1698, 1699; (non-overt, developing) 11, 129, 1434, 1436, 1437, 1439, 2128, (overt-developing) 709, 1290, 1438; take (non-overt, non-developing) 201, 202, 203, 252; (non-overt, developing) 336, 1146, 1156, 1639, 1648, 1649, 1657, 1658, 1661.

Table II shows the distribution of items in which action could be understood to be taking place in present time but could not be classified as a single event. Examples of this type are:

1. "It seems to me that she or the Navy, or both, are having quite a good effect on you." (263)
2. Suddenly she said, "We're getting nowhere.
Let's go home. See you here Thursday." (831)

As is evident from the table, these verbs that expand freely do not often lend themselves to the contrast between non-overt, non-developing and non-overt, developing action. The action and specific time meaning of the simple forms in the non-overt, non-

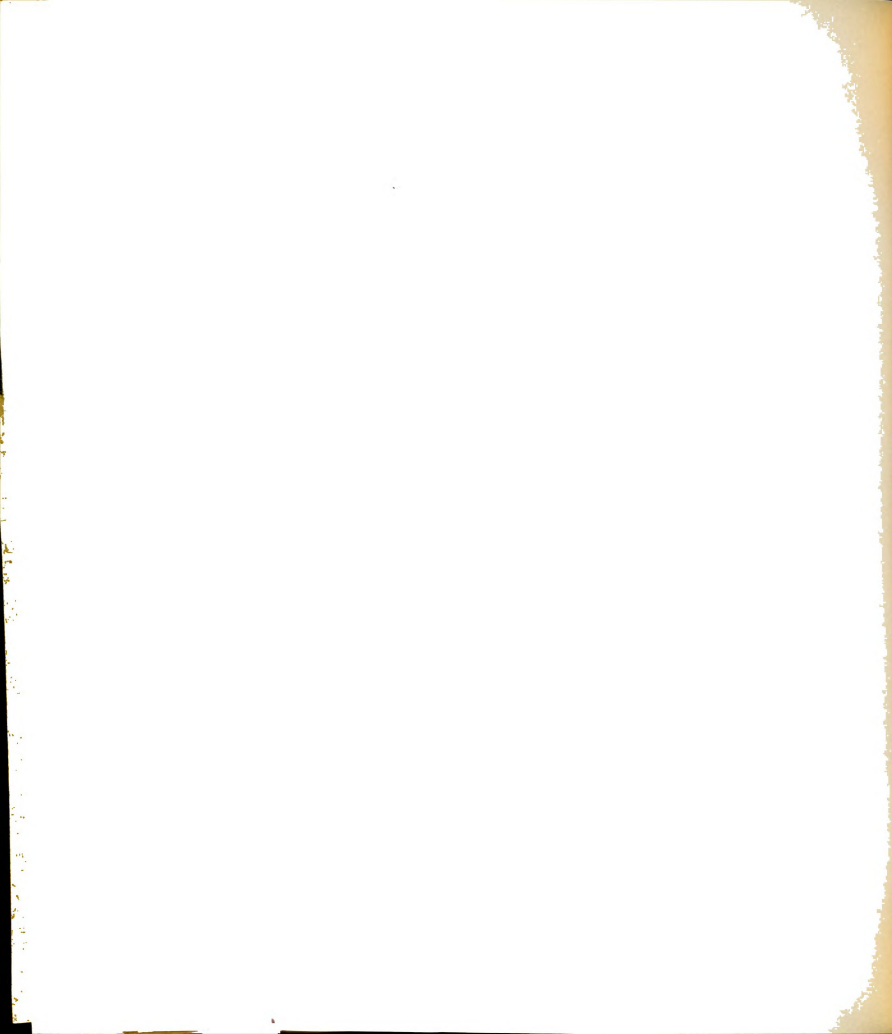


developing category are both very weak:

1. "Have you any idea who is sending you these letters?" (1095)
2. "Why you poor skinny little agnostic, here you have a chance to see the Almighty's handiwork, and all you grab out of it is a feeling that you're real smart." (56)
3. "Well, if you've seen it, what do you make of it?" (214)
4. "You make me horribly ashamed." (1699)
5. "Game's over, I take it." (202)
6. "Do you take me for a liar, sir?" (201)
7. "I take it all back," she cried. "You win." (252)

The expanded forms occasionally presented a problem in classification in terms of the contrast non-overt, developing action and overt developing action. This was particularly true of the verb to have and to some extent of to get. Have does not expand at all in some of its meanings. It occurred most frequently in the simple form (26) and in that form meant possess, own nine times and meant possess as a characteristic or part eight times. When it appeared in the expanded form its lexical meaning approached an action meaning or was clearly an action meaning. The expanded form occurred most frequently (9 times out of 19) in the meaning to possess by way of experience. In this sense it sometimes seems to imply both overtness and non-overtness.

1. "We're having the devil's own time with McMillan.." (1285)
2. "I'm having a wonderful time," the girl said.
"I am having a simple wonderful time." (1236)



Similarly it is hard to decide whether get denotes the non-overt or the overt in an instance like this:

3. "I thought this kind of excitement blew over in California, but it's getting bigger instead of smaller." (399)

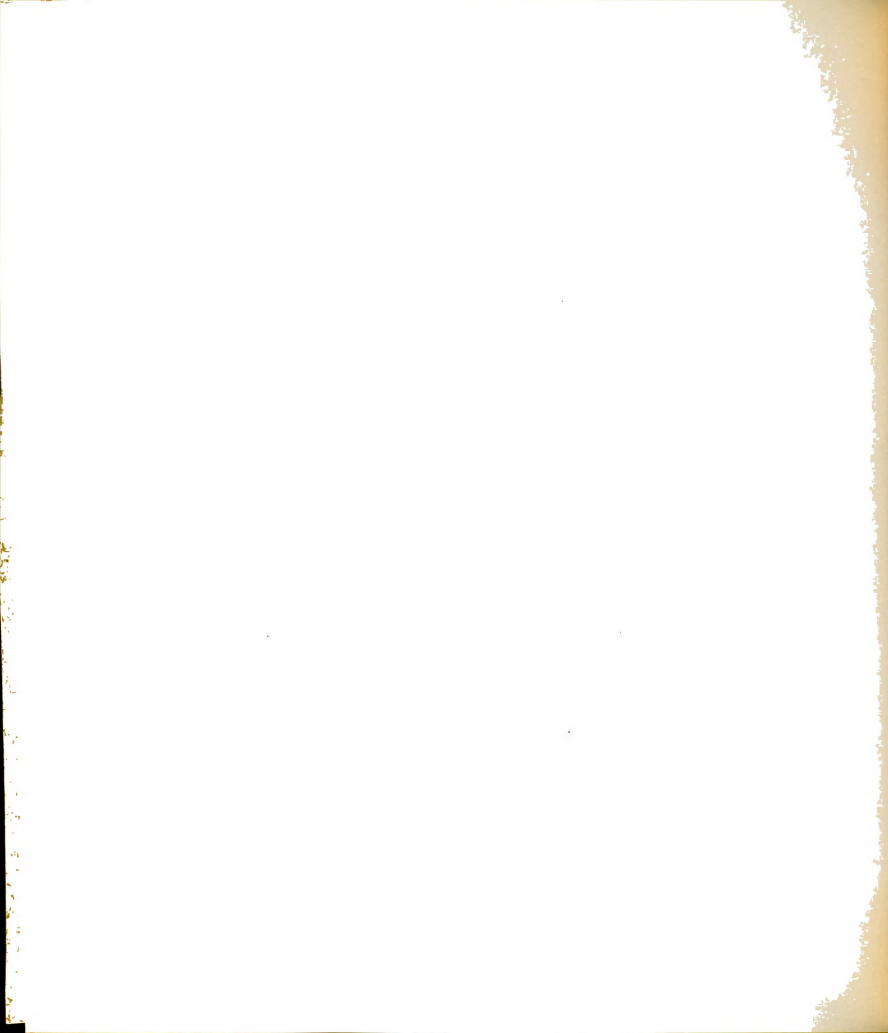
Aside from this factor, the expanded forms were easily classified as action developing by degrees.

Table III

Fact-Of-Process (Simple Forms)

	<u>Total</u>	<u>Citation numbers</u>
<u>come</u>	12	184, 238, 557, 583, 830, 833, 1234, 2035, 2040, 2042, 2043, 2082
<u>get</u>	14	231, 249, 876, 912, 934, 955, 956, 1234, 1306, 1331, 1334, 1589, 1690, 1771
<u>have</u>	20	99, 678, 905, 958, 960, 961, 962, 963, 1038, 1069, 1083, 1232, 1304, 1306, 1333, 2016, 2023, 2060, 2092, 2103
<u>make</u>	19	63, 64, 65, 213, 215, 216, 589, 635, 714, 920, 1090, 1153, 1258, 1351, 1621, 1706, 2045, 2055, 2056
<u>take</u>	13	19, 199, 502, 565, 575, 820, 904, 1103, 1233, 1293, 1303, 1730, 2098

This table shows that verbs which expand freely have most frequently a Fact-of-Process meaning in the simple form as do those which never or rarely expand. The majority of these items have constitutional meanings but some do not clearly fit the specialized meaning which that label includes. Again this seems to be particularly evident with the verb to have. In the sentence "He



has a table down in his cellar, and I have a game with him once or twice" (1304) have denotes customary practice but has is constitutional only in that it denotes an abstract relationship.

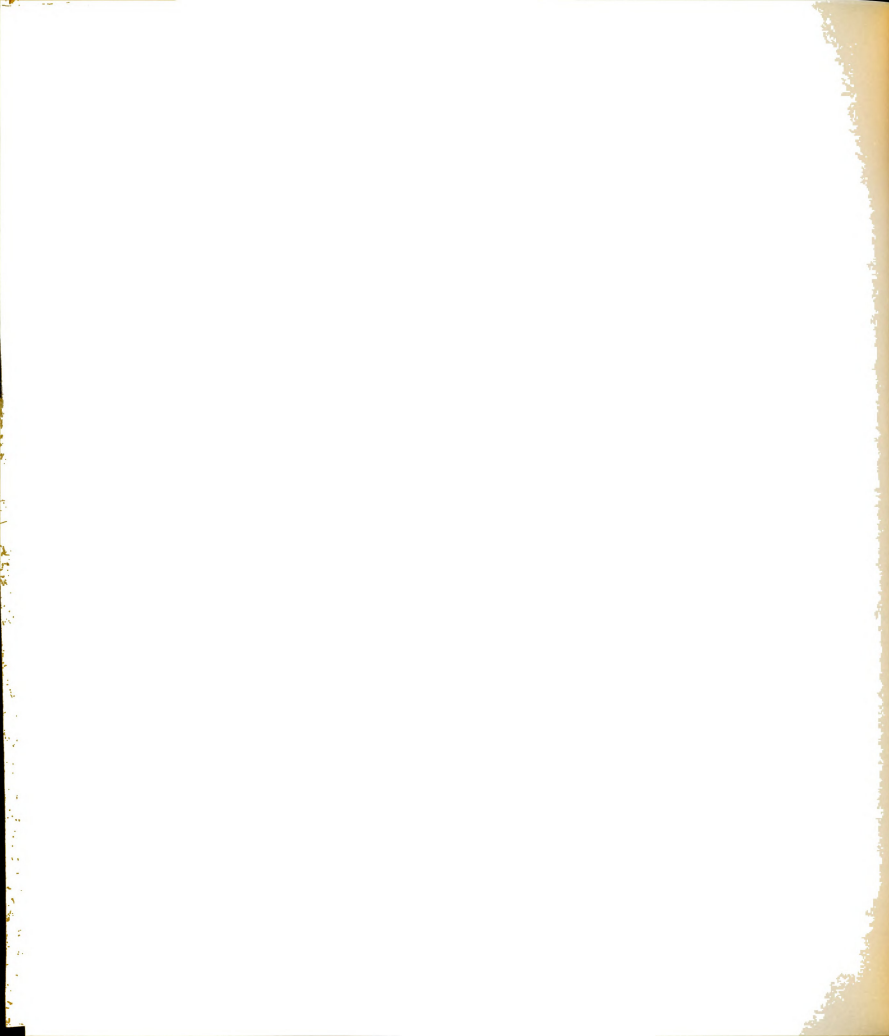
The items listed in this table are, however, like the items illustrated extensively in section I (pp. 80-95) and require no further discussion.

Seven items did not admit of the classification represented by these tables. Three were simple forms akin to the historical present; that is, the present tense was used by the writer to impart greater reality. All three items come from the same context:

1. From somewhere in the vast building comes always the sound of distant human voices. (869)
2. From somewhere comes the high, mad, cackling laughter of an old man. (869)
3. Near the State Street entrance a man is digging with a knife at something in the door. He gets it out." (929)

In these items, it seems to me, the simple form prevents the "extent of time" meaning implicit in the actions they denote. For such instances the contrast suggested by progressive vs. terminate aspect, terms used by Curme, seem to be especially appropriate. Three of the remaining items are expanded forms accompanied by the adverb always. They are illustrative of the meaning "characterizing function":

4. "Now, then! What is all this nice cheerful talk about a libel suit? That's what they're always having in England, isn't it, on the slightest provocation?" (1790)
5. "I don't know. I'm always making things up." (419)



6. "I'm always getting funny ideas that nobody will laugh at." (1473)

The last item is one in which either form might be used; the expanded form occurs, I believe, because the speaker conceives of the action as if in progress or as in duration:

7. They imagine that lions and tigers are suffering when the circus trainer snaps a whip at them and sticks a kitchen chair in their teeth. They're having the time of their lives. (1025)

Out of a total of 217 items, the meanings "occurrence in real time (single events)," "action in progress (non-overt developing and overt developing action)" explained all but four of the 111 expanded forms, and fact-of-process (constitution of things and indifference to time) explained 103 of the 106 simple forms.

B. The verbs to say and to think. The verb to say is problematic in that fact-of-process is not a very satisfactory explanation of it in the simple form nor does the contrast non-overt vs. overt seem to fit it, since it is very suggestive of the audible as well as the visual and yet appears often to represent the non-overt. To think is not, I believe, problematic but since it has very often the same structural pattern as say in the simple form, and is occasionally a semantic equivalent for it in the simple form, the two are treated together.

In seventeen out of twenty-two instances, what is said is also expressed when the simple form of to say occurs; it is expressed only four out of a possible thirteen times when the expanded form occurs. The four expanded-form items put emphasis on the overtiness of saying or speaking:



1. God is no cheap fella, Joe. God is lookin' out at Tony right now, and you know what he's sayin'? He's savin': "Tony, you....." (1587)
2. "Don't you realize--there are probably thousands of artists in France today who are saying, "I'd find a really big theme for my canvas..." (1770)
3. "I tell you everything's all right, Tony. Oh, I ain't savin' you ain't got to keep things movin' along easy and friendly and all." (1672)
4. "Paula's scared."
"What's she scared of?"
"The Mexicans are saying that Mantee is headed this way." (1643)

The simple form could be used in all these items (with the possible exception of item 4 where it seems rather too indefinite to be in harmony with the strong sense of developing action suggested by the context), but it would not emphasize the overt action as the expanded form does. The simple form places the emphasis much more on what is said and on non-overtness, as is evidenced by the fact that it is sometimes synonymous with think. The expanded-form items suggest the speaker is dramatizing; the simple form items below suggest the speaker is summarizing:

5. "Louis says that Detroit Edison is very good,"
Mrs. Morgan said. (1313)
6. The Commission says the two projects involve different approaches to the problem, but has not divulged exactly how they differ in design. (669)
7. "Captain DeVriess says for me to take you two on a tour of the ship. Come along." (206)

One simple-form item clearly has a constitutional coloring; only what is inferential from what is said is important:

8. "You're one of those tolerant people, aren't you?"
"You say that as if tolerance were a crime." (227)



Two items suggest conclusion or finality very strongly, a notion which is compatible with the simple form but not with the expanded form:

9. "Mattie stays, and that's that!"
"As you say," she said. (1320)
10. "And he doesn't really mean half the rude things
he says. (68)

Two items refer to future action:

11. "And no matter what you say, I'm going to speak
to her." (1274)
12. "Oscar, listen to him. He's getting ready to
swear that it was you and Leo. What do you say
to that?" (1693)

Items 9-12 can not be explained in terms of fact-of-process, but usage such as is illustrated in items 5-7 probably may be explained as non-overt, non-developing action that is indifferent to time. Items 5-7 also illustrate the most frequent use of the verb. Item 8 is clearly fact-of-process.

When the expanded form occurs, it suggests to me overt action such as talking or writing. In eleven out of the thirteen examples in the data, it fits the temporal category "action taking place now." In five items, the occasion is also a single occasion. The two which do not fit the temporal category are:

13. They use the language of American controversy
clumsily and their non-Catholic audience does
not often make much effort to discover what
they are saying. (529)
14. In this situation, attention to what the teacher
is saying is downright rapt. (1176)

In the majority of instances the simple form can replace the expanded form; but the converse is not true. The expanded form



introduces nuances which impair the intent of the original. In general the contrast which seems to account most adequately for the difference between the two forms of this verb is non-overt, non-developing action vs. developing overt action.

In the simple form, think is like say in that its most characteristic pattern is subject-verb+a clause expressing what is thought:

1. "Poor cooks think the Commies are coming back." (1037)
2. "I think we're getting no place very fast." (1312)
3. "You are always joking," said Mr. Princey. People think there must be something to it." (1308)

The simple form occurs in this pattern seventeen times out of a possible twenty. The frequently paranthetical I think is substantially like the simple forms illustrated above, since the main clause expresses what is thought:

4. "---but I wouldn't, I think, waste too much energy on mere curiosity." (91)

The remaining two items have patterns like those in which the expanded form occurs:

5. The judge knows he's great and doesn't care what other people think. (17)
6. Chester Barnard...thinks scientifically about organization. (2034)

The expanded form occurs three times in the pattern illustrated in item five:

7. "I'd hate to tell you what I had to do to get that---Not what you're thinking, however, to judge from your expression. (1791)
8. "Remember what I told you, sir," he said, "and though what you're thinking does you credit, don't be spoiling it now." (976)



9. -- by following what the propaganda machine puts into men's minds one can judge what they are thinking.
(1109)

The expanded form is followed by a preposition as in item six above in three instances:

10. "Is he thinking of going away, Tony?" (1675)
11. "I'm not thinking about myself." (1647)
12. "You're thinking about yourself a little bit too."
(1659)

In three items the expanded form is completely intransitive and the emphasis is entirely upon thinking as an activity -- if not precisely overt, yet clearly developing:

13. "I was thinking," said Walter Mitty. "Does it ever occur to you that I am sometimes thinking?"
14. "Sometimes I go to bed," he said, but I am still thinking intensely." (909)
15. "No, don't reach for that phone yet, or whatever it is. I'm still thinking." (733)

In the one instance in which the expanded form is followed by a direct object, the intransitive notion still suggests itself:

16. The movers and shakers are thinking things over, and occasional feelers are put out to the public...
(537)

The contrast non-developing vs. developing action seems to hold consistently for the two forms of this verb. The simple form does not lend itself to classification into a temporal category; it is indifferent to time. Eleven of the thirteen expanded forms fit the temporal category action taking place now.



Chapter 5

Conclusions

For this study a body of material consisting of more than two thousand Modern English quotations was collected. The quotations illustrated one or both of the two variant forms of the verb in the present tense (e.g., goes, is going). The objective of the study was to determine, if possible, the difference in the meaning of the two verb forms through an examination of these quotations. The do form of the verb in questions and negative statements was included as a part of the study of the simple form (goes) since it is obviously analogous to the use of the expanded form (is going) in questions and negative statements (e.g., "does he go?" vs. "Is he going?" and "He doesn't go" vs. "He isn't going").

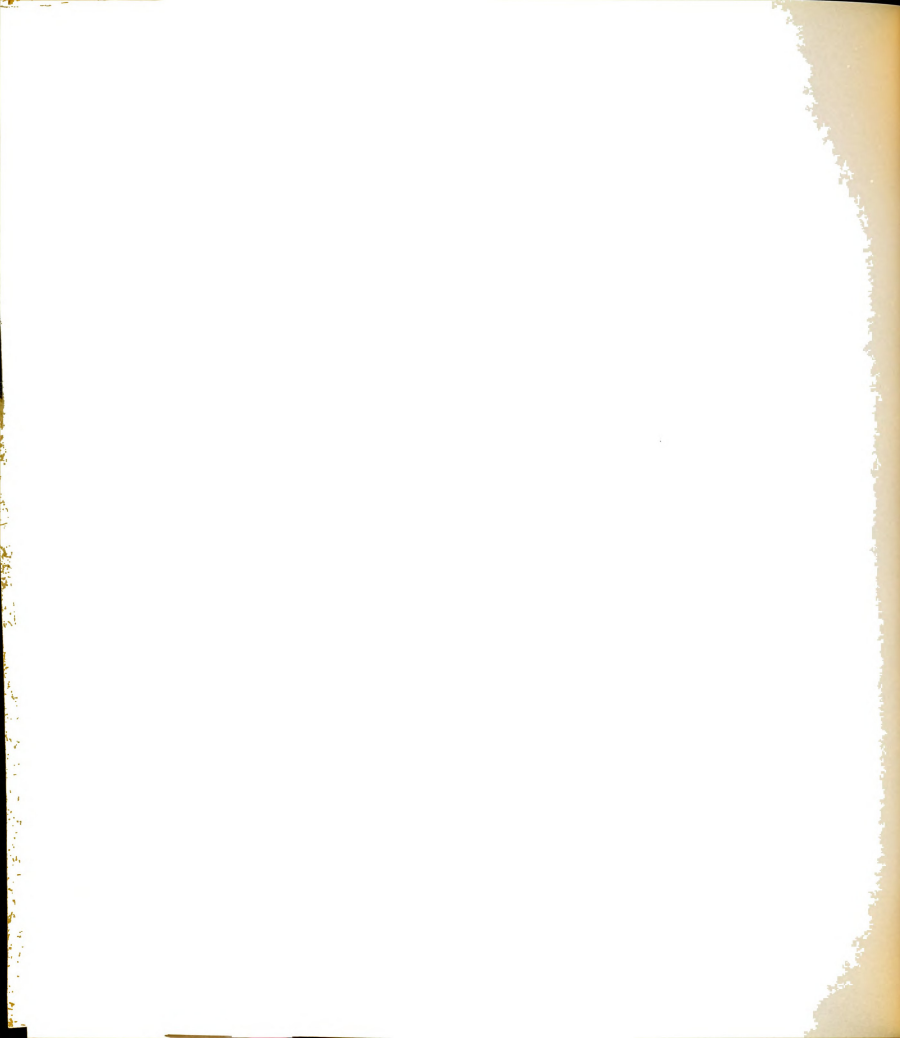
Chapter 1 was concerned chiefly with definition and history. It was pointed out there that the simple form of the verb with phonetic variation has been in the language since the time of our earliest records. Similarly, the expanded form is found in the literature of the three historical periods but differs from the simple form in that it exists in the Old English and the Middle English only as an occasional variant. While it continues to grow from the time of our earliest records, it does not become frequent until the Eighteenth and Nineteenth Centuries. The structural ambiguity of the -ing form (Cf. the verbal -ing in "It is raining", adjectival -ing in "The book is interesting", and the substantive -ing in "That act is stealing") has led to speculation about the origin of the form. The three rival theories concerning its



origin were reviewed in Chapter 1; and the work of Mosse¹ was cited as having established conclusively that the verbal -ing has "a double root;" that is, it has grown out of constructions in which an adjective in -ing and a substantive in -ing stood next to the form of the verb to be.

The study of the grammatical environments of the simple and expanded forms in current usage, reported in Chapter 2, led to the following conclusions:

- 1) Although a grammatical analysis has the virtue of objectivity, it appears not to afford sufficient evidence whereby the difference in the meaning of the two verb forms can be clearly established.
- 2) More specific negative conclusions which emerged were the following:
 - (a) Classification of data according to animate and inanimate subjects provided no basis for distinguishing the difference;
 - (b) Classification of data according to transitive and intransitive verbs provided no basis for distinguishing the difference in meaning of the two forms;
 - (c) The fact that the expanded form is conspicuously more frequent in substantive clauses than is the simple form appears to have no bearing on the difference in the meaning of the two forms.
- 3) The study of adverbial modifiers for which the word then could be substituted and of dependent clauses introduced by subordinating conjunctions showed certain trends which tended to corroborate the meanings assigned to the two forms by previous investigators. More specifically:
 - (a) The adverbial modifiers used with the simple form showed a trend in the direction of generality:

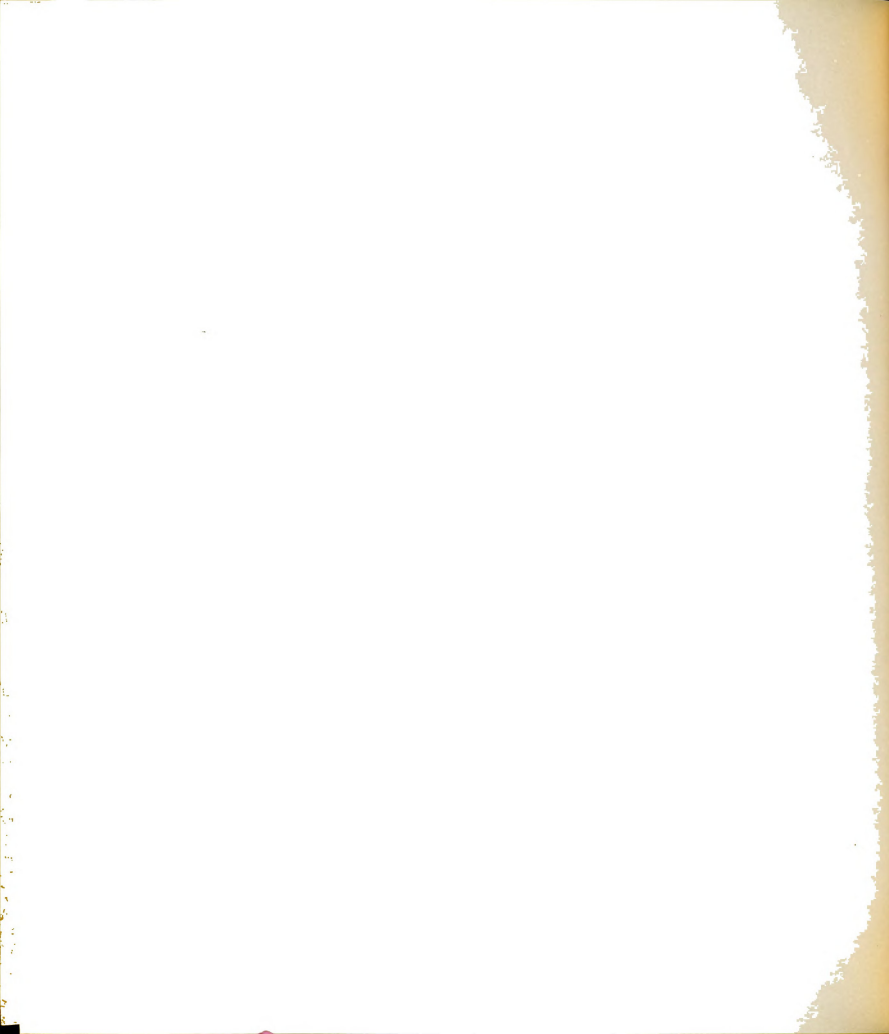


recurrence (e.g., often, usually), indefiniteness (e.g., sometimes), extent of time (e.g., today in the sense of "now-a-days").

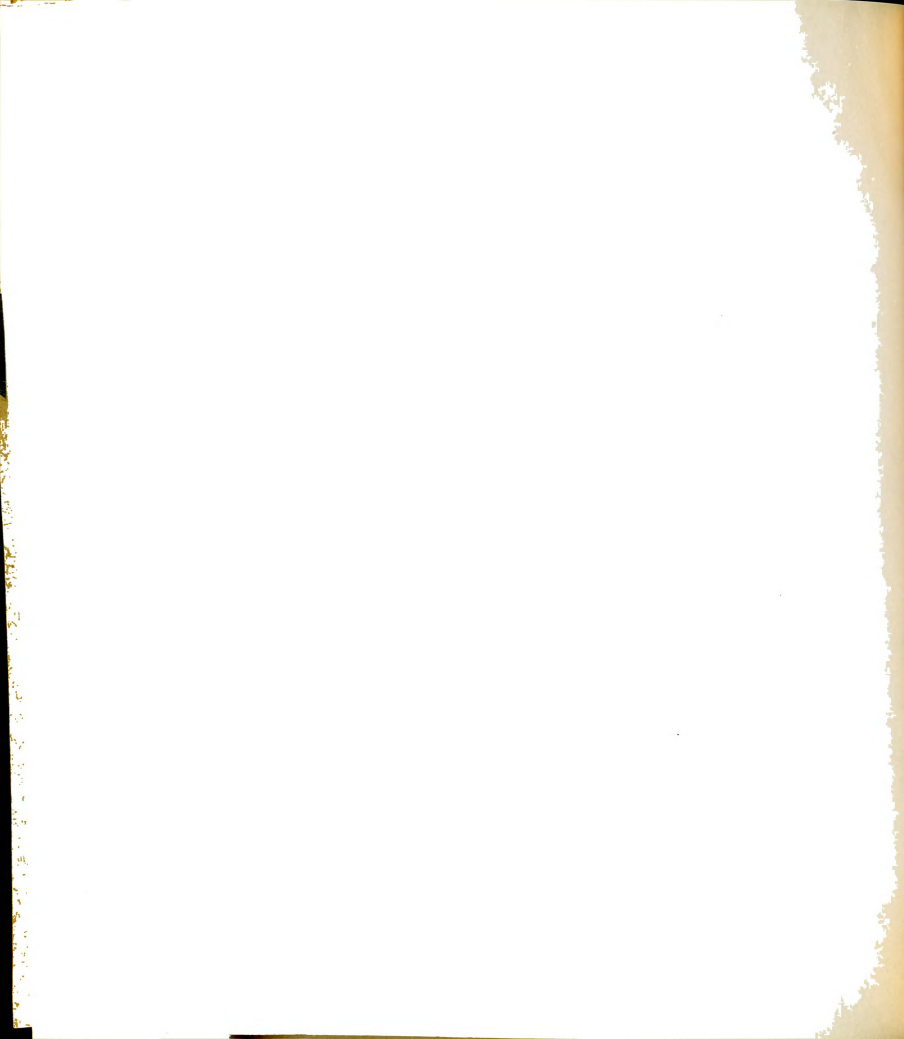
- (b) The adverbial modifiers used with the expanded form showed a trend in the direction of specific time (e.g., now in the sense of "while I utter these words," tonight, Thursday afternoon, etc.).
- (c) The simple form is used most frequently with temporal conjunctions denoting a "point of time" (e.g., before, when, in the sense of "time at which"). It occurs with while in the sense of "time during which" but less frequently.
- (d) The expanded form did not occur in my data with the temporal conjunctions before, after or until; it occurred frequently with when in the sense of "time during which" and occurred more frequently than the simple form in combination with while.
- (e) The conjunction when approximates if ("in the event that") in meaning about fifty per cent of the time that it is used with the simple form; it has this meaning infrequently when it is used with the expanded form.
- (f) The conditional if is conspicuously more frequent with the simple form than with the expanded form, just as if can be substituted for when far more frequently with the simple form than with the expanded form. The distribution of conditional if seems to emphasize the fact that a condition as such is not necessarily an action in progress but that an action in progress can be a condition.

This distribution of adverbs and subordinating conjunctions appears to imply that the simple form is itself indifferent to time but compatible with all expressions of time whereas the expanded form tends to be compatible with expressions of specific time.

In Chapter 3 meanings for the two verb forms stated by previous investigators were catalogued, and the boundaries for the terms used to identify these meanings were established by means of a subjective analysis of the sentences the various investigators had used to illustrate the meanings. The meanings catalogued



were those which appeared to be most comprehensive in that they embraced more specialized meanings which had been recorded in grammars or special studies. One meaning, a basic meaning, was catalogued for the simple form. Named FACT-OF-PROCESS by Dwight L. Bolinger, it encompasses, as its most important corollary, the meaning CONSTITUTION-OF-THINGS, so named by Edward A. Colver, and the meaning of turning away from an event in real time. Three meanings were catalogued for the expanded form: (1) OCCURRENCE (2) INVOLVEMENT-OF-THE-SUBJECT, and (3) THE CHARACTERIZING FUNCTION. OCCURRENCE encompasses overt and non-overt developing actions in present time or at specified times. INVOLVEMENT-OF-THE-SUBJECT, a meaning proposed by Anna Granville Hatcher, is essentially the same as OCCURRENCE but more clearly explains expanded forms of verbs which normally appear in the simple form and which in the expanded form cannot clearly be seen to mean OCCURRENCE unless one of the three test questions for establishing the INVOLVEMENT-OF-THE-SUBJECT makes clear the occurrence meaning. These questions are: (a) What is happening to the subject? (b) What is the subject doing, busy with, engrossed in? (c) What is the subject accomplishing by his activity? Verbs which in the expanded form (e.g., have) do not clearly have a meaning we readily identify as an event or as either an overt or non-overt developing action or state, will, if they have the occurrence meaning, stand as idiomatic explanations functioning as responses to one of these three questions. The CHARACTERIZING FUNCTION, so named by A. Poutsma and Phil Aronstein, is an occasional meaning the expanded form has, chiefly in combination with the adverb always.



Chapter 4 consisted of an item analysis of the two forms of the verb in my collection of citations with a view to establishing the extent to which the catalogue of meanings in Chapter 3 would explain the current usage of these two verb forms. The data, reclassified into the natural divisions suggested by the data itself, fell into the following divisions:

I. The simple form

- A. The unexpandable verbs--verbs that occurred frequently in the simple form and not at all in the expanded form.
- B. The verbs that appeared only in the simple form but whose frequency justified no conclusions about their expandability.
- C. The verbs which were relatively frequent in the simple form and rare in the expanded form.

II. The expanded form

- A. The verb to be going to plus infinitive in its modal auxiliary function.
- B. The verbs which occurred frequently in the expanded form and infrequently in the simple form.

III. The verbs that occurred frequently in both forms.

This natural division of the data resulted in approximately six hundred items which reflected the nature of all the verbs in the entire collection. The item analysis, presented in detail in Chapter 4, permitted these conclusions:

- 1) Fact-of-Process, with few exceptions, explained the meaning of the simple forms.
- 2) Fact-of-Process in the constitutional sense was an infinitely more frequent meaning than was Fact-Of-Process in the sense of turning away from an event in real time.



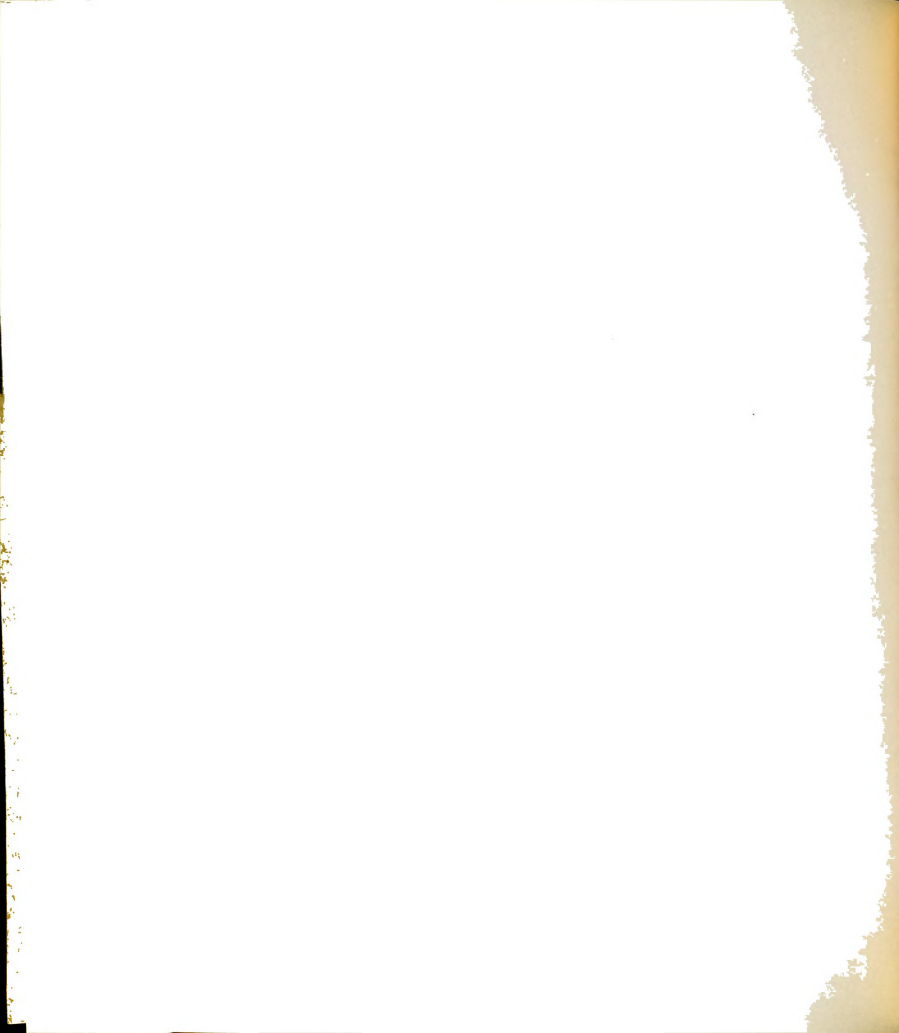
The constitutional sense embraces such notions as:

- (a) the logical (e.g., "The number exceeds more than two million")
- (b) the psychological (e.g., "She loves the movies")
- (c) the physiological (e.g., "Her arches hurt her")
- (d) the essential (e.g., "It takes two men to handle that bomber")
- (e) the order of nature (e.g., "He has a fine baritone voice")
- (f) the habitual (e.g., "She never has her dinner in her room..")
- (g) ability (e.g., "I play six hours of tennis at a stretch...")
- (h) direction (e.g., "You take two cups of sugar...")
- (i) causality (e.g., "What does he do that for?")
- (j) insight (e.g., "I feel your work isn't going very well")

Since these meanings shade into each other and are not mutually exclusive, they suggest a basic meaning rather than the ten separate meanings for the simple form.

Fact-of-Process in the sense of turning away from an event in real time usually is either not clearly distinguishable from the constitutional meaning (e.g., You say that as if tolerance were a real crime), or, it can be replaced by an expanded form without impairing the meaning (cf. "I feel good" and "I'm feeling good"). If, however, the word order is adverb-verb-subject (e.g., "Look! Here comes the old one") or the historical present is used for a statement of fact (e.g., "Henry Ford dies"), the simple form cannot be replaced by the expanded form.

- 3) Occurrence, with few exceptions, explained the meaning of the expanded form. Occasionally the formula for testing involvement-of-the-subject had to be applied to establish the occurrence meaning. In a few items, the expanded



form with the adverb always could only be explained as having "the characterizing function." Such sentences usually followed a sentence denoting a real occurrence (e.g., Statement: "I'm only joking." Reply: "You're always joking").

- 4) The verbs frequent in both forms substantiated rather conclusively Bolinger's statement of the difference in the temporal meaning of the two forms:

The simple present has no confines, but all other tenses are confined in some way. It is 'timeless' not in the sense of eternal but of 'non-committal about time.' The expanded present is confined by or oriented to a beginning or possible cessation.

Of the 111 expanded-form items for which a temporal classification was attempted, 105 could be classified as single events in present time (15) or in stated future time (28) or as non-overt developing action understood to be now (8). In the category now past, present, and future were not separable. Only 28 of the 105 simple form items fit the temporal categories of the expanded form.

In summary, some general impressions about the difference between the two forms derived from substituting the two forms for each other may be in order:

- 1) The simple form is chiefly concerned with intensional meanings; the expanded form is chiefly concerned with extensional meanings. The nearer the lexical meaning of the verb approaches the intensional, the less is the likelihood that the expanded form will be idiomatic if



substituted for the simple form. The gradation from extension to intension is interestingly illustrated by such verbs as expect, have and feel.

- 2) The simple form often encompasses a broader lexical meaning and is compatible with a broader lexical meaning in other words. This becomes noticeable for example with the conjunctions if, while and as.
- 3) The simple form may frequently be substituted for an expanded form without complete loss of meaning or idiom. The expanded form, however, substituted for the simple form is not infrequently incompatible with other words (e.g., "Usually negotiations are taking more time") or introduces an action meaning which is illogical (e.g., "He is having a fine baritone voice"). In its own environment, nevertheless, the expanded form has a precise meaning.

To establish by means of completely objective criteria the difference in the meaning of these two forms awaits, I think, the invention of more exact methods by our descriptive linguists. Lacking a precedent in such methods, this investigator has found it impossible to divorce structural and lexical meaning; the two appear to be inextricably interwoven. Fact-of-Process and Occurrence, subjectively derived meanings, explain to the satisfaction of this native speaker of the language the vast majority of the two forms in current usage. To one who fully grasps the meaning of these two terms, the meaning of the two verb forms will not be a mystery.

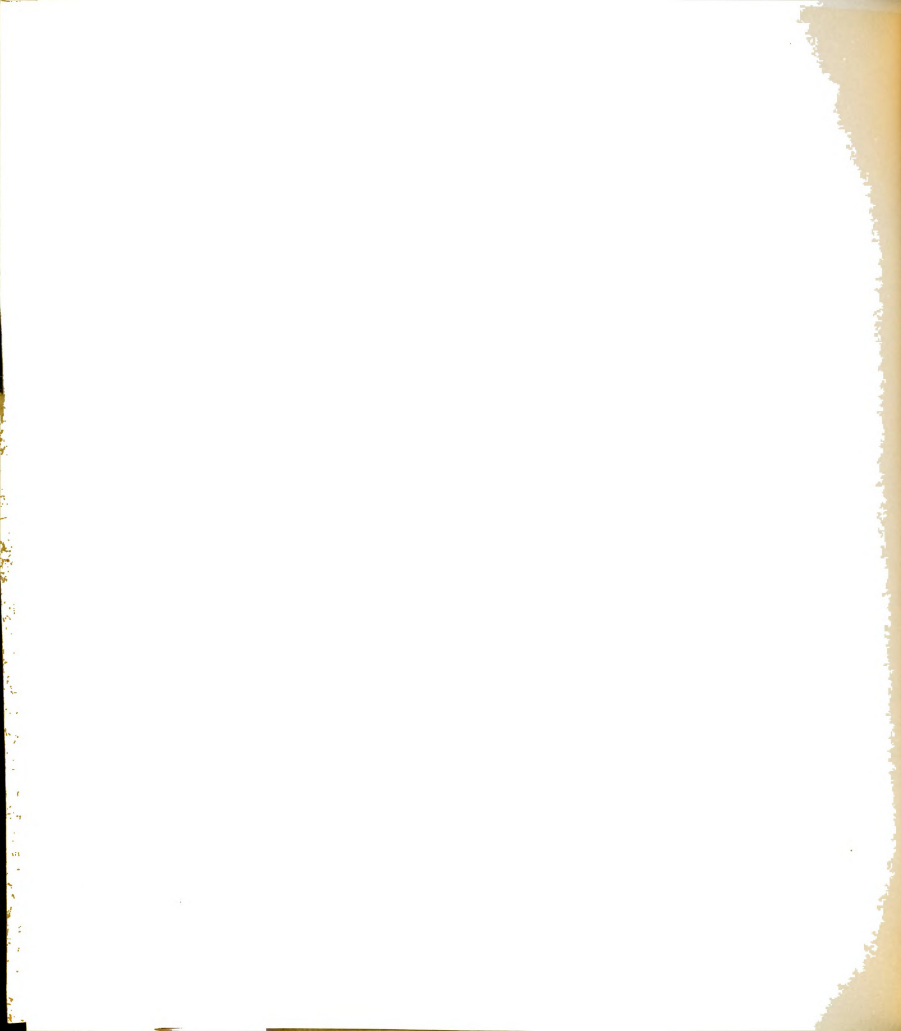


Appendix I

This appendix includes the citations from current books and periodicals. The sources are listed alphabetically by title and precede the citations taken from them. The citations are numbered consecutively from 1--2143.

All the King's Men, Warren, Robert kenn,
Harcourt Brace and Co., New York, 1946.

1. "Look, here comes the old one!" p. 207
2. But if you are sitting on the bench in the middle of the afternoon in late August with the old ones, it does not seem that anything will ever come, not even your own funeral, and the sun beats down and the shadows don't move across the bright dust, which, if you stare at it long enough, seems to be full of glittering specks like quartz. p. 57
3. "But some of it slips down, I am sure, and that is why he is never hungry." p. 209
4. "Who are the commissioners?" I said, "Or maybe they're hiding out?" p. 59
5. "It is not business," the Boss said. "It is pure pleasure. At least I'm aiming for it to be before I'm through." p. 39
6. I had just about made the door, when he said, "I'm dining with your mother this week." p. 53
7. "Well, I never tried," the Boss said, "Yet. And I'm not trying now." p. 51
8. Then he said, "I'm not denying I wanted it. I won't lie to you, . . ." p. 83
9. "That one is just drying." p. 210
10. "What's eating you?" I asked. p. 82
11. "Oh, Jack's making out," the Boss said. p. 46
12. "He's making an angel." p. 209
13. "They're planning on a big barbecue and rally at Upton." p. 79
14. "He sometimes sells them on the street," he said. p. 210



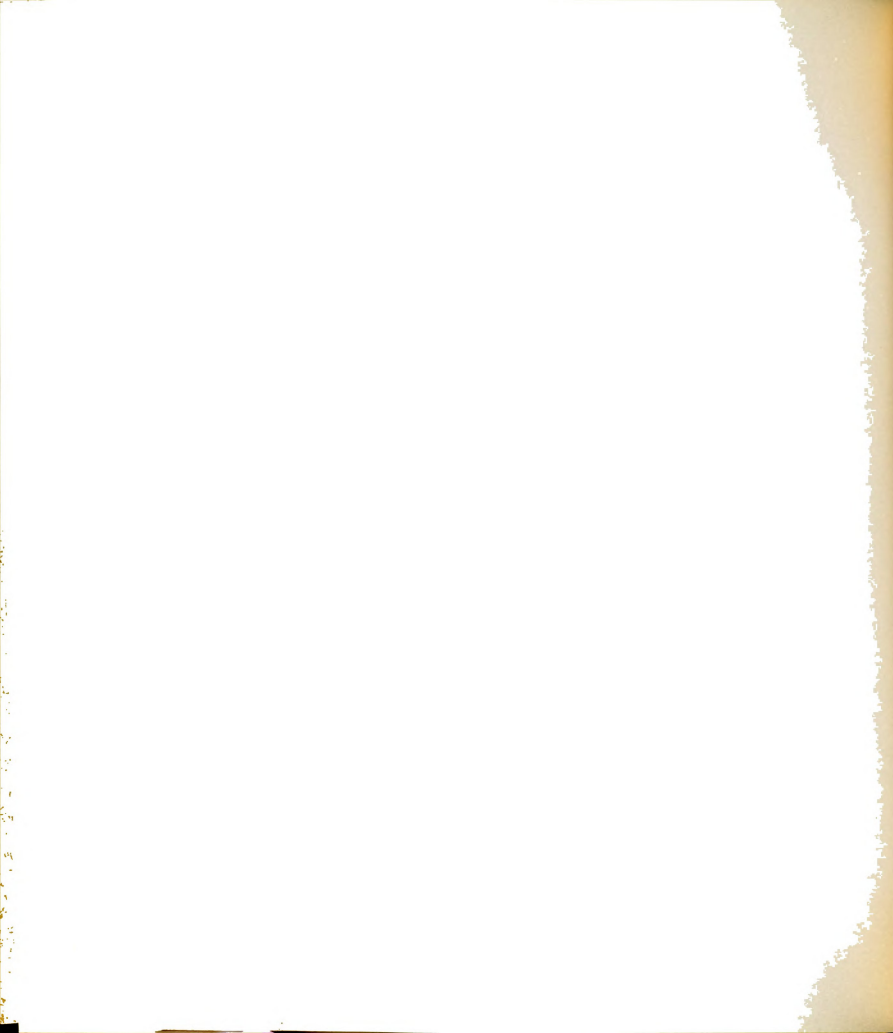
15. "What does he do that for?" I asked. p. 209
16. The old Mexican pointed at me and said, "He waits." p. 206
17. The judge knows he is great and doesn't care what other people think. p. 205
18. You do not find it all at once if you're hunting for it. p. 205
19. "So I take him down only rarely now." p. 211
20. "And all at once, you think that you are the one who is run-
ning away and who had better run fast to wherever you are
going because it will be dark soon. p. 81
21. "Yeah," I said to myself, "he still lives here." p. 206
22. "But you'll get a drink, Judge. I'm asking you to have one.
Have a drink with me, Judge." p. 49
23. "I wish you a good evening," the Scholarly Attorney said.
p. 208
24. All the money the judge wants is just enough money to make the
judge happy. p. 205
25. "I am raising you a hundred a month whether you want it or
not." p. 204
26. "Sadie," I said, "You know damned well they'd have to barbecue
the great wooly mastadon and use ten-dollar bills instead of
lettuce on the buns." p. 79
27. "I know it's a frame up," I said. "Everybody knows but Willie."
p. 80
28. "I got to think," he replied. "I don't know and I got to
think." p. 84
29. Somebody in the Harrison outfit got the idea which God knows
he didn't invent, of putting in a dummy who might split the
MacMurfee vote." p. 71
30. "You figure your candidate Willie has any vitamins?" p. 79
31. "It's going to be like that--it's always been that way, and
it'll keep on being like that." p. 153
32. "It's the old tonic, but it still soothes." p. 143
33. "Have a seat," the Boss said to Hugh Miller.
"No, thanks, Willie," Hugh Miller replied in his slow solemn
way. "But you sit down, Willie." p. 144
34. "You are saving White's hide, aren't you?" p. 144



35. "You know what I'm talking about," she affirmed, and leaned over the desk top toward me, shaking her finger at me, "and you sit there and smile that way and think you are so high-toned." p. 283
36. "Are you going to?"
"Perhaps. Later. After he goes to the Senate. Next year."
p. 345
37. "They are subject to your revision after you consult with the architect." p. 275
38. "I'm not blaming you, Jack. You're so jumpy and touchy." p. 259

Arrowsmith, Lewis, Sinclair, Grosset, New York, 1925

39. "We're working on the localization of brain functions." p. 300
40. Most of them grunted, "The Old Man's erupting again," and forgot him. . . p. 343
41. Irritably Martin thought, "Is he going into all this danger-of-rapid-success stuff again?" p. 338
42. "Our pathologist is leaving in a few weeks. You could do the job all right." p. 276
43. "Well--these darn studes, they aren't trying to learn science; they're simply learning a trade." p. 27
44. "Terry, it looks to me as if you thought I had a fine chance of not coming back with the notes myself." p. 367
45. "Tubbs is backing me, and if Gottlieb did--I'd see that it was to Gottlieb's advantage." p. 344
46. "We are coming out, I believe, of the stuffiness of safe and sane and incredibly dull provincialism." p. xi
47. Martin answered in the tone of Doc Vickerson's assistant in Elk Mills: "Oh--no--gee--I'm just grubbing along, I guess." p. 327
48. "I'm getting tired of it!" p. 338
49. "Things are happening, Martin, and I want you--no Science wants you!--to take your proper part in them." p. 455
50. "The rats aren't increasing; the cats kill 'em," said Kellet the Red Leg. p. 355
51. "But--I hope you're joking, Clif." p. 442



52. "Oh, those decent people! They're paying me--this is for four hundred and twenty dollars--they're paying me five thousand a year." p. 302
53. "We're just waiting for scientists like you to make the world secure for friendship." p. 337
54. "You're working up to become perfectly miserable if you can't enjoy being miserable. . . ." p. 371
55. "I don't think I am too fussy." p. 452
56. "Why, you poor skinny little agnostic, here you have a chance to see the Almighty's handiwork, and all you grab out of it is a feeling that you're real smart." p. 16
57. Hourly the University of Winnemac grows in numbers and influence. . . . p. 10
58. "How many of 'em do you find that're interested in the work Erlich is doing in Germany. . . ." p. 27
59. "He's a bachelor--gives up everything for work." p. 301
60. "I have for the future of American literature every hope and every eager belief." p. xi
61. "But Dr. Stokes insists that Dr. Herelle and you are right in calling bacteriophage an organism--" p. 383
62. "Aw, what's biting you!" said Terry feebly. p. 367
63. "It makes me tired to have you fall for his scientific tripe and not appreciate Stokes." p. 398
64. "They make me sick!" p. 27
65. "I mean it, no matter how much I make fools of your Board." p. 391
66. "Oh, yes, in this crisis they permit a Negro doctor to practice even among the whites!" p. 383
67. "I stand him only because i'm too much of a coward to risk his going around saying that in the days of my Success, I've gone back on my old friends." p. 443
68. "And he doesn't really mean half the rude things he says." p. 301
69. "Mart, my son," he roared, "do you realize that in this, what some might call a sordid task, we are learning things that will enable us to heal the bodies and comfort the souls of lost and unhappy folk?" p. 16

70. "Why, sir, I'd like to help you, if I can. I suppose you're cleaning up some things on the synthesis of antibodies." p. 70
71. "Oh, no; the bird that succeeds is the one that gets an office on a northeast corner, near a trolley car junction, with a phone number that'll be easy for patients to remember." p. 27
72. "...the fellow that gets ahead in medicine, is he the lad that knows his pathology?" p. 72
73. In March 1925, Arrowsmith was published, Mr. Lewis personal favorite; the only one he says "he can stand reading." p. viii
74. "What work do you want to do here?" p. 289
75. "You want the luxury of harrowing yourself by thinking what a poor, bawling, wretched story-book wife I am." p. 371
76. His second wife, Dorothy Thompson, the distinguished journalist, whom he married in 1928 prefers Arrowsmith but believes Babbit is a better piece of work. p. viii
77. "What you need is exercise and faith..." p. 77
78. "I announce my agreement with him complete." p. 391
79. As primly as the oldest most staid scientist in the Institute, Martin protested, "Oh, she belongs to a very nice family." p. 443
80. Carl Van Doren claims that by nature this son of the wind-swept prairies has always passionately demanded that human life be beautiful and splendid. p. v
81. "By the way, I think we'll get rid of Pearl Robbins; she's been useful but now she considers herself indispensable." p. 456
82. Today in New York from his tower, "high up in the air and surrounded by a view on four sides," he contemplates twentieth century American life and continues to extend the circle of his panoramic exposures. p. 82
83. "He detests me, among others." p. 301
84. The title implies that Ann Vickers is the most carefully drawn of all the women in his novels. p. x
85. When he writes a novel, he will travel to the ends of the earth to get data. p. xiv
86. "...but I don't quite see why we should go to a house where the host apparently enjoys flatly contradicting you..." p. 452

87. . . . in Arrowsmith he created in Dr. Martin Arrowsmith a man who struggles against such success, a success that would thwart his search for truth. p. ix
88. "When you're as old as I am, you'll understand that the glory of being a doctor is that you can teach folks high ideals while you soothe their tortured bodies." p. 17
89. "Now, Dr. Arrowsmith, just what is this you are discovering?" p. 337
90. "You're precisely like these business men you're always cursing because they can't see anything in life beyond their soap-factories or their banks!" p. 457
91. "Look here, Martin, I'm glad you're keeping on with your science, but if I were you, I wouldn't, I think, waste too much energy on mere curiosity." p. 285
92. "What is this mysterious discovery you're making, Arrowsmith?" p. 331
93. "You may have hit on one of the discoveries of a generation; the sort of thing that Mr. McGurk and I are looking for." p. 332
94. "Can't you see how much I am enjoying my chance to display my knowledge?" p. 294
95. . . . Gottlieb clung to his own laboratory and to his narrow office as a cat clings to its cushion under a table. p. 346

The Atlantic, August, 1952

96. It says only that reporters, editors, and commentators shall do their best to make sure that the information the public receives is factually accurate . . . p. 34
97. Royalty marries only royalty. p. 67
98. Bats help keep the balance of nature and therefore are very good things to have around. p. 39
99. Moreover, individualism has its arrogance. p. 67
100. Yet these outfits live, and must live by competition; and we are better off with that competition, whatever its shortcomings, than we should be without it. p. 33

101. But even for us with much more latitude than the ordinary reporter, it is becoming harder and harder to get at the three-dimensional truth in Washington--partly because the news becomes more and more complex; partly because so much of it is coming to consist of never ending serial melodramas, like soap operas on the radio, or those newspaper cartoon strips that used to be comic. p. 36
102. These groups solicit and spend funds which they are not required to report. p. 45
103. ... and it carries on the good work by procedures that are so far novel and indeed unique ... p. 36
104. Well--a man who knows that his picture is going to be printed in the American papers where his family will see it wants to look well. p. 34
105. What every wire service wants is to get newspapers to use its story rather than its competitor's stories. p. 33
106. Competition means an over-emphasis on speed. p. 32
107. . . . what concerns me is that its procedures make it extremely difficult for reporters to find out the truth and pass it on to the public. p. 37
108. But this entails serious dangers. p. 38
109. Adequate coverage of such stories entails reporting not only what a man says now, but the very different thing he may have said last year. p. 36
110. . . . but tradition forbids doing it to one of our fellow citizens when he is engaged in controversy. p. 35
111. Objectivity requires me, however, to report that those procedures have been praised by many people. . . p. 37
112. . . . the one thing I feel safe in predicting is that some American reporter will end it a few days before it actually ends. p. 33

The Caine Mutiny, Wouk, Herman, Doubleday and Co., New York, 1952

113. "Well, just to be able to say something, if somebody asks me what I did in Yosemite." p. 194
114. "Willie, I'm no charity case--maybe I'm overplaying the scene, trying to cover up for looking so ratty." p. 372
115. "Now, Tom, what kind of radio guard are we standing at the moment?" he shouted. p. 135



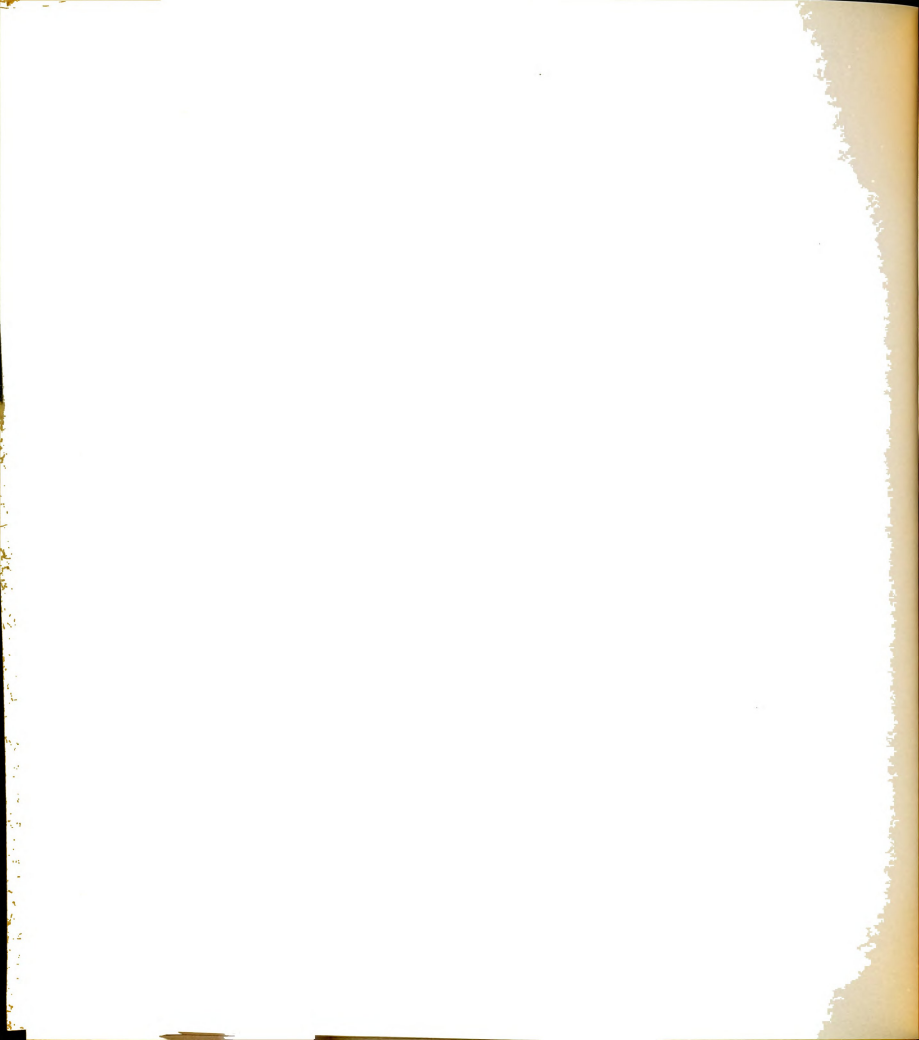
- 116. "He's writing some kind of novel." p. 94
- 117. "Well, I'm willing to take the chance." p. 215
- 118. "I accept what you say, and I'm willing to forget this incident." p. 218
- 119. "I'm wondering if you don't think it's a pretty sloppy lish-
- 120. "If we delay for an hour it'll be a damn tough approach." p. 135
- 121. May Wynn regarded him with narrowed eyes. "What are you thinking?" p. 13
- 122. "You're starting a new line. Good luck." p. 3
- 123. It's surprising, how little I have to say to you in these last words. p. 61
- 124. "The Navy's spending a lot of time and work on me." p. 30
- 125. "I'm not suggesting a thing," Queeg said with a sly grin. p. 431
- 126. "This Harding has Caine blood in him," Paymeter said. "He's starting off right---" p. 71
- 127. "She's running convoy." p. 58
- 128. "I'm roasting, I want to go." p. 196
- 129. "Call me if anything else comes in." p. 148
- 130. "Are you predicting that Commander Queeg will perjure himself on the stand?"
"I'm not predicting anything." p. 425
- 131. "The customers aren't paying any less for their beer because May has a cold." p. 373
- 132. "It simply takes a little time to see the true picture, and I'm passing on to you the fruits of my analysis." p. 97
- 133. "Are we leaving Pearl for good?" p. 65
- 134. "I'm leaving all my property to your mother." p. 61
- 135. "Well, well. My Willie is keeping secrets from his old mother, eh?" p. 194
- 136. "You're keeping queer hours---" p. 369
- 137. "It's irritating when they act as though we're fools and they know all wisdom--" p. 141



138. "They're not hanging the responsibility on me for missing tomorrow's exercises and maybe breaking some thick sailor's neck." p. 162
139. "Willie, you're growing up fast." p. 209
140. "Steve," said the novelist, "I'm gettin cold on this deal." p. 314
141. "I'm gunning for that little squirt and I'm going to get him, believe you me." p. 217
142. "We're in trouble with this joker, Steve. I'm not fooling." p. 161
143. "Do you get a chance to play the piano?" p.30
144. So Keefer phrased his answer carefully, "Well, sir, we're following standard Earl Harbor procedure." p. 136
145. "All right with you, Mister Keith, if I smoke?" p. 81
146. "Mister Keefer, we are not discussing anything out tonight's watch," he said, "and be careful of your tone in addressing me." p. 142
147. "Well, then, we'll find them--I'm not disobeying orders on account of some bad weather--" p. 338
148. "You think fishing's useful. Well I think manning navy ships is useful. They're coming in goddam handy at this point---" p. 204
149. "But I am coming to believe that though you are pretty spoiled and soft at the surface, you are tough enough at the core." p. 60
150. "You guys mind if I turn on the radio?" p. 138
151. "I'm not commanding that tug, sir", Queeg said with a sly little smile at his hands. p. 167
152. Willie was tired and the sarcasm irritated him. "No-body's complaining," he said. p. 77
153. "You're changing a little. What's doing it? The Navy?" p. 30
154. If you sell out your time for a comfortable life and give up your natural work, I think you lose the exchange. p. 61



155. "Do you know whether there's one playing in town?" p. 211
156. Take care of your mother if she lives to be very old and be kind to her if you come back from the war with enough strength to break away from her. p. 62
157. "All intelligent conversation is playing on words," said Keefer. p. 90
158. "He's talking about your job on the Caine, Willie. Good luck." p. 115
159. "I'm trying to catch up with the U.S.S. Caine, sir." p. 57
160. "I'm beginning to think you're very silly---well," she added, her face flushing, "stop looking at me like that-----" p. 15
161. "I'm just beginning to wonder, that's all," said Keefer, very low. p. 151
162. Willie heard the helmsman yell in the wheelhouse. "She's beginning to answer, sir. Heading 087!" p. 325
163. "But I'm beginning to wonder whether it's sensible to give up all my days and nights for a salary." p. 89
164. "Honey, maybe you ought to have colds more often. You're really putting out tonight." p. 373
165. "I was a damn fool to come here, and I'm going straight home day after tomorrow." p. 196
166. "I'm flying back Sunday morning." p. 363
167. "I only work nights, anyway." p. 35
168. "What goes on in the paint locker this time of night?" p. 139
169. "But I wonder whether twenty-four hours from now your phrasing might not be a little fairer---" p. 111
170. "Well it (premonition) goes away when I don't think about it." p. 204
171. "If he brings a great novel off the Caine, it'll be a far greater contribution to America than a lot of de-codes." p. 95
172. "It's happening in the whole squadron, Steve." p. 206
173. "I'm staying up here if I get a court martial for it." p. 335



174. "I'm finished now, but the last word on my life rests with you." p. 31
175. "How do things stand between you and her?" p. 207
176. "I look back on my life, Willie, and there's not much there." p. 59
177. "Can he touch?"
"Hell, no, sir. Hardly gets past his knees." p. 5
178. "I'm asking you about her singing." p. 14
179. "You are accusing Mr. Maryk of perjury?"
"I'm not accusing him. He's accused enough as it stands." p. 427
180. "Why, Willie, who's accusing anybody of lying?" p. 321
181. "I'm asking you to waste my time. Sit down." p. 351
182. "It's amazing," he said, "what a cat nap will do for that poor fagged-out son of a bitch." p. 130
183. "Well, in that case I'm not addressing you. But those whom the shoe fits --well, they'd better get on the ball, that's all." p. 151
184. "Then along comes the war, and you get a Queeg over you, and you scream bloody murder." p. 204
185. "You go by the book and you'll get no argument from me. You deviate from the book and you better have a half dozen good reasons--and you'll still get a hell of an argument from me." p. 131
186. Dr. Keith smiled and nodded. "You're learning fast!" p. 41
187. "By George, these reserves bring some life into things." p. 57
188. "My father runs a fruit store in the Bronx." p. 16
189. "You probably worship Satan in that private stateroom." p. 92
190. "Keith," he said at last, "you put me into the peculiar position of wanting to apologize to you for the Navy's laws." p. 42
191. "Why don't you visit me down at school? It's kind of interesting." p. 30

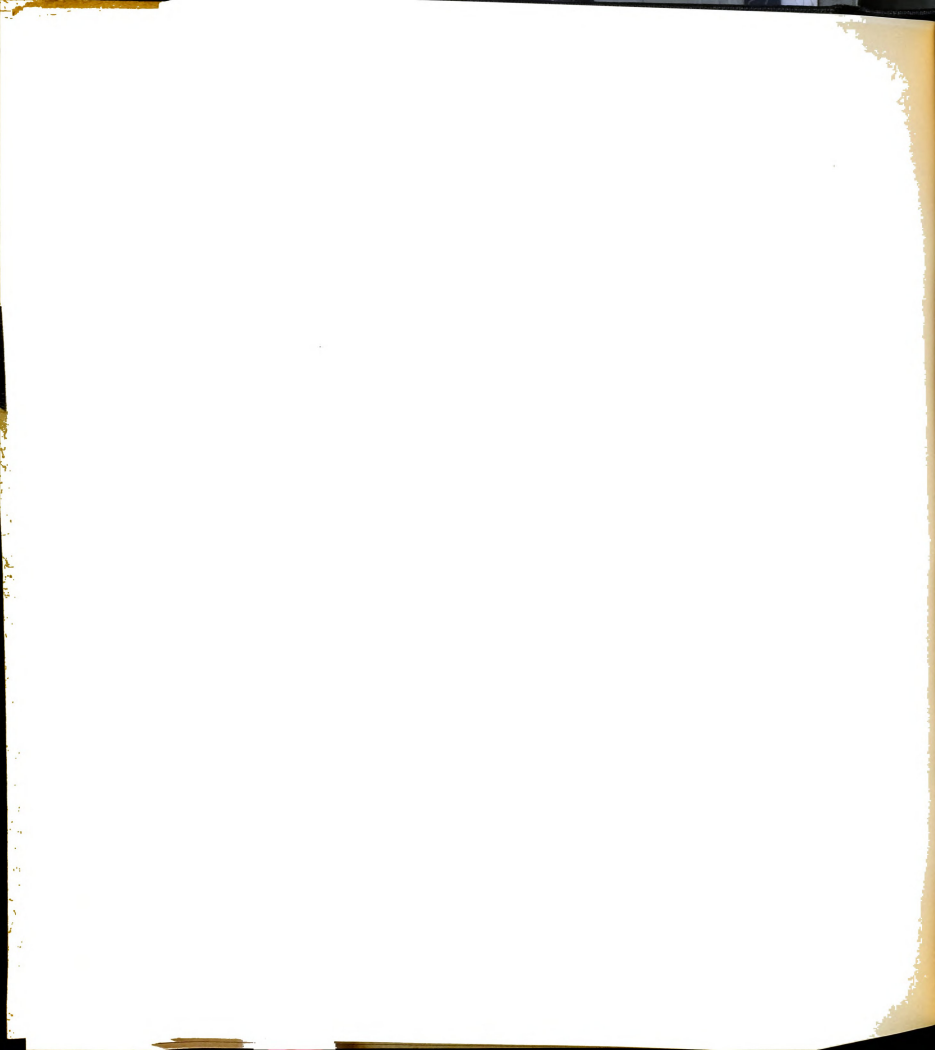


192. "I wonder why? Scrape her down to flat bright metal and give her a good double coat and that ought to be the end of it for a long while." p. 104
193. "It works! Thanks, Rollo--" p. 24
194. "Tom's high-brow, pretty much, writes short stories--plays--had some stuff in magazines." p. 64
195. "It's perfectly true that a love of fine art is a function of leisure, but that in no way vitiates the validity of art." p. 17
196. "Just for a while--a half hour, maybe an hour. You take in a matinee." p. 28
197. "Yes, as a matter of fact, Tom, you take this report of Keith's and study it." p. 173
198. "It tells me nothing I didn't know before, and explains nothing I wanted explained." p. 172
199. "A Title B inventory takes two weeks." p. 120
200. "You tell me a better way to get my wishes obeyed on this ship and I'll take it under advisement." p. 183
201. "Of course it's true! Do you take me for a liar, sir?" p. 171
202. He began to pick up the chess pieces.
"Game's over, I take it." p. 139
203. "I take it you don't like the Caine." p. 66
204. "He tells me you're working on a novel." p. 96
205. "She says the captain was out late last night and is still asleep." p. 205
206. "Captain de Vriess says for me to take you two on a tour of the ship. Come along." p. 74
207. "He says its a lost case and all the defense counsel can do is get himself permanently fowled up with the Navy--" p. 350
208. "Stands a fine OOD watch under way." p. 123
209. "When will I see you again, dear?"
"Next Saturday, Mom, if I stay out of trouble." p. 31
210. "Between you and me, these damn buckets ought to be melted down to razor blades. They roll and pitch too much." p. 127

211. "Captain," he said plaintively, "I plan for my wife and me to drink up my year's pay, and anything I can save will be s big help." p. 177
212. "You pass that word." p. 190
213. "As a matter of fact, I make the best pizza in the world." p. 16
214. "Well, if you've seen it, what do you make of it?" p. 148
215. "By making you write a report about a silly thing, he makes you sweat-- and that's all he's after, to make you sweat." p. 165
216. "Brother, it makes no difference." p. 6
217. "I love to sing, I guess I always will." p. 89
218. "Don't they look nice together, folks?" p. 33
219. "You lie. This is the hottest, stuffiest restaurant in New York." p. 15
220. "Well," said Keggs mournfully, "looks like we're room-mates." p. 6
221. "You keep little old Keefer and the admiral happy a few weeks, that's all." p. 58
222. "If you turn out well, I can still claim some kind of success in the afterworld, if there is one." p. 61
223. "Now it happens I had occasion to report to Com Ser Pac recently that the engineering performance of this ship was below par, and it's entirely possible that that's why our orders were changed." p. 152
224. "Look, man. One of us gets out with you, see, and hangs onto the window. And you hang on to him. That does it." p. 24
225. "That hurts, doesn't it, Tom?" said De Vriess, grinning. p. 89
226. "These are strong words, but I won't cross them out. They don't hurt too much and, furthermore, my hand isn't the one to cross them out anymore." p. 61
227. "How does the ship handle?" p. 124
228. "Marty Rubin is my best friend in the world, and I include you."
"I gather that. You're inseparable." p. 32



229. "I gather," Grace went on, "that you divide the blame among your exec, your first lieutenant, your chief boatswain's mate, and your predecessor, Captain De Vriess." p. 166
230. "Let me worry about landing this ship. You give me a course to Oakland." p. 186
231. "Do you get a chance to play the piano?" p. 80
232. "Perhaps because I know I'll never see you again, I find myself sentimentalizing over you." p. 60
233. "You engage his loyalty and he'll deliver the goods." p. 123
234. "Wonderful relaxation," said the Iron Duke. "Too bad it eats up so much time." p. 139
235. "You just do as you're goddam told and don't go thinking -- please!" p. 155
236. "Does your opinion count, too, Mr. Keith?" p. 12
237. "Sir," he said to the captain, "is there a standard time for launching the gear?"
"Book calls for one hour,--" said De Vriess. "The standard on this ship is thirty minutes." p. 102
238. "Tootsie, this fella comes from Princeton." p. 83
239. "Wasted hours destroy your life just as surely at the beginning as at the end--only at the end it becomes more evident." p. 61
240. "Sharks don't bother you if you keep moving." p. 104
241. "You break your back, yes, but at the end of the run you've got fish." p. 203
242. "I don't blame you. How on earth did you get past the receiving station?" p. 5
243. "Steve,...don't ask me what goes on in his mind." p. 161
244. "They're moving you fellows up now pretty fast." p. 121
245. "I'm meeting May Wynn here." p. 368
246. "I'm putting you in hack for three days, Willie -- the same length of time you held up that message. Perhaps that will drive the feathers out of your head." p. 113
247. "Sir, we're shipping water on the....bridge!" said Maryck shrilly. p. 337
248. "They're taking physicals in there, madam. There are men walking around with nothing on." p. 3



249. "Ye gods,...do you get all that stuff in four years of college?" p. 20
250. "Sir, I may be chubby, but I play six hours of tennis at a stretch. I climb mountains." p. 5
251. "We do shows at ten, twelve and two. You're supposed to be around at eight-thirty." p. 14
252. "I take it all back. You win!" she cried. p. 39
253. "I keep him around to remind me that there are decent men in the world...." p. 32
254. "There is a lordosis, no doubt of it."
"Well, do we survey him out?" p. 5
255. "Sorry, mother. I'm meeting May a little later." p. 211
256. "I'm having the family over tomorrow night. I imagined to-night would be taken." p. 266
257. "Sometimes I get so bored," said Keefer. p. 141
258. "Why not? When a man's in jail for a year they don't let him out for two weeks at Christmas, do they?" p. 183
259. "Damn, doesn't Keefer ever enter corrections?" p. 94
260. "Nothing like a little setting-up exercises," he said, with drunken savoir faire.
"Hell, no," said Keefer. "Especially three o'clock in the afternoon. Ah never miss it myself." p. 7
261. "Captain, I'm sorry, sir, you're a sick man. I'm temporarily relieving you of this ship, under Article 164 of Navy Regulations." p. 339
262. "I actually enjoy writing Navy letters." p. 165
263. "You usually fall into bed when you get home." p. 19
264. "Marty, when are we cutting that damned audition record?"
p. 367
265. "Don't suffer in silence in this outfit, boy. Speak up when something damn silly is happening to you." p. 23
266. "But the one per cent of chance and creative action on which the history of the world is hanging right now, you'll find on carriers." p. 90
267. "Sir, if you think I'm lying about that dispatch, you can check in the radio shack..." p. 321



268. "It seems to me that she or the Navy, or both, are having quite a good effect on you." p. 50
269. "...do you think I'm the one who's restricting you?" p. 142
270. "All my drafts sound as though I'm kidding the skipper, or insulting him--- " p. 165
271. "I can't jump at your words and hold you to them just because you're feeling sheepish, and sorry for me." p. 199
272. "Well, that's it, sir. That's why I'm checking with you." p. 85
273. "Well, you're quite right there, it certainly can stand improving--but--well, then, why are you making such a botch of it?" p. 320
274. "I don't know what you're talking about," said Queeg. p. 339
275. "I don't like what's happening." p. 196
276. "That's what I'm beginning to wonder about." p. 148
277. "I'll surprise you--just pretend we're meeting for the first time at seven-thirty." p. 372
278. "I just want you to know I'm making every effort to see to it that you all get some kind of leave despite the curtailment of overhaul." p. 216
279. "Don't forget you're reading the board of investigation's recommendations, Greenwald, not the formal charge." p. 351
280. The lively zest that comes over a ship's company upon getting under way--no matter where bound--infected him. p. 143
281. "I have a mother and a father with a fruit store that doesn't pay, one brother in the army and another, a plain bum that we never see except when he needs money to get out of trouble." p. 36
282. "But I am damn well responsible for anything that happens on this ship from here on in." p. 182
283. "Your first task is to see to it that every man on this ship begins to tuck his shirttail inside his pants." p. 153
284. "The fact that some officer happens to be uninformed on communication procedure is no excuse for you." p. 100
285. "An officer of the deck has no alibis. He is responsible for every goddamned thing that happens during his watch, every goddamned thing, do you hear?" p. 172



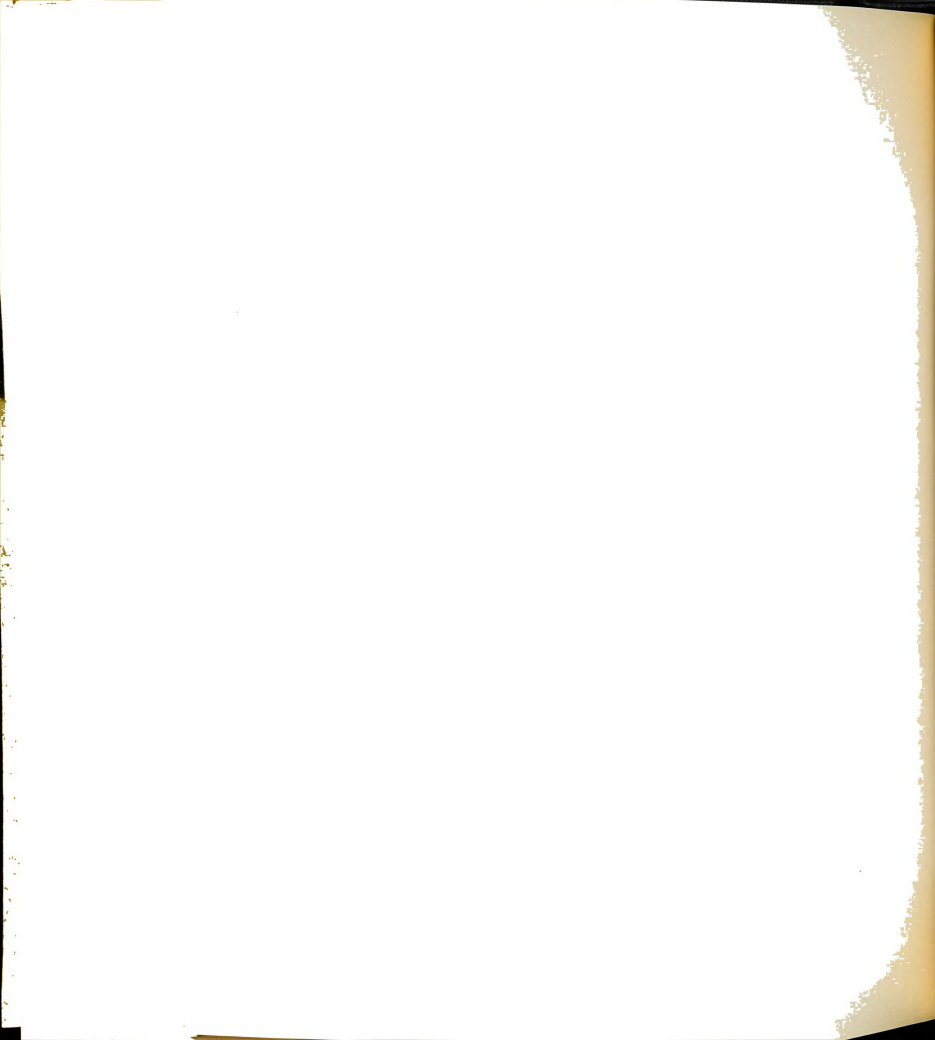
286. "I can stand by while you shoot a few approaches, and getting away from alongside, and maybe some power turns and so forth_____ " p. 124
287. "They got married Protestant, and it didn't last long, and she hawled off home to Boston where she comes from, with Tom." p. 64
288. "Where do we get this information, sir?" p. 77
289. "Got any idea where we stash the new communicator?" p. 70
290. "I don't want to see a flapping shirttail again while I'm captain of this ship, I don't care what steps you take." p. 153
291. "What do we do now, Mr. Paynter?" said Meatball. p. 68
292. "Where to, mister?"
"I don't care. Up and down Riverside Drive. Just so we get back here by midnight." p. 35
293. "By the time you read this letter, I think I will be dead." p. 59
294. "Whatever assignment they give you on the Caine remember that it's worthy of your best efforts." p. 61
295. "Well," she said defensively, "it isn't every day he goes to fight a war." p. 4
296. "I think appreciating Dickens goes with ten thousand in the bank." p. 17
297. He was ordered to strip naked, and his clothes were carried off in a heap by a burly sailor.
"Hey, when do I get those back?" p. 4
298. "Think of me and what I might have been, Willie, at the time in your life when you come to crossroads." p. 62
299. "Break your back, and the market is never right---when you catch shad, nobody wants shad---when you catch mackeral, there's so much goddamn mackeral you can't sell it for manure---and that's how it goes." p. 206
300. "Don't be absurd, Willie----Just when your career begins to look promising?" p. 10
301. "When we go out this morning, you shoot the sun lines," said the exec. p. 317
302. "In fact, you don't know what you're talking about when you discuss mental illness. Is that right?" p. 423



303. "I'm not delighted," said the captain after a silence.
"When I send an officer after the dope, I expect him to return with the dope, and to use whatever ingenuity is called for to get it-----That's all." p. 150
304. "Emotionally you are about fifteen, and when your hair stands up in back you look like a rabbit, which is frequently." p. 36
305. "Training?"
"I understand you had five months in Communication school." p. 134
306. "Mr. Keefer, the captain has returned aboard, and Mr. Gorton wants to see you in his room. On the double." p. 141
307. "But you want to stay in the Navy, don't you?" p. 315
308. "I don't know what I'm going to do. It's all so far in the future."
"I know what you're going to do." p. 209
309. "What, sir?"
"You know damn well what" p. 150
310. "Then I assume you all know exactly what I'm driving at, is that correct?" p. 152
311. "But as I say, sir, I accept full responsibility for whatever happened, even if it means a general court martial---" p. 169
312. "I approve of the whole design." p. 97
313. "And all the guys who don't belong in here--well--well--stay here, and keep your faces closed so the watch-standers can do their duty-----" p. 335
314. "Fine. Ambition becomes an ensign." p. 83
315. "I don't care. I picked the Navy. I'll see this stupid war through in the Navy." p. 45
316. "I don't envy you the experience itself, but I do envy you the strengthening you're going to derive from it." p. 60
317. "I envy you your uniform."
"I envy you yours." p. 31
318. "Well, then, how do you expect to get to it on a scooter?" p. 56
319. "The worst of it is, I now feel your mother would have stood by me and lived modestly if I'd really insisted." p. 59



320. "You probably feel you have a measureless supply of it, but you haven't." p. 61
321. "Ah, this is a great coke. I feel good." p. 138
322. "I hate to be the guy who does this to you." p. 65
323. "When you hear a buzzer ring twice, that's it. Game's over." p. 138
324. "But please, Willie, don't say those things---he hears." p. 139
325. "I hear you're going to relieve me instead of Paynt." p. 327
326. "I hope," said Keggs, "that this Keefer doesn't turn out to be too much of a drip." p. 6
327. "I hope you know something about communications, Keith." p. 70
328. "She can still visit me here. I hope you will too." p. 45
329. "Hope I see 'em again." p. 75
330. "You'll love Dickens someday."
"I hope so." p. 17
331. "I hope you find a wonderful girl someday." p. 34
332. "That's exactly what I intend to do, and don't kid yourselves about that!" p. 152
333. "I imagine," said Queeg casually, "that it's mainly a matter of towing rigs of one sort and another." p. 122
334. "You guys mind if I turn the radio on?" p. 138
335. "When they need you, they'll call you." p. 10
336. "I presume you've checked out with Adams?" p. 84
337. "I regret to say that I'm displeased." p. 111
338. "You're in the Navy now."
"I realize that, sir." p. 111
339. "Sir--sir, if you recall, I recommended that you allow Mr. Maryck to recover----" p. 164
340. "I regard both those men as excellent officer material." p. 123
341. "...and as I say, I regard you as a splendid wardroom of officers." p. 132



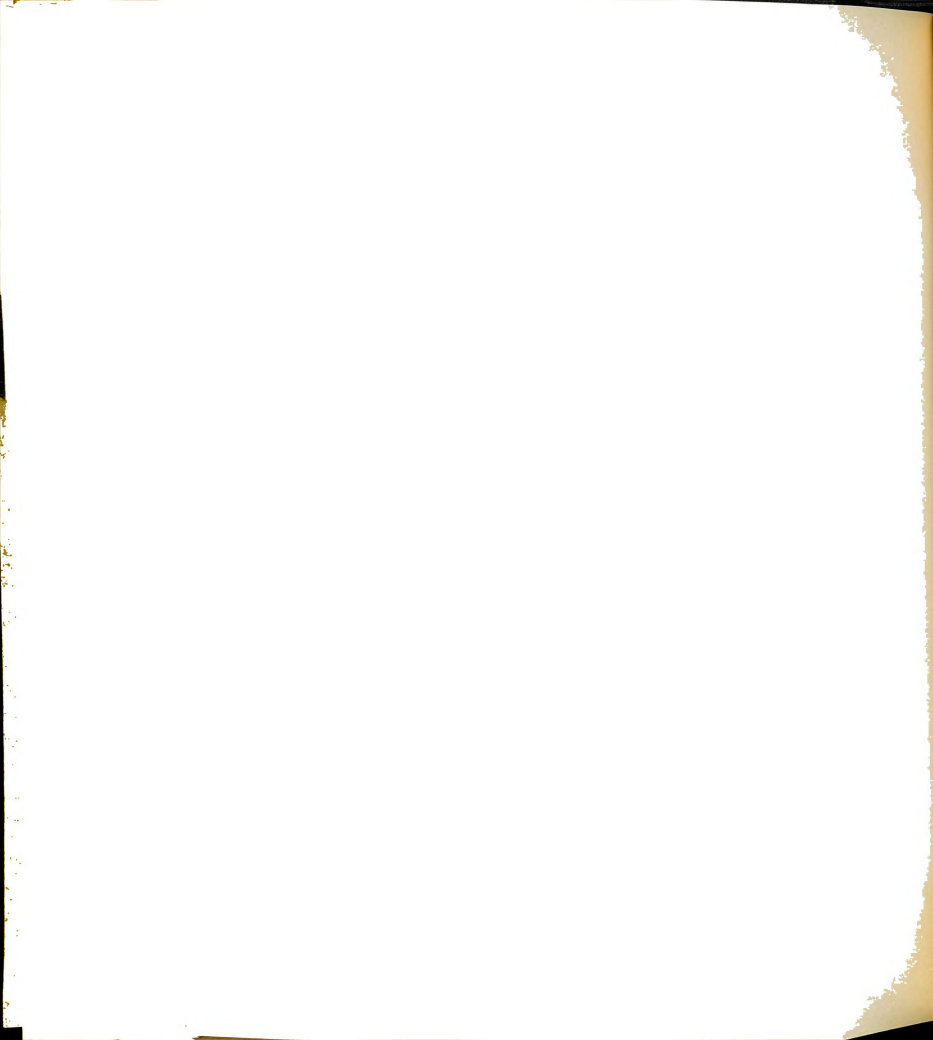
342. "She regards you as a hopeless baby who will have to be coddled all through life." p. 60
343. "I don't like to wreck a man's naval career even when he regards it lightly, sir." p. 111
344. "I don't remember any of those bloody compartments." p. 11
345. "I don't suppose there are many officers in the Navy who can say their departments are in such shape--" p. 135
346. "I suppose all the reports are up to date?" p. 124
347. "I'm not suggesting a thing," Queeg said with a sly grin." p. 431
348. "I strongly suspect you'll find plenty of them there on the Caine." p. 60
349. "Am I seeing things?" said Willie when the cab pulled up in front of the Grotto Club. p. 373
350. "I see the gig," said Maryck, going to the rail and semaphoring with both arms. p. 316
351. "The point is, if you can understand it now, you can be philosophic, and take anything that comes-----" p. 141
352. "Great," said Willie.
"We understand each other." p. 16
353. "I understand how you feel about your first command." p. 167
354. "There must be blueprints of this ship somewhere. Why don't we get hold of them and-----" p. 78
355. "How does Mozart go in a Jersey dive?" p. 18
356. "Why doesn't the Navy send him back to high school to mature?" p. 87
357. "Ah had me a farewell party last night---to end all farewell parties. Why do we do it to ourselves fellas?" p. 7
358. "How does a man get command of a ship?" p. 86
359. "Well why don't you sit down and bat that assignment out now?" p. 95
360. "Just let me look at your figure sometime before you go." p. 12
361. "Oh, Willie, wait at least until you come back again." p. 210
362. "I'll repeat it for you tonight, after I talk to her," said Willie. p. 200



363. "We're going to lie off Oakland for a while before we tie up at the pier." p. 185
364. "Lay off the pork till you get your sea legs." p. 184
365. "It's how I figure it, Stillwell, but unless I tell you otherwise, and I'll find out pretty soon, well you can count on it." p. 175
366. "I think—that you may as well stack my gear here until I talk to the captain." p. 120
367. "Maybe you better secure on that stuff for a while, Tom -- at least while you're on watch--until this new skipper gets squared away." p. 140
368. "We can take her out for a couple of runs before you take over." p. 124
369. "Fiasco! In an official mailgram! I'd sure as hell like to know why he calls it a fiasco." p. 153
370. I suppose I should be in the hospital at this moment (two nights before you leave) but I hate to spoil your departure---" p. 59
371. "Mind if I keep my coat on?" p. 12
372. "I've got to shower before I curdle." p. 70
373. "But I think, after all, I will mail you a Bible before I go into the hospital." p. 61
374. "Perhaps that's why I let 'em pile up." p. 96
375. "Or...we can put you on temporary duty here in the officer pool till she gets back to Pearl." p. 59
376. "What do you mean, bilged?"
"Don't you know how they work it?" p. 7
377. "Why don't you ask Personnel next door?" p. 56
378. "Why don't you send in another transfer request, Tom?"
said the captain. p. 90

Christian Science Monitor, October 26, 1953

379. His very expression of preference for a Republican Congress after the next election is evidence that he is not intending to try to break down the two-party system.
p. 1



Collier's, November 13, 1953

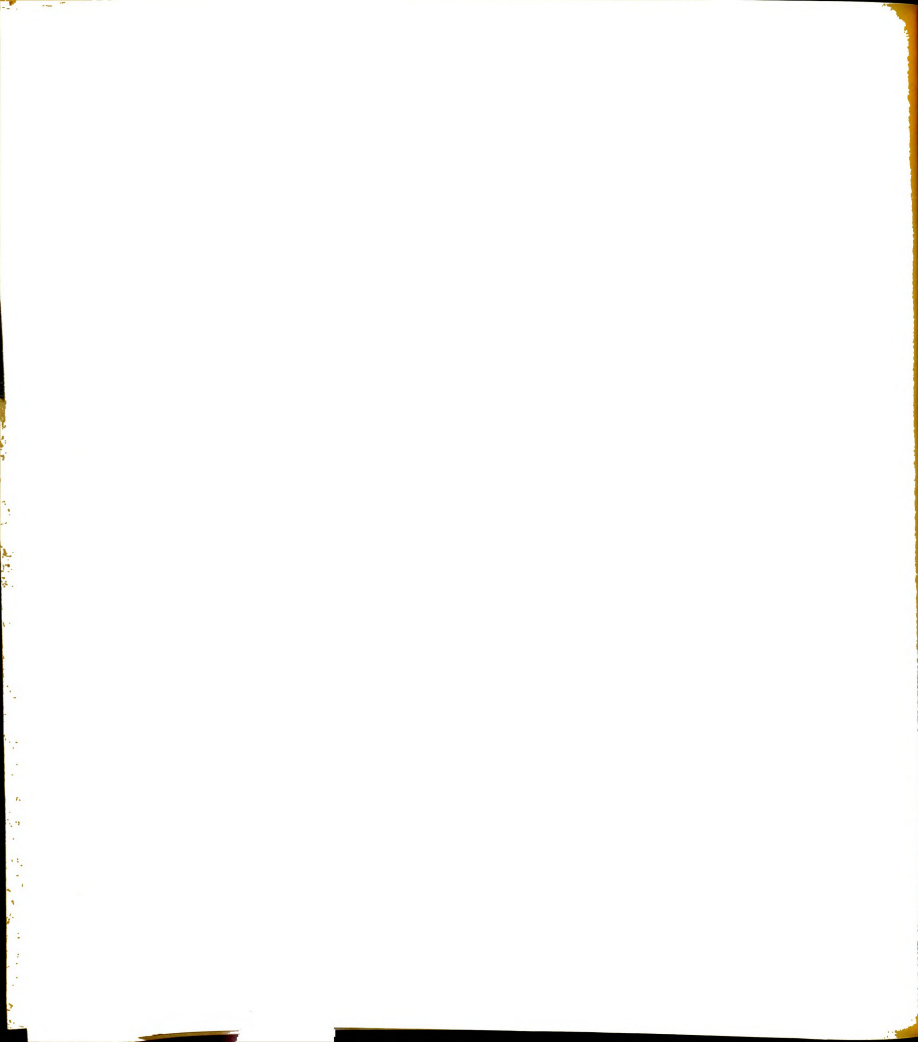
380. One professor says there's a sort of timer in your sub-conscious that helps wake you up at the right time--if you concentrate on it before you go to sleep... Now before you go to bed don't eat more than you would in the Rockies--say a glass of milk and a cookie or two. Before you get into bed, put your window shades up...Before you fall asleep, concentrate on the time you want to wake up.
p. 90

Death of A Salesman, Miller, Arthur, Bantam Books, Inc., New York, 1951

381. "Mom's hearing that." p. 23

Focus, Miller, Arthur, Popular Library, New York, 1945

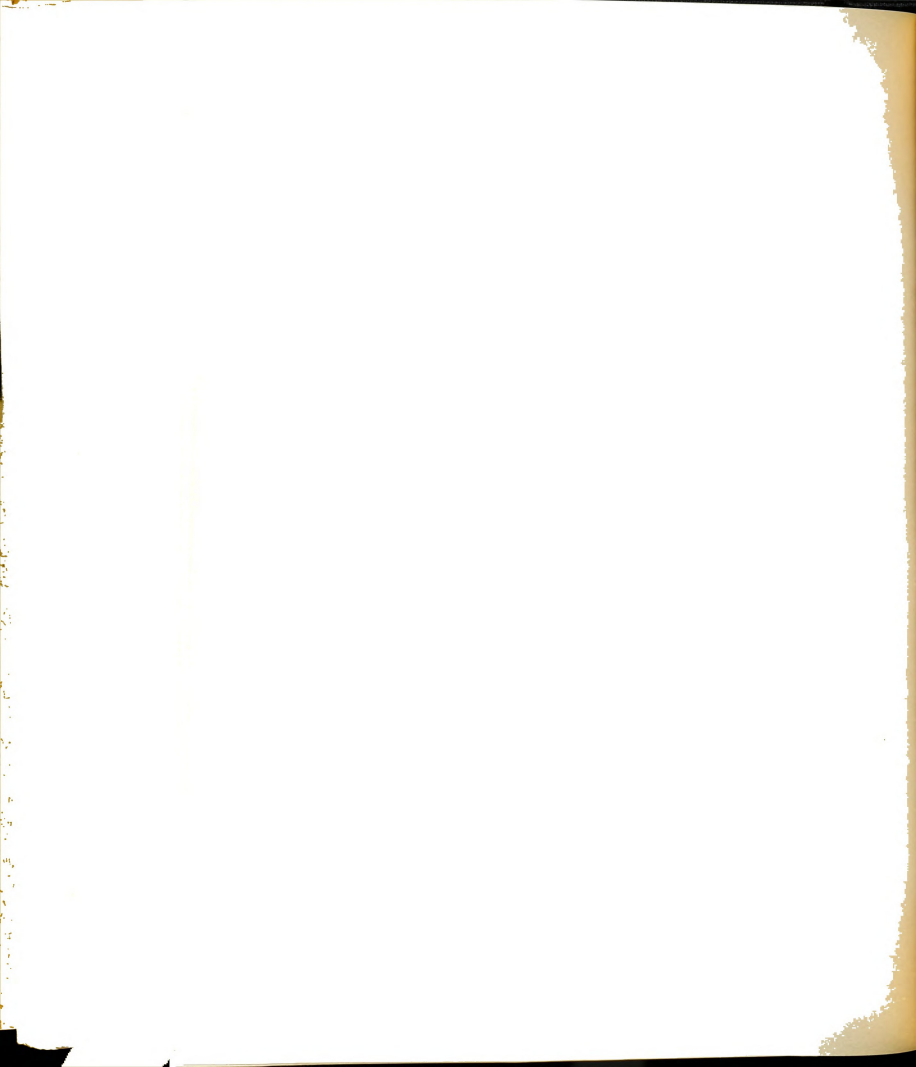
382. "They're just waiting for the war to be over to bust loose."
p. 179
383. "I'm wondering whether it's right for them to take it upon themselves to warn him." p. 170
384. "They're all watching us," she whispered gleefully from behind his back." p. 97
385. "I'm telling you what I know, Lully and you're going to listen to me." p. 116
386. "Mr. Ardell's gone out. I'm taking over till he gets back."
p. 69
387. "We'll forget that. I'm not saying you could've or you couldn'tve." p. 152
388. "We're suffering for no good reason." p. 169
389. "Is Mr. Sullivan around? He'd re----"
"He's swimming," the old man said, his head unmoving, "but he couldn't help you." p. 99
390. "I'm not selling you anything, I'm just saying----" p. 22
391. "We'll go to the Beverley, heh?" she asked.
"Fine. It's closer anyway. Who's playing?" p. 174
392. "Oh, you're looking for a position with us." p. 52
393. "I'm inquiring, yes," he agreed with a deep forward nod.
p. 52
394. "What's he having, a party?" p. 107



395. "And now he's here. And that means one thing. They're getting together." p. 115
396. "They're not getting away with it. Don't you worry." p. 167
397. "I gave you my honest opinion."
"I'm giving you my honest opinion too," Finkelstein said,
his voice quavering. p. 160
398. "I'm not giving up my house, Fred." p. 155
399. "I thought this kind of excitement blew over in California,
but it's getting bigger instead of smaller." p. 172
400. "They're getting something to wash it away with. What will
be, mister?" p. 130
401. "What are you going to do, stand out all night to see they
don't do it?" p. 108
402. "I know, but it is. They're doing what they believe." p. 180
403. "I'm not complaining about that; I didn't marry you for that."
p. 167
404. "I never saw such Jew hate as there is here. New York is
crawling with it." p. 114
405. "What are you talking about, Gertrude? I don't understand
what you're talking about." p. 107
406. "I'm talking, Fred, and I'm telling you what I'm going to
do," p. 155
407. "Mr. Newman--you are talking like this never happened be-
fore." p. 159
408. "I'm trying to remember the company he's with." p. 56
409. "But I try to stop my thoughts about them." p. 146
410. "Well, he's asking for it, isn't he? They warned him time
and again to get out." p. 170
411. "First, I'm asking you to understand me; to you I aint
pleading for anything." p. 145
412. "Boston is cleansing herself, ladies and gentlemen, Boston
is standing fast!" p. 137
413. "I don't give a damn who tries it or how many, I'm staying
put." p. 155
414. "I'm living like a horse that goes into his stable every
night after work." p. 167



415. "Aren't you going to hang your jacket up?" his mother asked, as he started up the stairs. p. 37
416. He said, "Frankly, we aren't looking for anyone at the moment, but-----" p. 52
417. "What are they standing around in the cold for?" p. 175
418. "Where are you going? Go to another place," she demanded. "We're going home," he said. p. 101.
419. "I don't know. I'm always making something up." p. 111
420. "It's coming all right. I don't know when, but it's coming." p. 158
421. "Only reason most of the block moved way out here was to get away from that element, and now they're trailin' us out here." p. 12
422. "They're taking two more floors in this building in October." p. 73
423. "We're replacing those as fast as possible," he explained. p. 29
424. "You're going to go, Lully. They're drawin' a ring around us." p. 110
425. "I'm putting a cot down cellar," Fred said, prodding Newman's arm. p. 11
426. "I'm sending this suit to the cleaners," he muttered and went up. p. 37
427. "There's nothing to do but ignore them. They're just not pushing me out, dear." p. 167
428. He broke off, perplexed, and looked down at the rug. "I don't know what's happening to me." "Why? What's happening to you?" p. 116
429. "I know what I'm talking about. You don't know what they can do." p. 115
430. He turned and looked at Newman. "That's the element he's bringin' around." p. 46
431. "I know when somebody's giving me the eye and when they aint." p. 167
432. "I don't know who's giving it to him but he's got money." p. 115



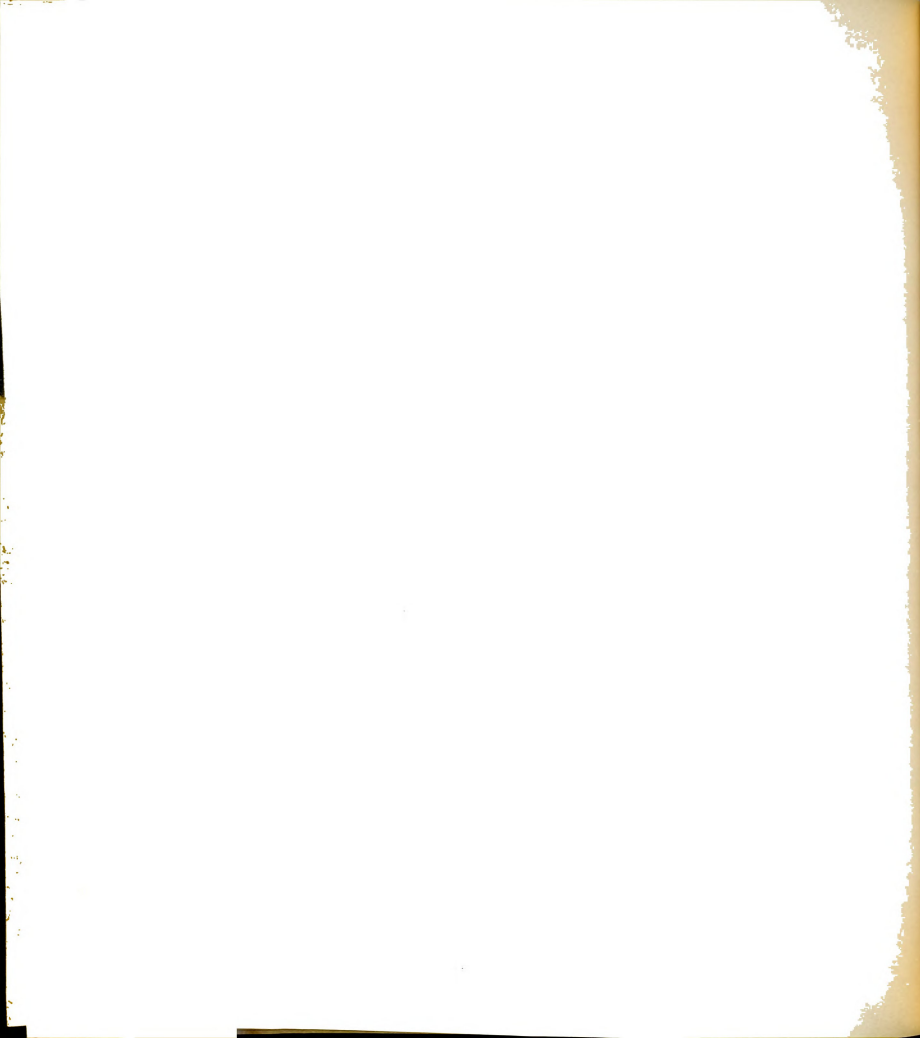
433. He laughed at himself, like a salesman after a sale who is admitting his humanity. p. 12
434. "Supposing I said to you, there's too many people in this neighborhood who are looking like Jews." p. 150
435. "There's a lot of reasons why people don't like Jews." p. 147
436. "It's not a question of doing something I don't like." p. 147
437. "Better I should be saying, this colored person and that one I don't like." p. 146
438. "I will not move. I like it here. I like the air, I like it for my kids." p. 161
439. "That's what I figure." p. 152
440. "I figure," he said, that they'll come to me anyway, so first I'll go to them." p. 144
441. "I see! My mistake." p. 52
442. "But before I go on with this message, my dear brethern and co-patriots, before I continue. I should like to inform, may warn you that-----" p. 137

The Green Bay Tree, Bromfield, Louis
Published as a Signet Book, 1953

443. "I've lived in Paris for the last twenty years," she retorted with an amused grimace, "and I'm still here. I will be until I die." p. 297
444. "Good-night," she said, "in case you have gone to bed before I return." p. 54
445. "Before I die, Irene, I want to see you married." p. 17

Harper's Magazine, April 1950

446. That outside control of movie making exists, however, is generally recognized. p. 54
447. For those who envy us most heartily are often those who are dedicated to the idea of a centrally planned economy. p. 72
448. What concerns us here---is the effect such control must have on production, upon the acts and thoughts of the picture makers and thus upon the nature and quality of the movies that get made in Hollywood. p. 55



449. Too often what a 500 or 800 word review says is that on page 90 the author asserts that a bill passed the Senate on March 21..... p. 99
450. Our patrons, those people who lay down their money at the box office, say as simply and clearly as they possibly can these two simple words-- "Amuse me!" p. 55
451. What does matter is that there can be no important errors... p. 98

Harper's Magazine, May, 1950

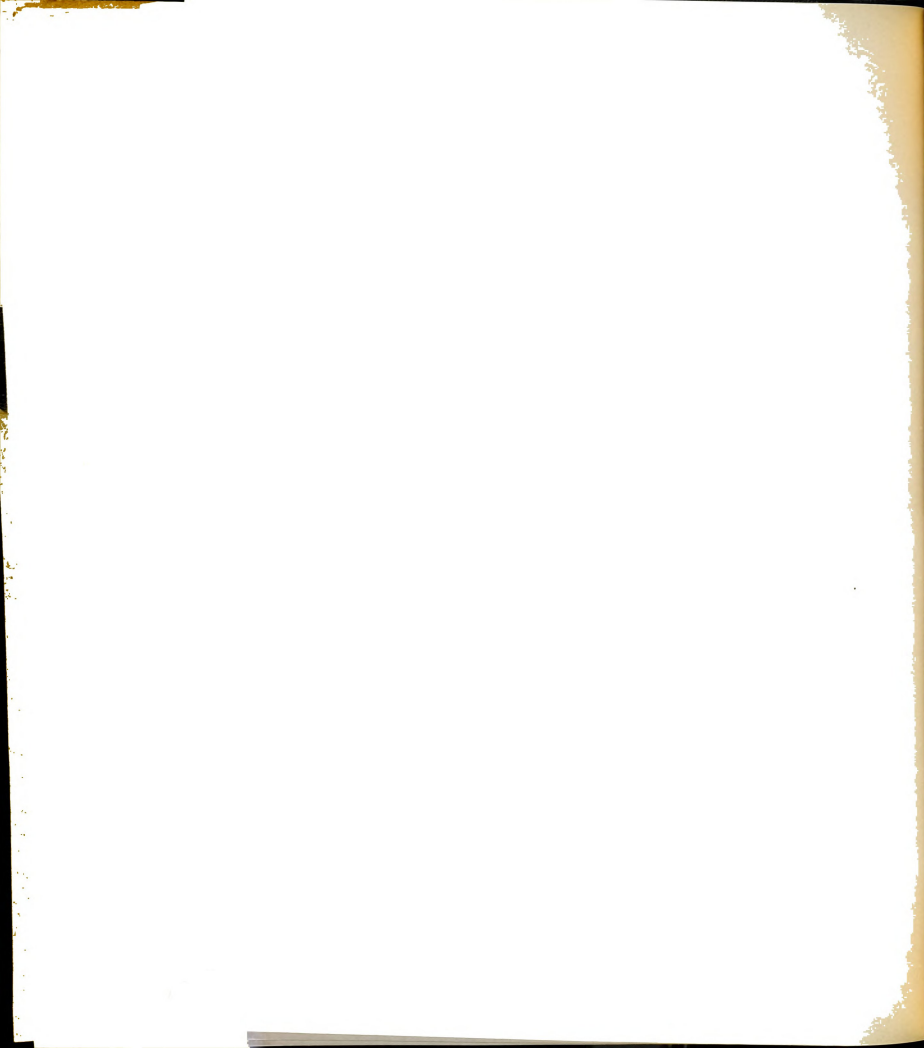
452. The members of the Silver Bloc understand this very well; and lacking a basis for an appeal to reason they appeal to the emotions of the voters and the legislator. p. 97
453. Now as I lean back to think about my friend, I see scenes of little importance lightly and pleasantly studding my life. p. 103
454. I see in the near future a crisis approaching that un-nerves me and causes me to tremble for the safety of my country. p. 72
455. The politician or the minister sees crowds pouring into the local Catholic church, crowds going to a series of "services" on a Sunday morning when the ministers of the community are each fighting an often losing battle with the attractions of golf or the inertia bred by a hang-over. p. 44
456. Sheen suggests that among bishops the habit isn't confined to Catholics and that among Catholics it is not confined to bishops. p. 45
457. As a sample of how the Santa Fe applies the low-fare policy to its coach passengers, take the famous El Capitan, an all-coach streamliner which ranks with the Shasta Daylight in luxury of appointments and services - and goes one point better in its registered-nurse attendants for women passengers. p. 78
458. In its choice and preparation of dramatic material, TV remains seriously limited by considerations of expense and copyright. p. 54
459. After college we must have been separated for a time because I distinctly remember that Hammie's announcement of his first job came in a letter from Buffalo. p. 104
460. But on the other hand, it requires absolute attention as good conversation does, down to the tiniest inflection or parenthetical phrase. p. 123



461. Ask a radio man about TV. You will find that he regards it as his own legitimate territory, by right of direct succession. p. 55
462. Protestants naturally regard the Church of Rome with some of the feelings with which a good American regards England. p. 48
463. They recall that Lincoln was a partner with William Berry in a saloon enterprise in New Salem in 1833, and that Lincoln himself sold liquor. p. 73
464. But the important questions should not even in the atomic age, be settled at first sight. And second sight provokes second thoughts. p. 45
465. For the truth is that the Silver Bloc owes a good deal of its influence to its ability to appeal to the sentimentality of its supporters. p. 97
466. "Eisenhower is chafing under his academic robes," Look magazine reports. "He itches to get into the political fight." p. 32
467. But tolerance involves submitting to these exhibitions of human weakness; humor involves suspecting that you, in turn, are a cause of tears, temper, or laughter in other people... p. 50
468. I feel at this moment more anxiety for the safety of my country than ever before, even in the midst of war. p. 72
469. DeVoto goes on to say that "It is here, in moments of exasperation one feels that it is almost here alone, that the novelist may be trusted. p. 116
470. In general he allows for no deviations, variations or other possible explanations, and he feels no uncertainty about anything. p. 61
471. I figure now that it could not have been many seasons before Hammie returned to the Eastern seaboard from the vulgar bribes of Buffalo. p. 104
472.though even now, evidence exists which suggests that the attractions of home-viewing definitely outweigh the gregarious urge among the mass of the population. p. 56
473. Yet we have seen that television's popularity as a form of entertainment, at the most conservative estimate, exceeds that of movies by one third and that of radio for all its accumulation of stars and habit and good will, by almost 1,000 per cent! p. 54



474. Turning to what is sometimes called the "practical" side of existence, there's Robert L. Heiborner's "The Facts of Life", a revealing study of the poor in America today which explains who our economically under-privileged groups now are, what keeps them that way, and what might be done to help them help themselves. p. 4
475. Does anyone doubt that if these controversies are to be fostered in the educational system, a Catholic parent is fully justified in keeping his children away from the public schools... p. 46
476. I disagree only in those cases where I think De Voto mistakes standards for categories. p. 116
477. As I now contemplate my gentle initiation at Hammie's hands, it seems to me that what I was being taught was a view of life---an unpretentious philosophy, or a way of regarding people, institutions and events. p. 103
478. So universal has the fame of the prairie philosopher-President become that whenever the protagonist of a controversial issue can support his views with a pointed saying of Lincoln's, he considers his case just about clinched. p. 70
479. It concerns only that part of him that was mortal and belonged to the Elizabethan Age. p. 125
480. In general, I agree with this... p. 116
481. But in this season of Republican desperation, Eisenhower's chances seem excellent. p. 32
482. I assume he means by this that the time we spend in reading and thinking about our reading isn't much compared to the time we give to other things. p. 116
483. Authors assume that other people know who they are. p. 110
484. The people not only like him and respect him, as we have always known they do, they think it would be a fine idea to make him President. p. 32
485. And if Mr. Blanchard or his friends believe they are really contributing to American unity by polemics of this kind, well, as the Duke of Wellington said to the man who said he believed he was Mr. Smith. "If you can believe that you can believe anything." p. 46
486. People may laugh at an official who believes that a man who has committed fornication is unfit to be an American citizen... but they may cease to laugh if the church really manages to impose its standards on the average sensual man and woman. p. 47
487. Railroad men (or most of them) actually believe that rate hikes offer an immediate cure without danger of after-effects. p. 76



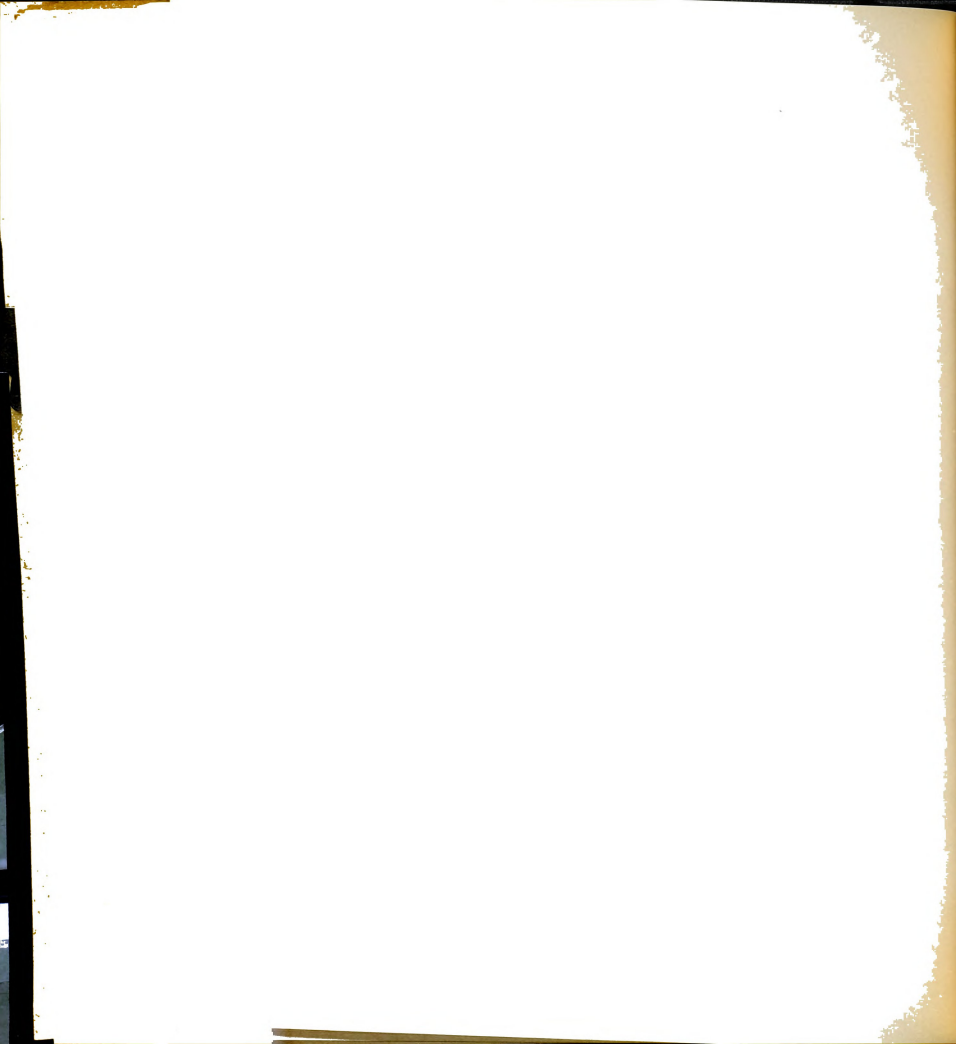
488. Frequently speakers or writers who presumably know better will cite, for propaganda purposes, only a portion of a statement by Lincoln to support their views, when the entire quotation may convey an entirely different meaning. p. 73
489. "Yes, dear," Lois said, "You want to go to the country, I want to go to the country and even Jimmy thinks he wants to go to the country." p. 88
490. The railroads have been so thoroughly spoiled by the ease with which they have obtained rate boosts from a sympathetic Inter-State Commerce Commission that their first impulse, when they want more revenue, is to seek a rate increase. p. 76
491. American society would be more united if all these Catholics would Americanize themselves---an idea which, when examined means cease to be Catholics or become really American Catholics---and that in turn means, again, cease to be Catholics, for the institution means there is something wider and more important than being an American... p. 42
492. He was certainly not one of those talented boys who dis-
covers himself to be a comic and then takes up comicality in a serious way, holding crowds in stitches in what is virtually a professional performance. p. 103
493. Kerouac is either a cameraman who focuses now on a field, now on a skyscraper, always giving the impression that machinery is being toted around from place to place, or he is a narrator who tells us solemnly that what was isn't and that what is won't be. p. 120
494. As radio emerges from its blindness, through television, and enters into direct competition with the current motion picture product, it is unlikely that audiences will long be satisfied with a double standard of entertainment quality. p. 56
495. why then do they fight for such formal victories? For the same reason as the Methodists of Oklahoma defend formal prohibition of alcohol in the state. p. 47
496. we are now almost midway between elections, and public interest in residential politics is about as low as it ever gets in the four-year cycle. p. 31
497. And leeches they will prove to be, as they gradually suck revenues from the railroad passenger till. p. 78



498. Southern Pacific has been a leader over the years in efforts to keep passenger fares as low as possible, believing that it is better to have a greater number of persons traveling by rail at low fares than a lesser number at higher fares. Better, one might add, for two good reasons--because it makes more money, and because it serves more people. p. 77
499. If the railroads don't come to their senses soon and start lowering fares the Inter-State Commerce Commission itself may have to take measures to save railroad revenues from further tobogganing downhill. p. 499
500. If we are describing the existing set-up of a few captive companies manufacturing a fixed type of product for an established market of twenty thousand theaters, then Hollywood's future is no less shrouded in doubt than the future of theatrical exhibition as a whole... If, on the other hand, we refer to the sum of creative, interpretative and technical talent assembled here...then the answer is that Hollywood is sitting pretty. p. 59
501. This is a respectable attitude, but when it leads to such excesses of political pressures as have been seen in Massachusetts, it is an expensive attitude, breeding that lay dislike of too much clerical interference which has cost the church so much, especially in Catholic countries. p. 47
502. When Did's father comes with a posse of city men to try to get him back, one of the finest feuding fights ever recorded takes place. p. 125
503. Lionel Trilling is one of the critics De Voto stigmatizes as a schematizer. p. 118
504. As a convincing demonstration that the low fares pays... the Santa Fe and Southern Pacific performances should remove all doubts as to the wisdom of the policy... p. 78
505. But, as a practical matter, it is between home-viewing and theater exhibition, as the dominant method of picture exploitation, that the heat of battle rages and will continue to rage for some time to come. p. 55
506. The answer is that the power of the Silver Bloc lies in a unique combination of selfishness, sentimentality and monetary mysticism. p. 96
507. The miracle that Mr. Green accomplishes is to make hilarious scenes of the lives of essentially very dull people. p. 123
508. I have said that Mr. Blanchard makes some valid points. p. 46



509. The Goebbels run through our history to prove that we violate our anti-militarist political traditions not in orgies of gratitude and hero-worship but in search for men of vision. p. 32
510. It is not clerical hypocrisy that annoys, it is clerical sincerity, if you like, clerical fanaticism. p.47
511. It was not until the saturation point for equipment finally seemed to have been reached...that the radio industry and the financial interests that control it, at long last, gave the go-ahead to the new medium and opened up the flood-gates of a public enthusiasm that now threatens to modify the entire structure of the entertainment business. p. 74
512. "Dear Freddy, I am now retained by an up and going advertising agency in this city, at an annual salary that runs into four figures and then stops abruptly." p. 104
513. Consequently, billions of ounces of the white metal lie buried deep in expensive vaults, while paper substitutes called "Silver Certificates" circulate in their stead. p. 93
514. When he is uncovering a cause or announcing a finding he repeatedly says "exclusively," "solely", "only", "entirely". p. 61
515. I predict that within just a few years a great many Hollywood producers, directors, writers and actors who are still coasting on reputations built up in the past are going to wonder what hit them. p. 53
516. Some of the analysts who are now instructing us are less widely read than a lay critic feels he has to be, and the literature which they approve of, not much all told, is seldom what lay readers consider first rate. p. 60
517. He is wrong because the analyst whose ideas he is trying to criticise is right. p. 60
518. Professor Brogan is something more than one of the neighbors who are beginning to "talk" about our family quarrels. p. 14
519. ...for if they are no longer growing in relative numerical strength, they are growing in wealth, political and social power, intellectual stature and pretensions. p. 42
520. While the first increases undoubtedly had some justification, the later ones seemed foolhardy, since they are forced through the Inter-State Commerce Commission in the face of mounting unmistakable evidence that freight business is ebbing away from the railroads as the result of exorbitant rates. p. 78



521. These [tears] will be shed...and finally by the psychologist and sociologists concerned with the mental health of a generation that is living ever less in the realities of personal experience, more and more by remote observation and through vicarious emotions. p. 58
522. With one last item, the parallel is complete: This Magic Box that is now setting the communications world afire has been available in roughly its present form, since the middle thirties... p. 54
523. It seems to me that they are building staircases steeper than they used to. p. 126
524.and it would be difficult to find any essential service or comfort on the 20th Century or the Broadway Limited that is missing on the Shasta Daylight. p. 77
525. We had a letter the other day from Peter Drucker, one of our contributors, reminding us of the book program which Care is operating. p. 6
526. Would Eisenhower run? No one who knows him seems to doubt it, and there are many who think he is running hard right now. p. 32
527. Another thing I've noticed is the small print they're using lately. p. 126
528. What the Catholic bishops are fighting is the growth of forces in American life that make the maintenance of the old Christian standards of sexual morality increasingly difficult. p. 47
529. They use the language of American controversy clumsily and their non-Catholic audience does not often make much effort to discover what they are saying. p. 41
530. In De Voto's view, the novel has only one serious function: to tell the reader what is happening inside him... p. 114
531. "It's pressure all the time and I'm damned if I see where it's taking us." p. 88
532. I find myself asking questions about what kind of life I want, or what I want from life, or where it's taking me." p. 89
533. Unless he is deluding himself, he will not try to minimize the technical wonders of television. p. 55
534. If they seem or are happy, it is because they are enjoying pain. p. 61
535. It must be disregarded because it is self-protective, or because what the analyst said has made him angry, or because he is expressing his desire to murder his father. p. 60



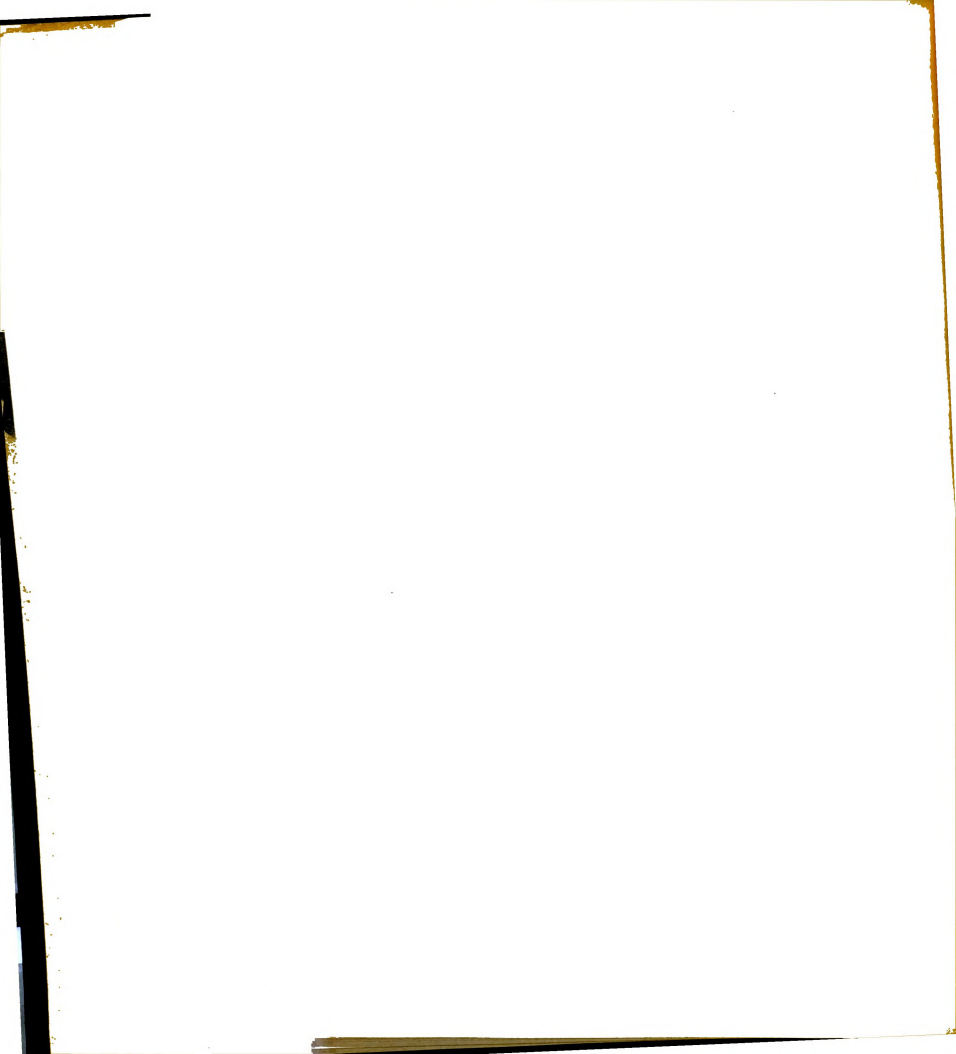
536. "You're not worrying about the reviews, I hope." p. 122
537. The movers and shakers are thinking things over, and occasional feelers are put out to the public. p. 51
538. Newspapermen are turning book authors as assiduously as ever. p. 127
539. A number of analysts are annoyed with literature; it isn't what they think it ought to be, and, accepting their obligation, they are saying why and wherein. p. 50
540. It is startling to discover how closely, and in how many respects, the parallel holds between the first months of talkies and the first years of television. p. 53
541. Trucks are picking up the business the railroads are losing and enjoying the biggest traffic in their history, thanks to the railroads. p. 78
542. So we are passing on to you part of Mr. Drucker's letter. p. 5
543. In June, Greystone is planning to publish the story of the automobile industry... p. 127
544. The present boom is a strictly Republican affair. The Democrats aren't having any. p. 33
545. "No, I don't look at them. I've been told about a couple--- but I'm not even going to care," she said defiantly. p. 122
546. "It's getting to be impossible to live here." p. 88
547. "Even the taxi drivers are going to psychiatrists." p. 83
548. They are fighting to retain, and if possible increase the huge profits they have been making for so many years by such radically different methods. p. 55
549. Motion pictures are entering their third major era. p. 53
550. It is not unnatural that the bishops should lunge about wildly, doing their cause more harm than good, but they are discussing, or, at any rate talking about an important problem which few people really want discussed candidly. p. 48
551. It now finds that "a crucial problem lies ahead for the next President of the United States, for which Ike is singularly qualified. This is bringing unity to the now disunited Western nations facing Russia." p. 32
552. If you do not tolerate such beliefs and practices, then you are not being tolerant. p. 49



553. Hammie was unable to think up a single merry touch for his favorite foil. I'm not blaming hammie--I certainly could not think of anything gay to convey to Peter in those days either--but it is too bad that we couldn't. p. 106
554. "Please," Lois said. "It's so late. That man's death disturbed me too. I'm trying to get over it." p. 95
555. Jimmy is beginning adolescence, they said. p. 87
556. The psychoanalytical study of literature, which slacked off for some years, is hotting up again. p. 60
557. But the real test of your devotion to tolerance comes when you tolerate beliefs and practices that you think imbecile, dangerous, immoral, disgusting, or disloyal. p. 49
558. Obviously, we are dealing here with a catalogue of confusions the like of which we seldom encounter fixed in print on paper. p. 122
559. He is heading down the main stream of mass entertainment, looking for the best channel. p. 10
560. Jaygol acts as a roach-policeman, setting up a complete protection day and night. p. 112
561. "Our boy, who has never heard the name of Jesus except in profanity, is really the child of tomorrow, but we're living in yesterday." p. 95
562. "We subscribe fully to Lincoln's declaration that... p. 73
563. In his own diocese he isn't arguing, he is telling them, them being his priests. p. 44
564. Freight that no one has ever associated before with trucks to any marked degree....begins to appear more and more often on trucks, until long lines of trailer trucks carrying these vital commodities have become a familiar sight. p. 76
565. There remains something more fundamental. It takes us past Dr. Bergler to an assumption about writing which I find tolerably common in what analysts have been saying lately. p. 63
566. He is at present working for RKO. p. 10
567. Mr. Woldman is himself a lawyer and is at present serving in the cabinet of Governor Lausche of Ohio as director of the state's Department of Industrial Relations. p. 14
568. Somehow the silverites usually manage to convey the impression that "to do something for silver" will at the same time, add strength, security, and stability to our monetary system and simultaneously insure prosperity and progress for all. p. 98



569. Some railroads are already using some of these methods.
p. 80
570. French Catholics are even now discussing...the proposition that in great industrial areas at any rate, the parish has seen its best days... p. 44
571. In an essay called "Am I not Christopher Sly?" he very cleverly works out a theory of self-representation in literature of the relation between a writer's life and the lives of the people he creates... p. 116
572. But now things are changing. p. 56
573. Four are already published, but in May Bobbs-Merrill is bringing out Assignment in Austerity. p. 127
574. We came here by a long road, and I've enjoyed it, but now it's driving me crazy. p. 89
575. Now and then in the World of Fiction, DeVoto takes a moment or two out to belabor those whom he calls "schematic critics." p. 116
576. According to a story in the New York Times, seven of their staff members are publishing books this spring. p. 127
577. Television...is dominating the mass-entertainment field even more rapidly and decisively than was generally anticipated. p. 10
578. This material attracts and lures these insects out of their hiding places to feed on it, after which they usually return to their hiding places deathly sick. p. 112
579. This bothers me less, however, than the fact that the faculty are at odds with one another. p. 30
580. "He breaks things and he lies," Jim thought harshly, stirring the bitterness twisted with love inside him. p. 95
581. To one hundred million radio listeners, it brings the irresistible gift of sight. p. 54
582. Curiously, literature becomes truth because it is make-believe, because it is remote from life, and because we are lifted out of ourselves. p. 123
583. A great deal of anti-clericalism in all countries comes from men whose pleasure is interfered with. p. 47
584. I cling to the optimistic belief that the pyramiding rate policy can go no further. p. 75



585. Believing that only those writers who can get perspective on their own responses...are able to serve the reader by closing the emotional circuit, he examines the process by which the writer achieves with language what he calls "shaped" emotion," as distinct from unshaped or shapeless emotion. p. 116
586. This does not by any means imply that the young giant has grown up. p. 10
587. DeVoto thinks that craftsmanship is terribly important... p. 116
588. We live a kind of negative life. p. 95
589. They make nuisances of themselves, and as censors, are often markedly naive, but Christians should not worry about the sneers of the world... p. 48
590. He opposes deficit financing. p. 33
591. To American audiences, T.V. offers the lure of a new dimension. p. 54
592. Willy-nilly the public is paying for these higher rates in almost every dollar being paid to the grocer, the butcher, the druggist, the hardware man, and other retail dealers. p. 76
593. Half a dozen of us, armed with mandolins, ukeleles, and such are earnestly slaughtering one of Mr. Irving Berlin's earliest efforts. p. 103
594. It means that, despite their numbers, American Catholics in public controversy suffer from two handicaps. p. 41
595. Furthermore, it sets a new standard for comfort and service to the traveler. p. 77
596. Even if speed of travel doesn't matter, the air route saves its passengers money on meals. p. 75
597. Hammie is toying with a pitch pipe, the property of one of us musicians. p. 103

Harper's Magazine, June 1950

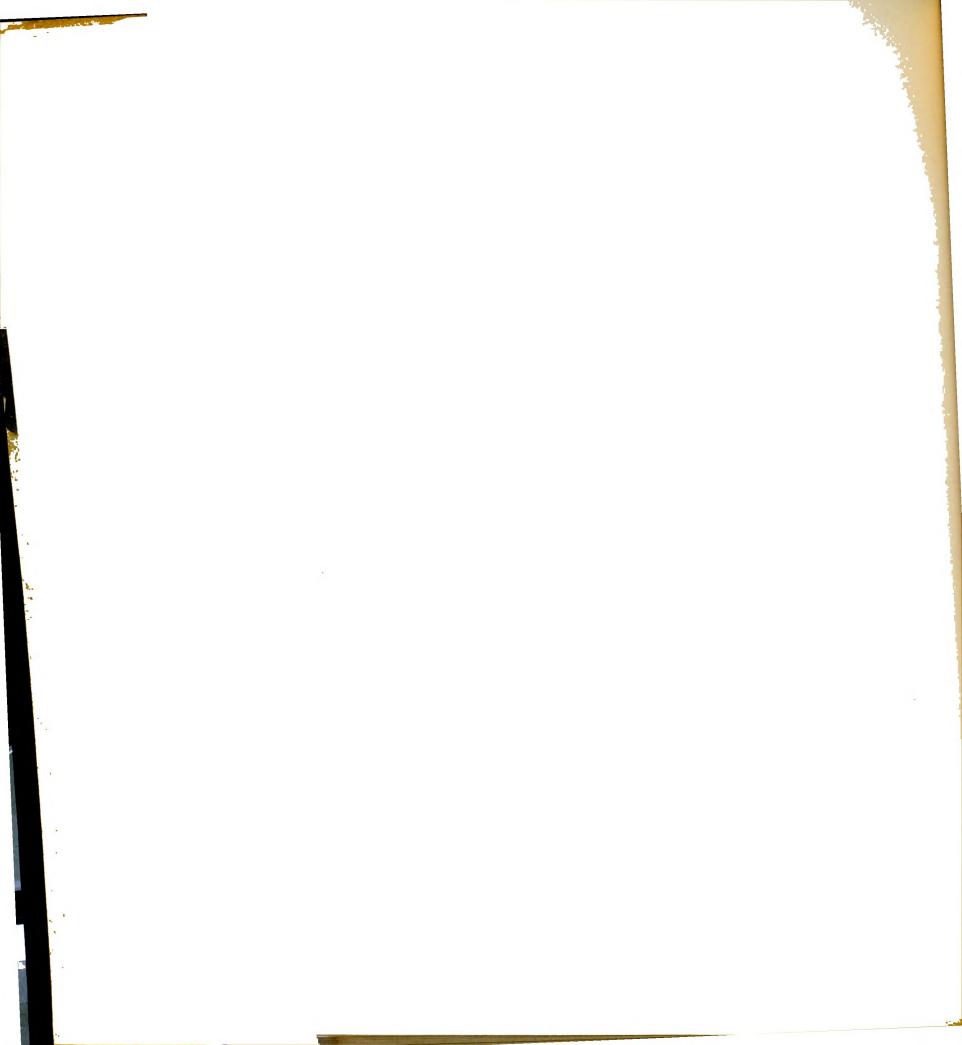
598. Now you're understanding. Why nobody comes here. Why I have a high, safe wall around the garden, that you never go outside. p. 40
599. And Auntie's your friend who understands. p. 41
600. Other independent surveys tally very closely with the findings of the census. p. 28



601. The fuel reprocessing business remains an accountant's nightmare, but the Commission is needling the chemical engineers to pass a miracle, and they may do it yet. p. 54
602. One remembers that the word "knickers" has other connotations besides plus-fours...and casts a thoughtful glance at the bearded college boys are trying to grow, suspecting a symbolism that would interest Dr. Geoffrey Gorer if not Dr. Mead. p. 78
603. Because, after making allowances for all the difficulties, the stubborn fact remains that one pound of uranium can be persuaded to release an amount of energy equivalent to 2,000,000 pounds of coal. p. 53
604. They qualify both as a potentially great peacetime boon and as a hair-raising instrument of warfare. p. 53
605.and most farm families provide some of their own food (not all by a long shot) and usually they own their own homes and pay no rent. p. 28
606. At a time when the Hoover Report is commanding increasing public attention, this book provides a thoughtful and critical consideration of the place of bureaucracy in the American national government. p. 120
607. North announces that they have signed a contract with H.A. Overstreet (The Master Mind) for a new book to be called The Mind in the Community, no publication date mentioned as yet. p. 119
608. Disabled people-industrial casualties, social derelicts, the mentally and physically ill-number at any time about 4,500,000 people - and that excludes both the aged and very young. p. 29
609. The army would like to train bright young men in the handling of 3.5 inch military rockets, a highly technical calling, but it has few inducements to offer them unless they intend to make a career in the service. p. 47
610. Nothing could be more laudable than an attempt to get an audience for Butler, but I fear that Cole, who of course edited with a British audience in mind, is not in the present instance doing what should really be done for the cause on this side of the ocean. p. 110
611. The Commission says the two projects involve "different approaches" to the problem, but has not divulged exactly how they differ in design. p. 55
612. Together with the Arco breeder, they constitute a well-rounded reactor development program, thoughtfully balanced between military and civilian needs. p. 55



- C 13. If the two lines on the cost graph continue to move in their present directions, however slowly, they are bound to cross some day. p. 54
614. Some persons, properly impressed by the elemental fury of an atomic explosion, quite naturally assume that the big trick in building nuclear engines is "taming" the fission process, keeping the violent uranium reaction under control. p. 51
615. Since the high cost and fuel scarcity would hardly preclude development of such a high priority weapon, it seems likely that we shall have atomic engines for submarines in the relatively near future. p. 53
616. It seems feasible to use the same process to convert thorium into uranium 233, a man-made fissionable element like plutonium, which could be used either for bombs or reactors. p. 54
617. The most extensive survey to date on how small-community experiments are solving the problem of rural survival, "this is a very valuable book....which all concerned with agriculture and its many ramifications should read without fail. p. 120
618. Nearby, a monotonous voice worked out a line that was proving intricate:-- "and this quine I'm tellin' about was a cousin of quine the draper, an' he married the widow of a fella that had a brotner in the mines; now let me think what his first name would be----" p. 37
619. He stated he needs more medical assistance but hesitates to ask for more as he feels he is getting enough from public assistance. p. 29
620. "My boys say they're enjoying it ever so much, my dear," called Mrs. Kneen. p. 35
621. It is edited by the seniors who take political science, and it wades into controversial issues with all the brashness of youth and with the open face of a young man who lets it be known that he doesn't know what he's talking about but still thinks he has a right to be heard. p. 108
622. In a wider perspective still, what this multi-billion dollar nation is suffering from is the American version of a global state of want. p. 31
623. What is disturbing is not that there is poverty in America--everyone with eyes to see knows that for himself. p. 28
624. I doubt if he has done us as much harm as my colleagues are widely saying. p. 80



625. The beneficiary's only asset is a \$200 bank account and a life insurance policy with a face value of \$250 on which he is still paying premiums. p. 29
626. Charles A. Beard, the intellectual leader of the isolationist wing of the revisionists, dedicated two volumes to a trenchant attack on the very foundations of Roosevelt's prewar policy--a scorching indictment which a number of isolationist journalists, such as John T. Flynn and George Morganenstern have lived off ever since, and which, one understands, Professor C.C. Tansill of Fordham is planning to extend into the way years. p. 62
627. Fifth, there are the private pension funds which are growing very fast... p. 76
628. These planes are filled with complex and delicate machinery; they are required to make landings on the decks of carriers which are always moving in at least one direction, often very violently. p. 46
629. They are the facts reported by a sub-committee of the Joint Committee on the Economic Report of the Congress of the United States, a sub-committee which is looking into the question of our low-income families. p. 28
630. The plans must carry a big radar and counter-radar, including the device which enables it to home on an unseen submarine which is using its own radar - so much radar that there is a big egg-shaped bulge below the fuselage of the plane and a third member of the crew to do nothing but operate the equipment - - so much radar that the plane can carry neither offensive nor defensive weapons, and the task of hunting submarines has to be split between two planes working together. p. 45
631. Assume that all of these hurdles are somehow crossed and the pile is operating with reasonable safety and efficiency. p. 52
632. Their legal danger is merely that they are running companies which in and of themselves have attained the power to exclude competitors from the market. p. 89
633. For it is not only with his neckties that the American moyen sensuel (if that is the phrase) is producing the effect of a fire in an oil refinery. p. 77
634. For what we are stricken with - at the lower levels of our economic structure - is the same disease that is eating all the world. p. 31
635. True, the man with a megaphone on the sight-seeing bus may point out a few international bankers. But the phrase is just a figure of speech, like bogymen, and what the man with the megaphone means is that the fellow he is referring to still has an office and maybe a stenographer in London or Paris. p. 75



636. And when you make that singing or sit watching the clouds and wondering, or tremble at the thunder, there's only auntie to know that you're doing what no one else does. p. 41
637. But if you are seeking a compact, high-energy reactor, and have ideas about using all that heat for power production, some other kind of coolant must be sought - one that will transfer much more heat much more rapidly. p. 52
638. But to the scientists and engineers who are actually making "the first beginnings in this field," it seemed more like a bold declaration of faith. p. 50
639. The Stock Exchange still can be heard emitting the muffled roars of the brokers on the floor, the decibel count denoting the extent of the day's activity but not the trend, since traders make as much noise when prices are falling as when they are rising. p. 69
640. In the wardrooms of the ships, in the tents on the beaches, no question was more frequently asked of guests than "When do you think Uncle Joe is going to jump?" p. 47
641. The thirties gave us the poverty of idle machines; what we have now is the poverty that is left over when everything is running at top speed. p. 31
642. Unfortunately, if a few feet are selected out of this moving picture of the American price system at work, during a lull when prices are standing still, the result can look just like a conspiracy. p. 91
643. If you take an average low-income American and look behind the statistics, that is the picture you are likely to see. p. 30
644. It is simply a group that fails to earn a decent keep because the jobs it does is not sufficiently productive to warrant a decent wage. p. 29
645. Presumably, there will be considerably less moderator than in present models, or perhaps a new type of moderator that doesn't slow down neutrons as much as graphite and heavy water, but reflects them more perfectly. p. 55
646. These are unpleasant facts, to be sure, but before we lose our balance in outraged indignation, let us inquire why a country as rich and productive as our own can yet fail to provide a decent living for so large a fraction of its citizens. p. 28
647. For while poverty is poverty, it makes a difference what kind of poverty we face when we seek to find a remedy for our ills. p. 30



648. A man is still unprotected if he buys too many cadillacs, bets on horses, over-borrows on a personal loan, or spends money on wine or women; but if he buys stock, Washington watches over him like the severest of nursemaids. p. 74
649. If the Eastern rail executives find themselves too "set" to adopt the policies of the Western roads, the best prescription I could give them, though an unlikely one, would be to appoint a traffic czar-- p. 79
650. "If it fails, admit it frankly and try another." p. 64
651. If it works out, it will clear the way for continuous process instead of "batch" operation of reactors. p. 54
652. As I write this Senator Hickenlooper, who is on the same committee and is certainly no rose himself, is trying to see if he can change bandwagons on the end of a limb. p. 80
653. The Commission has announced, however, that it will be a "fast neutron" reactor, as opposed to present models which use deliberately slowed-down neutrons. p. 55
654. What may be shocking for those who are not informed about these social problems is the number of our citizens who fall into one or another of these groups. p. 29
655. Many of the disabled are living on charity, others are using up their savings... p. 29
656. The fuel reprocessing business remains an accountant's nightmare, but the Commission is needling the chemical engineers to pass a miracle, and they may do it yet. p. 54
657. And underneath the whole, behind the ten million neediest cases, the misfits and the unproductive workers, lies the basic fact of scarcity. p. 31
658. But the fantastic possibilities of breeding don't stop there. p. 54
659. ...besides, kingdoms and empires are threatening to fall apart at the seams, or, worse, to socialize everything. p. 75
660. Maybe the nostalgic but fashion-proof sex is heading back toward the 1920's where there was rumor that the unstable one was going to precede it. p. 77
661. We are not as young a nation as we were and the curve of the average age is moving up; there is a limit to what we can afford. p. 32
662. Along the inspirational frontier the big guns are moving up. p. 119



663. Construction is beginning this spring. p. 55
664. The American woman seems to be pretty tranquil this spring, maybe even a little reactionary for her head-gear is beginning to look like a hat. p. 73
665. The Atomic Energy Commission is placing heavy emphasis on cost-cutting research, and it is beginning to pay notable dividends. p. 53
666. Nobody ever tries out any of the gay, mad chic that Harper's Bazaar...and its competitors think up. p. 79
667. True, Dr. Hafstad is talking about what is theoretically possible, not about what can be done. p. 53
668. One of the urgent needs is to find light-weight shielding material. Another is developing some system to convert heat into propulsive power without the obvious intermediate step of steam boilers. p. 55
669. The Commission says the two projects involve "different approaches" to the problem but has not divulged exactly how they differ in design. p. 55
670. They are breaking the law (in all probability) merely by doing business in ways that have always heretofore been considered fair, square, and above-board. p. 89
671. If so, the dollar balance of Great Britain is co-operating. p. 77
672. Just then Junior come [sic] in and said: "Mr. Thomas, what are you doing?" p. 99
673. The General Electric Company is designing the reactor and it probably will be built on a site in the vicinity of Schenectady, New York. p. 55
674. ...and Louis Untermeyer and Ralph Shikes are editing for Holt The Best Humor of 1949-1950. p. 119
675. It is simple enough to assign the atomic bomb to the war side and radio isotopes to the peace side, but reactors resist such neat labeling. p. 53
676. The senior class at Brooks is going to face the world with more advice from more famous people than, I'll bet, any class that has ever graduated from any school. p. 108
677. The six-bit magazines are plugging a new kind of eye make-up. p. 78
678. "But it does have the inherent possibilities of providing an incredibly compact storage battery. " p. 53



679. Collar points are plunging and will presently reach the belt. p. 27
680. "The Queen," the letter said, "is gradually recovering from a tedious and painful attack of sciatica." p. 100
681. Sometimes one sees in widening collars a gay silk kerchief which will be a jabot as soon as it gets a little lace, and from the nickelodeans of Broadway a jacket without lapels is spreading toward Brooks Brothers. p. 78
682. American capital is wanted from the Ganges to the Rhine and we are seeking ways to overcome the risks of foreign landing. p. 33
683. Some of the girls are wearing oblate bunches on their hips which knock over highball glasses on their way to the table. p. 78
684. The organized speculators no longer function. p. 73
685. On an isolated site in the Snake River plains of southern Idaho, the Atomic Energy Commission is now building a battering room to assault this roadblock. p. 54
686. The Southern Pacific and the Santa Fe began years ago to replace steam locomotives with diesels, and as a result are now enjoying savings of \$36,000,000 (Southern Pacific) and \$29,000,000 (Santa Fe) in operating costs annually. p. 79
687. Happy news for later in 1950: Little Brown is publishing How To Travel Incognito, by Ludwig Bemelmans; p. 119
688. "Look at the eyes!" they would shout. "See it! How it cries. There, it is running." p. 41
689. When they [the investors] become panicky or over-confident, the markets gyrate. p. 76
690. But there is no indication that this is true; the scientists are turning out new robots faster than the men can be trained to keep them working. p. 47
691. Why then does the President address congress in glowing terms about the great promise of atomic power? p. 53
692. The investment trusts of today think they have an answer to that one in their superior knowledge and diversification of risk. And they are putting it across, receiving from investors about \$300 million a year. 74
693. It quickly becomes evident, when the promise of atomic power is viewed realistically, that no hard and fast dividing line can be drawn between military and civilian uses of nuclear forces. p. 53



694. Ranging over the length and breadth of the country, this survey of the modern suburbia brings the professional up to date on recent achievements in community planning, and will inspire the ordinary citizen to make his own community a better place to live. p. 120
695. The four new volumes of The Public Papers and Addresses give a full if oblique reflection of Roosevelt's political dilemma. p. 54

Harper's Magazine, September, 1952

696. "Nancy's not extravagant. I don't mean to imply that. But every time she sees something that she wants for the house or the children, she kids her conscience by saying, 'I'll pay for it myself.'" p. 63
697. "The food at the Rococo is swell; the food at Rosa's doesn't taste quite so swell after the food at the Rococo." p. 64
698. "I don't intend to profiteer on an unfortunate, and I am not going to risk my kids on a cut rate job." p. 62

Life Magazine, April 14, 1952

699. "Don't tell me how to conduct my defense of General Marshall. You're attacking General Marshall----- p. 110
700. "In other words, if you don't prove it,... \$1000 goes to my favorite charity." p. 102
701. "We're referring there to Marshall's letters to Arthur Vandenburg when he was giving his reason for supporting the Wedemeyer Report." p. 110
702. You are looking through the glass end of a sterile chamber in the bacteriological laboratory at the University of Notre Dame. p. 158
703. "We're not talking about what Wedemeyer, what, what Vandenburg might have thought about the report or not thought." p. 108
704. "Yes, I'm trying to find the page in Vandenberg's Private Papers which I have here." p. 108
705. "We're trying to restrict ourselves to using as source material, only the sources friendly to Marshall or at least neutral toward him." p. 101
706. "Why are the Communists doing this?" p. 23



707. Now that's the beginning of the story. I am not going to take up the whole book because we have to throw this [the discussion] back and forth. p. 100
708. "Your colleague has asked me a question. I'm going to answer it in one sentence and then the floor is yours." p. 102
709. Hollywood, which dearly loves a cycle, is embarked on a congenial one: more producers are making more musicals and expect to be raking in more and more profits with them. p. 16
710. "Just one moment. Senator McCarthy has just addressed himself to me, and he has questioned my honesty. And I am reading from Senator McCarthy's book...." p. 107
711. The people are rallying. We shall win victory. p. 10
712. The half million people each week viewing the television panel show, The Author Meets the Critics, are witnessing public debate at its loudest. p. 101
713. Life here prints the transcript of the McCarthy show (complete except for a few minor deletions of repetitions and digression) so that its substance, if any, can be studied in plain print. p. 101
714. "I make it very clear in the book that I'm quoting---I am quoting from a great newspaper, one of the finest that I know and I said I don't vouch for this. p. 105
715. "I think we should at least agree on that." p. 107
716. "I think we're crossing interstate lines with television." p. 102
717. "The point is this---the point shows an unusually bad memory on the part of this man who is leading all of our armies. p. 105
718. "I believe it's illegal to gamble and we have a senator with us." p. 102
719.you also accuse me of lying about the inspector general---" p. 105
720. "Oh, you mean you're making a bet." p. 102
721. The CID, for example, thinks Cox disappeared voluntarily and is living in disguise somewhere. p. 141
722. Most missing persons are emotionally unstable, which explains the supremely ironic fact that they run toward the very situation they are fleeing. p. 148



723. While Hollywood, usually conventional in its musicals, is growing inventive and venturesome with an interstellar ballet and rain drenched dance, Broadway has this year turned out nothing original or startling. p. 119
724. "You know, Mr. Cherne, if you read back one paragraph that I'm referring to the Wedemeyer Report and not to Marshall's whereabouts. p. 107
725. Treed, Dolly and several allies resist the attacks of angry villagers who say she is making an unholy show of herself. p. 145
726. "So if we read sentences, let's read whole sentences if we may." p. 110
727. "And I don't wish to get into any trouble." p. 102

O'Halloran's Luck and Other Short Stories,
Benet, Stephen Vincent, Penguin Book
(reprinted by permission of Murray Hill
Books, inc.) n.d.

728. "And there's a new miller now. But he isn't very well-liked, to tell the truth, and he's letting the mill run down." p. 164
729. "You're not putting up a very good case," said the old man, shaking his head. "I'm surprised at you, Johnny." p. 171
730. "And what happens when you get tired?" said Doc. Melhorn. p. 76
731. "And what brings a smart boy like you on the road so early in the morning?"
"Oh," said Johnny Pye quite honestly, "I'm running away from the Fool-Killer." p. 155
732. "We have 94,183 Grews, including eighty-three Prescotts and one Renobscott, but I fail to find Faisley Grew." p. 65
733. "No, don't reach for that phone just yet, or whatever it is. I'm still thinking." p. 62
734. You hang around and announce your retirement and pretty soon folks start thinking they ought to give you a testimonial. And I never did like testimonials. p. 73
735. "But I wonder where they got the dogwood. Haven't seen it bloom like that since I was East." p. 60
736. "I wonder if he still plays the jew's-harp. Pshaw! I know he's been dead for twenty years." p. 61



737. "Is this the right road?" he said
 "Straight ahead to the traffic light," said the cop. "They're expecting you, Doctor Mellhorn. Shall I give you an escort?"
 p. 59
738. It may not be patriotic of me, and I feel sorry for Martinsville. p. 176
739. "You are feeling sufficiently well, Professor Malzius?" p. 105
740. "It's a handsome offer but I just don't feel up to accepting it." p. 176
741. "Treat a boy like a fool and he'll act like a fool. I say, but there's some folks need convincing." p. 103
742. "Ferguson needs more amalgam," said Doc Mellhorn. "And that last batch wasn't standard. I wouldn't use it on a dog."
 "He's always needing more amalgam," said the inspector bitterly. "By the way, my wife tells me I need a little work done myself--but we won't go into that." p. 70
743. "The miller may say you're a fool, but I think you're a right smart boy to be running away from the Fool-Killer all by yourself. And I don't hold with small -town prejudices and I need a right smart boy, so I'll give you a lift on the road." p. 155
744. "What he needs most of all is a word of ripe wisdom from you." p. 163
745. "Phew!" said Johnny Pye. "That needs thinking over!" p. 175
746. "I remember the first time I saw her after she married McConaghey... You were out for a week-end. Maybe you don't remember it." p. 188
747. "Mud in your eye!" said John Surwis fiercely. He sipped the cider. "Ah!" he said, "tastes better every year, Will." p. 122
748. "I'm afraid you don't quite understand, sir," said the reception clerk.
 "I understand this," said Doc. Mellhorn, "I was called here. And if I wasn't called professionally, why have I got my bag?"
 p. 64
749. "And you're going to have rickets in those youngsters as long as you keep feeding them low-grade coke." p. 71
750. "Would it have to be mumps?" said his uncle. "Of course, if you're aching for mumps, I guess it could be arranged." p. 76
751. "But I never took much fancy to him, in spite of his oath. It's Aesculapius I'm thinking about." p. 63



752. "Well, Doc," he said, "Of course this isn't the place for you, and I can see you're just visiting. But I haven't many real complaints." p. 7
753. "And what do you do for a boy when you know he's dying, Doctor?" p. 74
754. "But what I say is, there must be something in it, if a fellow like Spike Garrett believes it." p. 132
755. You had, therefore, as decreed by his Excellency, to pass through a certain period for probation and rehabilitation. But that, we believe, is finished. p. 103
756. "Do I need a road map? Noticed the road I came was all one way."
"There is, I believe, a back road in rather bad repair." p. 65
757. "I suppose I ought to have seen the folks," he said.
"Yes, I know I ought." p. 66
758. "Well, it seems that he wants to be a doctor. But I don't know what sort of training he'd get." p. 72
759. The inspector looked surprised. "But I don't want to---" he said. "I mean my instructions are to give you a banquet, if necessary---after all, the community appreciates---" p. 72
760. "No!" said Doc. Mellhorn quite violently. "Excuse me, but you just wait a minute. I mean, if Hippocrates wants to come, I've no objection." p. 63
761. "I don't mean any funny business---voices in your ear and all that." p. 76
762. "By the way," he said diffidently, "I mean, I got back so quick---there wouldn't be a chance of my visiting the other establishment now and then? Where I just came from?" p. 77
763. "Wait a minute," he said. "I want to think. Well, naturally, there's Mother and Dad. But I couldn't see them just yet. I wouldn't believe it. p. 62
764. "Oh, I don't want to do that," said Johnny, "I want to be in on the fighting." p. 161
765. "Then you boss Gang Five from this day forward," said the engineer. "And I'll keep my eye on you. I like a man that uses his head." p. 11
766. "Yes," she said, "I like babies. In fact, I think I'll get married pretty young, just for the experience." p. 150



767. "No," said Doc Mellhorn. You see, I don't believe this. I don't believe any of it. I'm sorry if that sounds cranky, but I don't." p. 22
768. "Tell me," he said in a low voice. "Well, you know what I mean. Afterwards. I mean, if you're likely to see---" he coughed---"your friends again. I mean, if it's so--- like some folks believe." p. 176
769. "Not that I believe a word of it," he said, "but it'll surprise Father Kelly." p. 61

Plays For Americans, Oboler, Arch
Farrar & Rinehart, Inc., New York, 1942

770. "Yeah, an army aviation examining board's setting up headquarters right on the campus to get students to volunteer to join the air corps. And guys are actually joining." p. 17
771. "Now understand me right---I'm speaking from a purely philosophical standpoint." p. 5
772. "I'm telling you you're crazy." p. 4
773. We say, "Keep America out of war! Keep her out of war at any price! We deny that America will ever find a reason to enter this war! We deny that America's enemies are awaiting without!" p. 6
774. The war that is going on in Europe is not our war! No part of it touches our lives! If we keep the American ideal shining brightly, no one will ever dare attack us!" p. 9
775. "Tell me, please---do you believe that nonsense the other boy was saying?" p. 11
776. "We, a handful of the far-seeing students, must put into dynamic action that which we believe!" p. 9
777. "I have been telling them what I believe most profoundly." p. 27
778. "Now wait a minute! I believe that. England and Germany are fighting out their old imperialistic wars! p. 11
779. "You are the chairman---you belong there!"
"I belong where I want to be." p. 10
780. "We're going straight to that island you seem so determined on getting to. I hope the skipper knows where to find it--- I certainly don't remember any such place." p. 13
781. "In your last letter you asked a question and made a wish for me---do you recall?" p. 3



782. "I started to date this letter Dec. 6th and now I see it's half an hour after midnight, and I remember how meticulous you were about times and dates---so I changed the dateline." p. 3

Point of No Return, Jarquand, John F.
Little, Brown and Co., Boston, 1949

783. "Yes," said Nancy. "It's raining hard, and the windshield wipers on the Buick hardly ever work." p. 5

784. "Are you sure she's coming back?" Charles asked.
"Oh, yes, she's coming back," Nancy said. "She's left everything in her room." p. 5

785. "How are Nancy and the children?"
"They're wonderful, Charles said. "They keep me out of trouble." p. 31

786. "I'm being very wise this evening, Charley, and I know I'm right because I've tried to get some of that hay." p. 221

787. "When is Jessica coming back, in October?" p. 359

788. "Yes, sir," Charles had said. "I'm just beginning to see that everything fits into banking somewhere." p. 18

789. "Yes," Charles said. "I'm developing a great respect for your general judgment, Mrs. Whitaker." p. 94

790. "All right," he said, "I'm not forgetting." p. 6

791. "What's the matter, Charley," Bill Corbush called, "are your arches falling?" p. 126

792. "Don't look as though I were hurting you, Charley. I'm going to spend and save and it's perfectly possible." p. 359

793. "Don't you want to hear it Pop?"
"Not right this minute," Charles answered, and he put his arm around Evelyn's shoulders. "You're getting to be a big girl, aren't you?"
"Don't," Evelyn said, "You tickle." p. 104

794. "I'm leaving because I want to get on." p. 315

795. "I'm not running for any office." p. 6

796. "Is Evelyn up?" Charles asked.
"She's up and she's studying her geography," Nancy said.
"And besides, she doesn't use your bathroom." p. 5



797. "We can go over it on the train if you want to," Charles said. "I've got the papers right here."
"Boy, I simply can't," he said, close to Charles's ear because of the roaring of the train. "Tony wants me. He's saving me a seat." p. 17
798. "I wonder why he didn't go to his own bank," Charles said, "not that it's any of my business."
"Because I met him first, Charles," Roger said, "and I'm selling him on the personal service of small banks." p. 18
799. "Evelyn, pass your father his coffee," she said.
"And don't look cute when you're re doing it," Bill said. p. 19
800. "Don't forget to tell Mr. Burton you're looking forward to it, when you see him." p. 2
801. "It's so much easier when one faces facts, but then all life is largely based on an avoidance of fact, and I admit I try to avoid them and twist them. Everybody does. I suppose you're implying that I have occasionally tried to get something for nothing." p. 203
802. "And remember we are going to Burton's Friday night." p. 2
803. "If you're not taking the five-thirty," she said, "call me up." p. 15
804. "You ought to think about those things when you're taking someone like Jessica Lovell anywhere." p. 345
805. "I don't know why you say that," Mrs. Whitaker said. "I've always been taught to supervise my own affairs and Mr. Gray knows it." p. 94
806. "It doesn't make any difference where anyone comes from, it seems to me." p. 35
807. "Is Mrs. Whitaker expecting you?" asked the attendant. p. 88
808. "I hate sitting around with a lot of people," he said, "just talking after dinner." p. 4
809. "Somebody around here always sees everything you do." p. 345
810. "Everybody's always sorry for him," Nancy said. "I wish you'd start feeling sorry for yourself." p. 5

The Reader's Digest, August, 1950

811. The Times never crusades and carries no daily editorial page. p. 96



812. His heart rate also decreases, but often rises again to reach a peak in two or three hours after which it slackens and becomes slowest about four hours later. p. 77
813. And when the people are bewildered, faced with chaos, loss of their jobs and actual want, the hard core strikes and the military takes over. p. 10
814. The attorney abides by the decision of the bar association. p. 98
- 815., Sleep becomes lighter, consciousness flickers, fails, flickers, the brain charge is reversed---the sleeper is awake. p. 77
816. Perhaps he yawns, thereby inhaling extra oxygen to lower the proportion of carbon dioxide that has accumulated in his body as a result of his muscular inactivity during sleep. p. 77
817. His body temperature falls about one half a degree Fahrenheit. p. 77
818. His fingers grow cold and his toes grow warm. p. 77
819. His senses fade. p. 77
820. The passage from waking to sleeping takes only a few seconds and is marked at the end by an abrupt shift in the origin of brain waves (minute electrical charges) from the back part of the head to the front. p. 76
821. Their operations fall into two categories. p. 10
822. The coffee perks in less than a minute. p. 99
823. Maybe I exaggerate. p. 46
824. "We think you're overexpanding, Tom." p. 29
825. The resulting "featherbedding" is growing faster than a banana plant. p. 9
826. "You are singing---exceptionally." p. 74
827. "He'll be all right; his heart and his business are doing fine." p. 29
828. A slanderous rumor travels even faster. p. 99
829. Used on the bottom of a glass percolator soon to be marketed, this coating serves as a resistance heater. p. 69
830. modern English comes in levels or layers, and most dictionaries agree on at least two of these layers: colloquial and formal. p. 47



831. The blood does not leave his brain, contrary to popular belief, but his blood pressure falls rapidly. p. 77
832. The sleeper breathes slowly. p. 77
833. The drip method comes closest to this because the water passes through the grounds only once. p. 14
834. Salzberger lives weekdays in his own three-room suite at the office. p. 24
835. Test pilots are working now at altitudes where oxygen must be pumped into the lungs under pressure. p. 16
836. "Help!" she screamed. "I'm drowning in dollar bills!" p. 5
837. It is increasing the efficiency while reducing the bulk of practically every range and refrigerator built today. p. 87
838. "You're not looking too well, you know." p. 29
839. But it is woefully lacking in modern roads. p. 11
840. Thus you behold the revolution that creeps over the land. p. 103
841. In a country where governments change as often as women's fashions, no political observer would dare predict what posts Robert Schuman and Maurice Schuman will hold in years to come. p. 84
842. The consultation proceeds as usual. p. 96
843. "Would you like to hear a song, Mister? It costs two pennies." p. 1
844. And they [glass curtains] cost about the same as the finest cotton curtains. p. 88

Reader's Digest, September 1950

845. Some of the leading private hospitals in northern cities are opening their doors to young negro physicians as internes and residents. p. 52
846. The people are not as rich as we expected---but their curtesy is amazing. p. 13
847. The nickels in the slots run down a channel into locked safes. p. 144
848. "The company is holding the patent back," you are told. p. 15
849. The lack of adequate housing places another serious limitation on the health of the Negroes. p. 52



850. Thus the movement for a better life for millions of our people goes forward. p. 52
851. Since American history is not a required course in our colleges, a pitifully small number of students actually study history. p. 53
852. Some who ought to know better say that to "drive the Communist Party underground" would make it harder to keep track of. p. 44
853. Everyone to whom we have told this says we couldn't possibly have lived on so little. p. 12
854. The record of the Negro in health progress, while leaving much to be done, provides an excellent answer to those who challenge the sincerity of our democracy. p. 50
855. One out of four of our teacher's colleges does not require any course in American history. p. 56
856. These [devices] range from complicated mechanisms and highly technical processes down to a simple suggestion like a light under a hood. p. 17
857. Translated into longevity, these figures represent a gain of seven years of life within one short decade. p. 51
858. The myth of the everlasting razor blade recurs every year or so, the Gillette Company admits, but always by word-of-mouth rumor. p. 15
859. Yet I know the parents one reads about occasionally who end the physical lives of their children do wrong. p. 21

Reader's Digest, February, 1951

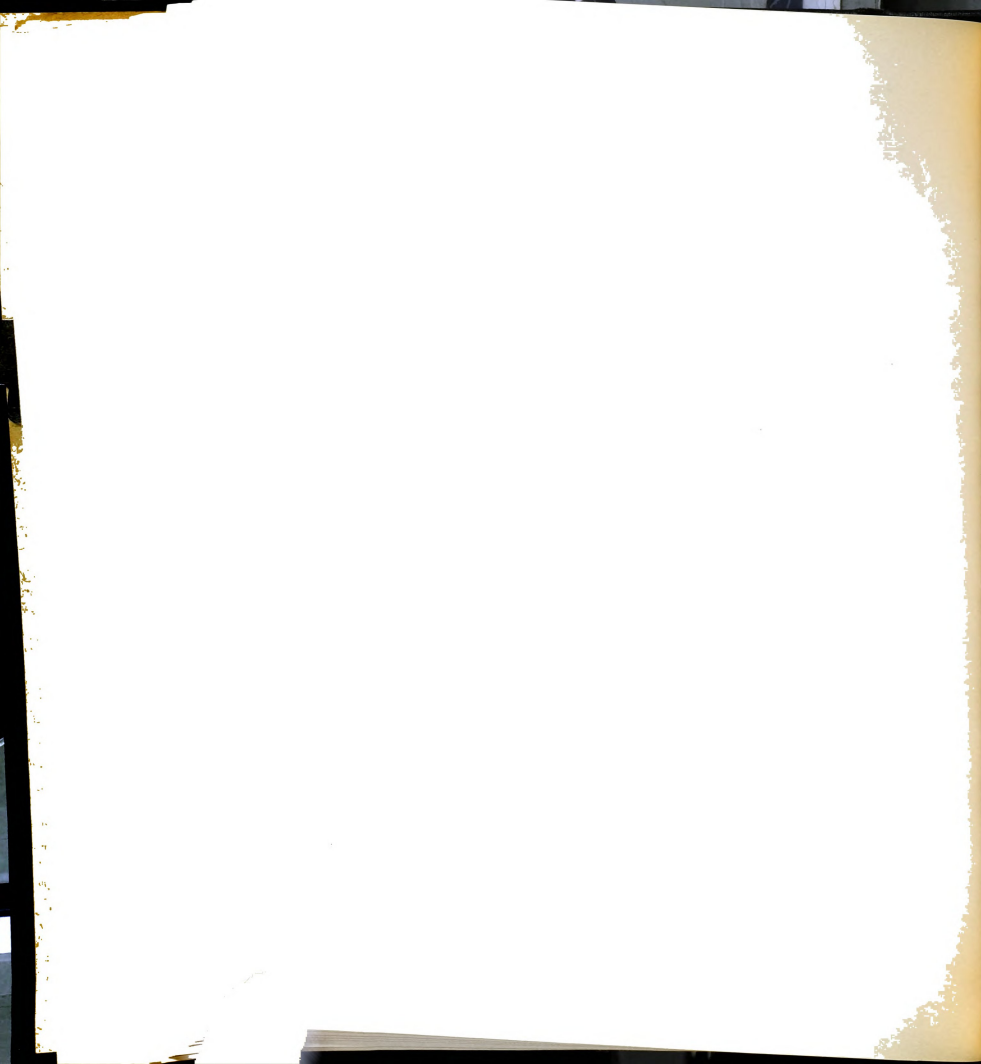
860. "Robert is working so very hard," Mama wrote, but I had to know the truth. p. 143
861. A majority of the professional spies involved in these cases are operating under the control of the MGB, the Russian bureau in charge of foreign espionage. p. 65
862. Second, the inhabitants of the earth are increasing at a rate that would double their number in only 70 years. p. 44
863. "The youngsters," wrote one newspaper observer, "unable to reach the center of the table, scramble like monkeys from one cushion to another, sitting on the rail to complete intricate combinations that leave the on-lookers gasping." p. 10
864. "Maybe my boy could give you a game," the barber murmured, "He's only eight, but he shoots a fair cue." p. 9



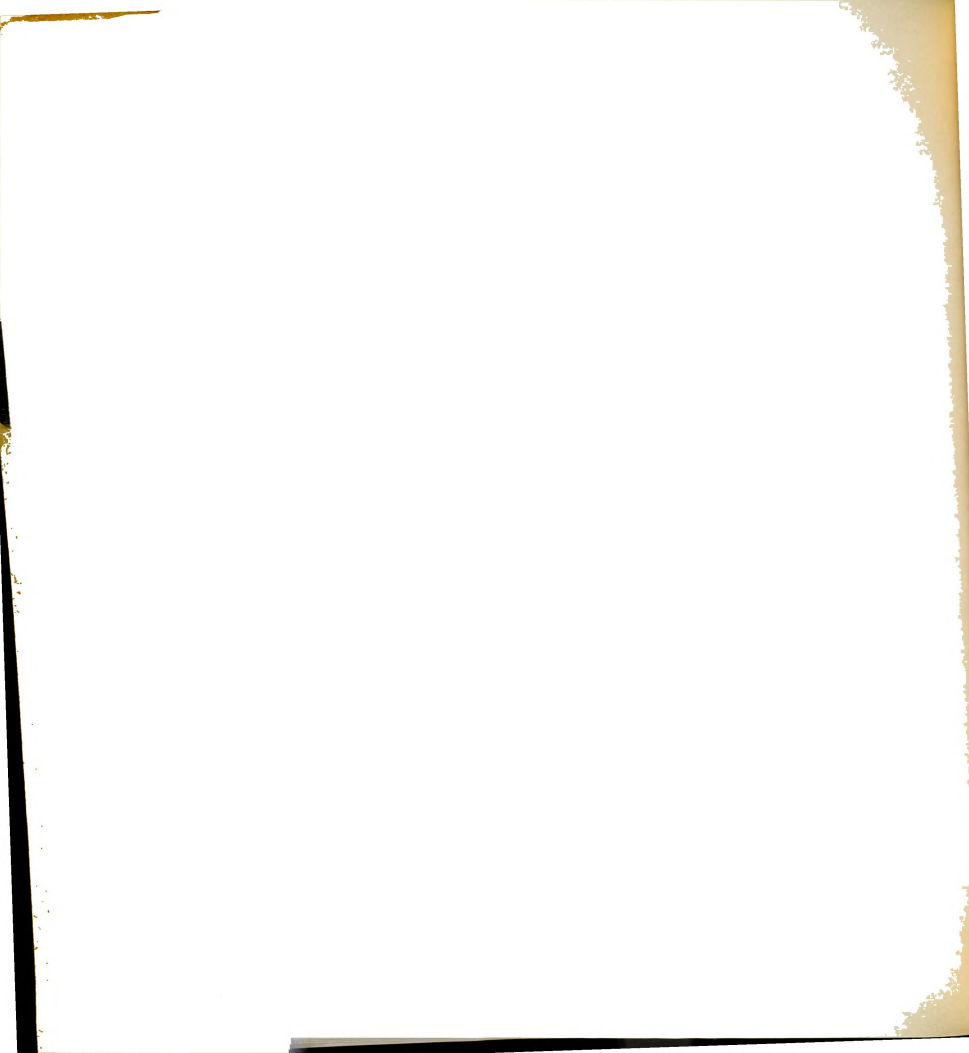
865. Human tissue adheres readily to polyethylene, and since the plastic does not warp or dissolve, it has decided advantages over transplanted cartilage. p. 17
866. Here we sit incommunicado while network employees are busily destroying or locking up all scripts and records of the broadcast. p. 18
867. Filling half the block on the north side of 34th Street between State and Dearborn rises a great gray hulk of brick, four stories high, topped by an ungainly smoke stack, ancient and enormous. p. 21
868. From somewhere comes the high, mad, cackling laughter of an old man. p. 22
869. From somewhere in the vast building comes always the sound of distant human voices---women talking, a baby squalling, children screaming, men muttering, no words distinguishable. p. 22
870. Behind these basic facts lies the unique outlook of a company that nobody runs. p. 61
871. "My husband and I sleep in the bed," she says. p. 24
872. "They stare at me as though I was a damn moose," Charlie says aggrievedly. p. 5
873. Gossip spreads along the mysterious "moccasin telegraph" with lightening speed. p. 7
874. Naval and Marine Air Reservists go for their week-end training to the nearest of our 27 Naval Air Stations. p. 49
875. Little Anna goes to Washington with many ardent admirers, but she will have her troubles too. p. 38
876. In spring prospectors get off at remote mileposts with their packs, gold pans and geiger counters and strike off into the wilderness. p. 6
877. Seismographic crews are sounding all along the route for the oil they believe to be there, somewhere, since the highway runs up the center of the great petroleum belt that stretches from Texas to the Arctic. p. 8
878. Martian cylinders are falling all over the country---Buffalo, Chicago, St. Louis. p. 17
879. Something's crawling out of the cylinder from Mars. p. 15
880. In the long dark corridor a dog is nosing at garbage from an upset can. p. 22



881. Suddenly she said, "We're getting nowhere. Let's go home. See you here Thursday." p. 25
882. "It might be---something's wriggling out. There's another one, and another." p. 16
883. When Harry came home he was a whipped man. "I'm going back," he said flatly, and the terror under which I had been living changed almost to relief at the decision. p. 14^o
884. Many reservists report for training two or three times a month, and some every week-end. p. 49
885. Two hundred and fifty giant tanker trucks and freighters rumble by his cabin every week on their way to Alaska. p.3
886. Trappers ride out to their lines by bus now. p. 6
887. Near dusk now, the fourth-floor balcony is wrapped in gloom, and young men congregate, lounging, smoking cigarettes; they are not talking. p. 24
888. Mrs. Griffin, a small woman with a wrinkled forehead that makes her look always worried, is at home today and so is her mother, a large woman of 89 rocking in the sunlight by the window, a snawl around her shoulders, a white lace cap on her head. p. 23
889. Most of the Weekend Warriors---not all, for younger men are coming in---served in world War II. p. 48
890. The Dutch are completing a long and difficult comeback. p. 121
891. Of even greater importance, these youngsters are developing cooperative attitudes---and rejecting the "something for nothing" philosophy---through the daily give-and-take required in running a business. p. 22
892. "What are you doing with them [letters]?" she asked. "Oh, we have form letters for reply," a secretary said. p. 37
893. For some minutes the sexton examines the corpse, touching it lightly here, there, with its feelers, "running its fingers" over the body. What it is determining, we don't know. Clearly, however, it is making tests of one sort and another. p. 13
894. Denver, Colorado is doing a remarkable job of keeping young people in school. p. 89
895. By adhering to an outdated curriculum, most schools are force-feeding boys and girls information they will never need, denying them training for the kinds of jobs they will have, and driving them from their desks through sheer boredom. p. 89



896. Our schools today are not meeting this danger. Unless they do a much better job they are not going to meet it tomorrow. p. 92
897. Maybe it is impossible to start a new automobile company today, but General Motors is going to need a new president in a few years, and it is certainly going to need new production men. p. 126
898. "Either you are a very good patient or else I'm not hurting you." p. 136
899. With energy-sapping malaria checked, the people of Cyprus are painting and patching their houses, planting fields, digging wells, re-acquiring land they lost in the years of their illness. p. 77
900. Communism in West and South Europe is receding. Short of catastrophe, it no longer endangers any state there. p. 123
901. We are supporting 40 per cent of the entire cost of the United Nations. p. 86
902. "You're not wasting our time, Mr. Rossi," the Special Agent reassured him. "Anyone who sees anything suspicious has both the right and duty to consult us." p. 67
903. He is waiting to be "drafted" as leader of the French. p. 122
904. British-Yukon Navigation Co. buses take you to Dry Creek (Mile 1184), where you change to Alaska Coachways. p. 4
905. On the ground is a long narrow bank of mailboxes, tarnished brass, 176 of them. One has 13 names on it, including seven different family names. p. 22
906. One of them [children] throws a fistful of paper over the railing and it flutters down: policy slips. p. 22
907. Although Young left a regular job 23 years ago, he still acts as senior consultant for the J. Walter Thompson Company, the advertising agency where he was vice-president before he retired. p. 69
908. Today at 63, Willie is still traveling thousands of miles a year to give charity performances and exhibitions, and to defend his championships. p. 12
909. "Sometimes, I go to bed," he said, "but I am still thinking intensely." p. 106
910. Although this plant has ten times the capacity of the old one, it is already bursting at the seams. p. 103
911. Where the road is built on eternally frozen ground, it buckles and heaves; on the jellylike muskeg it is continually sinking and must be graveled afresh every month. p. 6



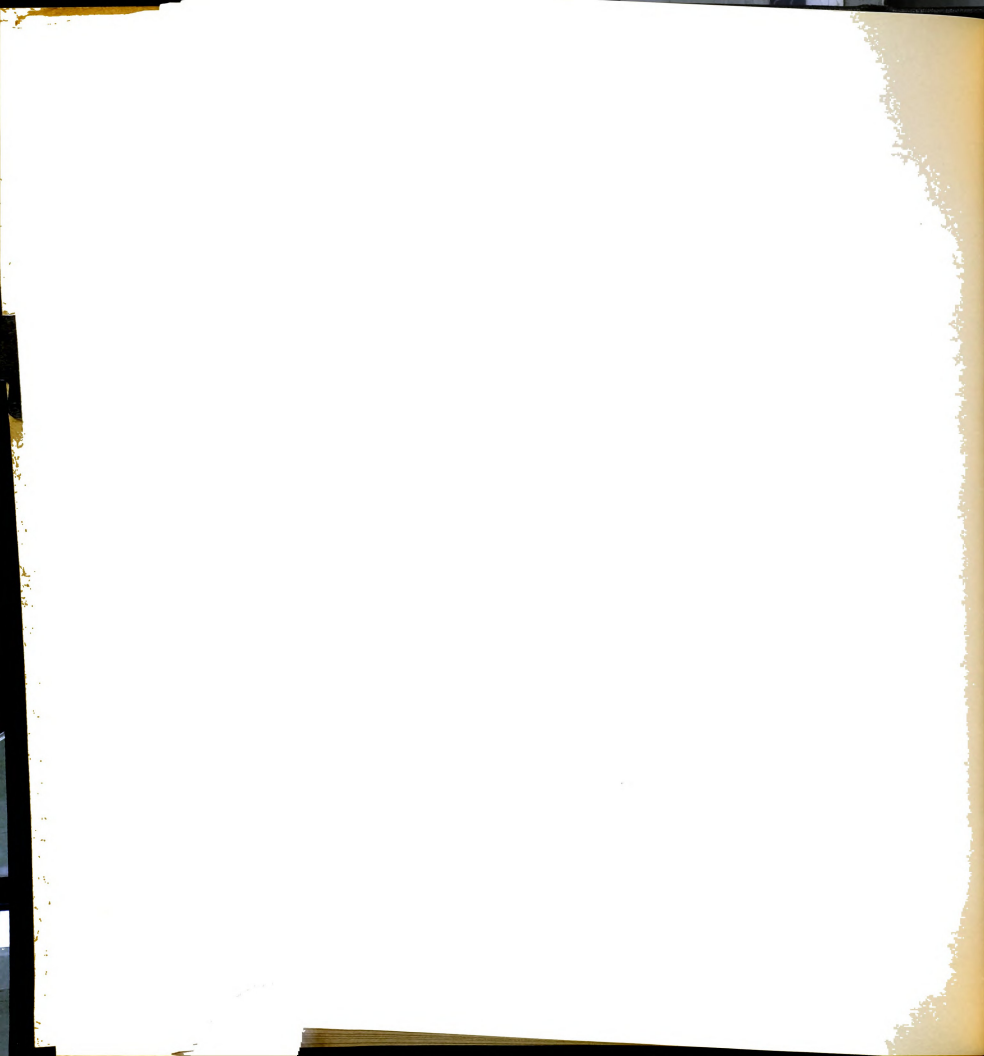
912. Charlie Johnson now gets his newspaper three times a week, instead of every three years. p. 3
913. In the treatment of burns, gauze dressings frequently slow up or defeat cell regeneration. p. 53
914. Short of catastrophe, it no longer endangers any state there. p. 123
915. Do you think you are being protected by American intercept planes and a radar detection network to warn us in time that the Russians may be coming? p. 85
916. The Swiss are again mining their strategic roads, preparing to defend themselves against invasion. p. 122
917. As I write this, Gertrude Hornbostel has been free for some time and is still carrying on the campaign for a sane understanding of Hansen's disease. p. 157
918. Some of the Mecca inhabitants who moved in while they were on relief are now earning good money in the steel mills or on Pullman cars and one or two earn upward of \$5000 a year, but they are imprisoned here by the scarcity of dwellings for Negroes. p. 24
919. When I was a boy we walked three miles to school. Now we spend \$5000 for a bus to pick up the children so they don't have to walk. p. 1
920. "And when I see a guy that looks good and married I say, 'How about a gardenia for your girl?' It doesn't make sense-- but it sure is good for business." p. 2
921. "When people think of the J.C. Penny Co. they think of Mr. Penny---but I don't, with all due respect to Mr. Penny. p. 62
922. Surveys suggest, incidentally, that when a racy story is recounted in mixed company the men show a greater tendency to become embarrassed than the women do!" p. 20
923. To this day he uses his income,--now some \$50,000 a year -- to further his Christian projects, keeping only enough for a frugal living. p. 31
924. The new "oxidized cellulose gauze" not only stops bleeding but seems to hasten the clotting process. p. 55
925. In one apartment a woman and her husband are raising nine children. p. 24
926. On a balcony children are playing store, using a cardboard box. p. 22



927. Today the plantation is flourishing and investors are crowding in to buy land which formerly couldn't be given away. p. 72
928. Once again this diminutive giant is preaching to millions his gospel of love and brotherhood. p. 12
929. Near the State Street entrance a man is digging with a knife at something in the door. He gets it out. p. 22
930. From the Chicago Loop, where sunlight off the lake front strikes the shining towers, State Street turns straight south. p. 21
931. A Rockefeller Foundation report states that if it is not to reach 90 or 100 million there will have to be a more rapid decrease in the birth rate than has occurred in Western countries. p. 45
932. In the uplands dark spruces stand in decorative rows as though put there by a landscape gardener, creating the curious illusion that you are riding through a well-kept city park. p. 4
933. All day long people stand at the balconies, leaning on the railings, gazing at other people facing them across the wall, gazing down at the floors far below, occasionally calling back and forth, but most of the time just standing silent. p. 21
934. Often Romanoff gets so preoccupied with the egg that he can't sleep. p. 106
935. Why do people refuse to stay in high school? Because, as one educator put it, "we are offering them a slingshot education in a hydrogen-bomb age." p. 89
936. Dr. Karl Z. Morgan of the Oak Ridge atomic laboratory states that there is no instrument, including a Geiger counter, capable of detecting an atom bomb stowed in the proper kind of crate. p. 87
937. Others are casting interested eyes at the immense quantities of pulpwood and water power going to waste...and the iron which fills the hills so thickly in some places that it renders compasses and radios useless. p. 8
938. Library shelves are bulging with popular, well-illustrated books on everything you wonder about. p. 134
939. I asked if she wasn't afraid the little boy would be crushed. "Not at all," she answered, "He bites." p. 56
940. A number of studies show that a keen appreciation of wit and a lively sense of humor tend to go hand-in-hand with high intelligence. p. 20



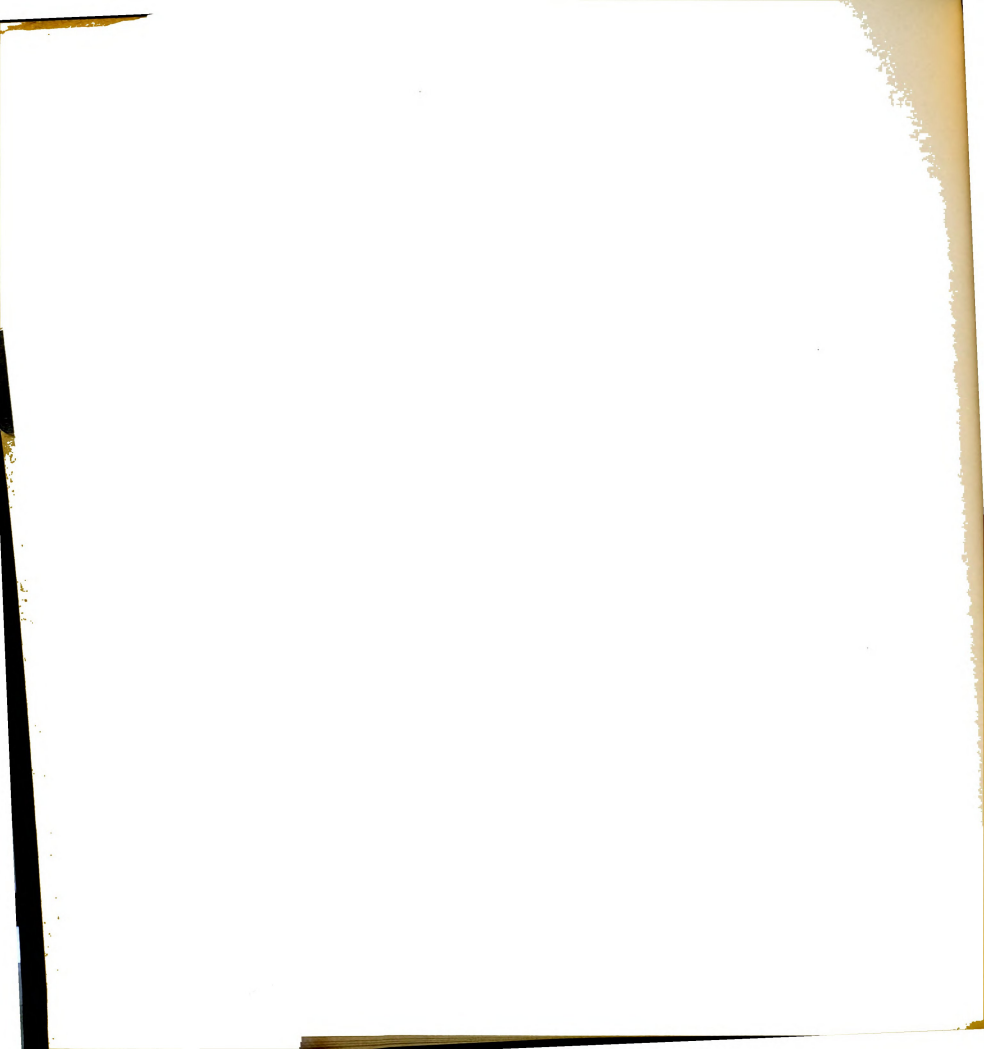
941. "Communism's only power is to diagnose some of the ills of disordered society," says Kagawa. "It has no cure. It creates only an infantile paralysis of the social order." p. 27
942. It melts the snow and converts sections of the highway into a ribbon of smooth ice, providing the supreme test of driving skill. p. 8
943. To judge correctly what merchandise to carry, when to carry it, and when to clear it out demands that the store manager have roots in his community, and penny managers generally have a length of service that makes managers of some chains seem like travelling salesmen. p. 63
944. Once you've got it [the idea] you develop it so that it will work, and drive relentlessly until you put it over. p. 70
945. Thousands of them drive several hundred miles a round trip, at their own expense. p. 49
946. "Development of this faculty does more than anything else to provide tolerance and understanding. p. 12
947. But a public trial often discloses the bureau's secret sources of information---and the trapped network is replaced with new and unknown people. p. 66
948. President Hughes...draws the maximum salary permitted in the company---just \$10,000 a year. p. 62
949. If a project originates in government, it must be backed by an act of Congress; that eliminates political causes or departmental projects. p. 72
950. Why do we find so few dead animals and birds? p. 13
951. Three basic population problems face the world. p. 14
952. Throughout the nation generally, some thirty percent of all the boys and girls entering senior high school fail to finish. p. 89
953. No other country but us forgets its own homeland. p. 86
954. Communism feeds and grows upon poor people and bankrupt governments. p. 45
955. Beyond that modest ceiling, central-office executives get additional pay based on the company's over-all profits; and the store manager gets the largest share of a store profit-sharing pool, normally equal to one third of his store's net after taxes. p. 62



956. A man who can see the funny side of a situation, however trying, is far less likely to "blow his top" and is much less subject to irritation. Consequently he gets along with people better. p. 12
957. He hires and trains his own personnel and promotes them until they reach the profit-sharing level. p. 63
958. Every Naval Air Station has a staff held in instant readiness to man mothballed naval air bases in the Pacific, in Africa and at home. p. 42
959. I predict that the Reader's Digest, which carried a sensational piece of propaganda on the antihistamines, will not report the FTC's reaction. p. 41
960. They have no refrigeration to store meat. p. 1
961. Incredible as it seems, we do not have a single radar-equipped picket boat on constant duty anywhere off-shore to warn our coasts and aid our air forces. p. 85
962. Nowhere does it say the white man has the right to investigate the Indian's eating habits. p. 1
963. We don't have any commander-in-chief issuing orders. We have leadership, but responsibility is divided. p. 63
964. Willie ignores such tactics. His own table manner is impeccable yet devastating. p. 12
965. He and his wife keep the store open from daylight to midnight---and then he doesn't go to bed till he's looked up and down the street to see if there's a customer in sight. p. 62
966. Selling for cash only, it lacks the lure of consumer credit. p. 41
967. Denver schools lose only nine per cent. p. 39
968. Some officers, who think that stringent discipline is the way to make soldiers, oppose every effort to extend the plan. p. 33
969. Meanwhile, the Alaska Highway offers the most exciting ride in North America. p. 8
970. To men and nations he offers his formula for rich and worthy living. p. 33
971. Yet we do not even open the crates on the Red ships we say we inspect. p. 87



972. Thus a planned economy presents the opportunity in one neat and tidy package to extort more and more taxes from the consumer...and convince him that the people who are doing this to him are his benefactors. p. 60
973. The foreigners, who by this time are raising their own food, regard this as some form of low economic imperialism, and everything is now thoroughly confused. p. 49
974. Now that the American people have become convinced that Stalin is really confronting them with the choice of resisting, appeasing or surrendering they can be counted on to back any policy which will protect their basic values. p. 124
975. "Isn't it wonderful what we are doing in Korea?" p. 130
976. I looked at him, and he smiled a little, and shook his head. "Remember what I told you, sir," he said, "and though what you are thinking does you credit, don't be spoiling it, now." p. 95
977. Psychologists agree that the better your sense of humor, the more enjoyment you're getting out of life. p. 19
978. Everyone knows what tremendous weights can be supported by leg muscles when a man is lying on his back. As the sexton lies on its back, pushing upward with six stout black legs, it has almost unbelievable power. p. 13
979. While his opponent is shooting, Hoppe, with supreme self-assurance, stares nonchalantly at the ceiling, waiting for the miss. p. 12
980. If the company is to continue growing, emphasis must shift toward the Atlantic seaboard, where the bulk of U.S. consumers live. p. 64
981. You can develop a sense of humor in much the same way you cultivate an appreciation of music. p. 19
982. It is easy to see what an advantage Communism has over democracy in the face of this rapid multiplication of poor people. p. 45
983. The best estimates we have indicate that India increased by 50 million inhabitants during the decade 1931-40. p. 46
984. The annual crop of 6000 bushels, which he calls "Old Jim Young's Mountain-Grown Apples", eventually will expand to about 30,000 bushels a year. p. 47
985. Who wanted the papers and why? And was the undertaker a loyal citizen or was he a "double-double", bureau slang for an espionage agent who tries to play both sides?" p. 37



986. Store managers who make \$30,000 to 50,000 a year are not uncommon. p. 13
987. The officially checked facts in this article should wake up those Americans who dare to be complacent about "spy scares". p. 65
988. He is plagued by traveling salesmen and by tourists who stop to photograph his white beard and buckskins. p. 3
989. The Americans who take this intensive training don't stay in Moscow; they come home; they're here now. p. 69
990. If General MacArthur's assertion that "as Japan goes, so goes all Asia" is sound, we may well take a closer look at Kagawa. p. 30
991. The current objectives of Communist espionage include the following: p. 68
992. We get so jammed up with the thoughts of the world that we continually fail to remember the United States. p. 86
993. Two fifths of all the milk that Akron drinks now is supplied by Lawson. p. 103
994. If you wish, you can make the trip in comfortable 35-passenger buses that run from Dawson Creek to Fairbanks three times a week. p. 4
995. All the cold victim cares about is whether he can take something that minimizes his misery. p. 41
996. But his greatest triumph is the fact that the company still follows his principles, though he has not been its top executive officer for over 50 years. p. 52
997. Buried under two or three feet of solidly packed snow and kept clear by plows, it provides a smooth, dust-free surface. p. 8
998. "Anyone who sees anything suspicious has both the right and duty to consult us." p. 57
999. "There is no way on earth," Young says, "to keep a boy who wants an education from getting one." p. 71
1000. "He doesn't know when to quit," a neighbor is reported to have remarked. p. 62
1001. Penny's total sales of \$880,000,000 in 1949 means that it paid out some half a billion dollars to suppliers, which translates into enormous orders in almost every line. p. 63



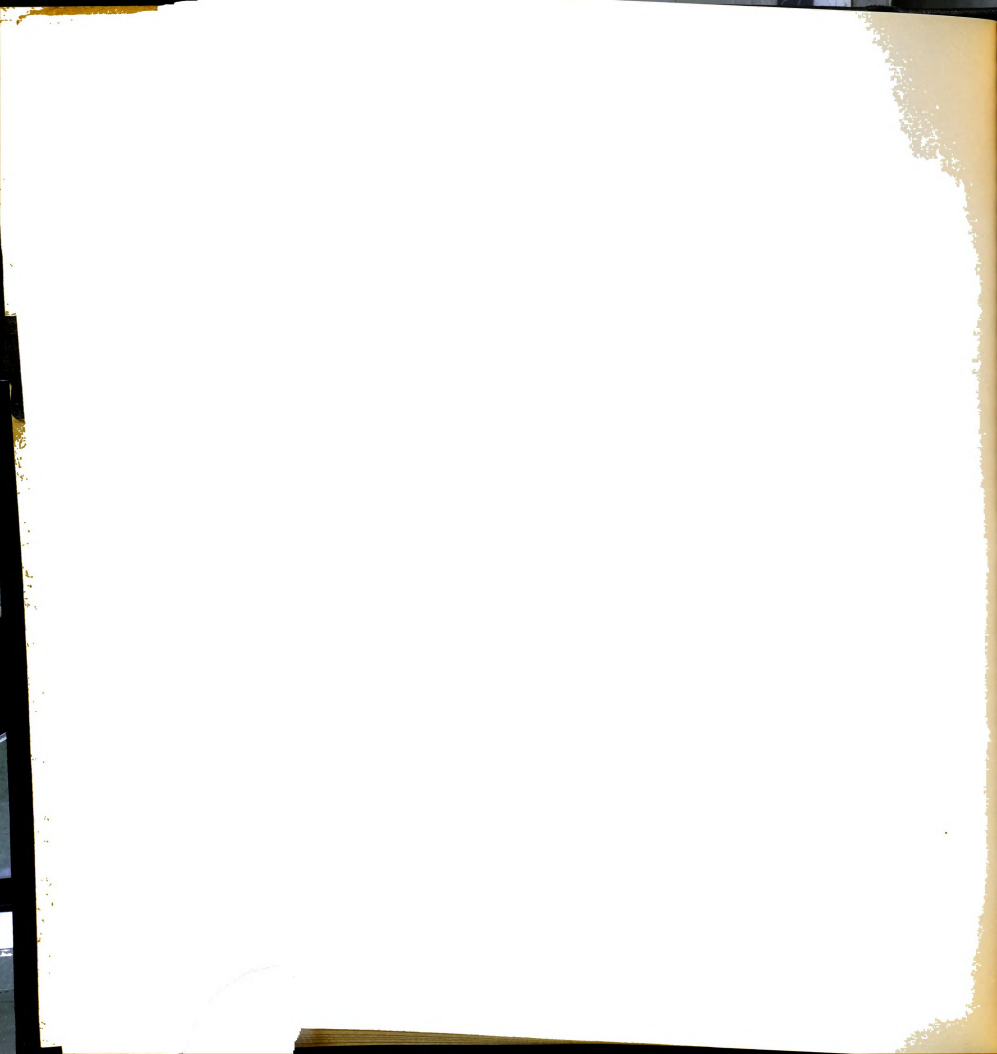
1002. And when little Anna means business only a very brave man or a very stupid man will stand in her way. p. 38
1003. As we passed a school bus, he exclaimed, "See! That's what mean." p. 1
1004. A chubby, brown-haired youngster trotted in. "Willie," said the barber, "this gentleman wishes a game of pool. Will you oblige?" p. 2
1005. The arms of the U are great halls, each lit by a skylight four stories overhead which, because of the accumulated dirt, admits the kind of unreal light found underseas. p. 21
1006. Without this first freedom the four freedoms remain just so many unworkable ideals. p. 45
1007. The lower part of the vestibule once was covered with marble but now ragged patches reveal naked brick. p. 21
1008. The foreigners, who by this time are raising some of their own food, regard this as some form of low economic imperialism, and everything is now thoroughly confused. p. 59
1009. Millions the world over regard him as the model of all that Christianity should mean. p. 29
1010. "I looked up and saw big trees toppling over and I thought I had gone crazy," Charlie recalls. p. 3
1011. Kansas wheat farmers are impressed by fields that return 35 bushels and more to the acre. p. 8
1012. Though virtually everyone prides himself on his sense of humor, surveys indicate that a surprising number of people are sadly lacking in this department. p. 19
1013. You should observe, too, the ancient law of the rukon that no one may withhold help from anyone who needs it. p. 4
1014. Officially, all you need now to make the trip is a driver's license, six good tires (eight would be better), \$100 in cash to prove you can pay your way, and an ancient policy. p. 4
1015. We notice it, perhaps, when we are out mulching the roses in the afternoon. We think: Tomorrow I must bury that poor beast. p. 13
1016. He loves to tell how at 22 he let his first serious business venture...go bankrupt rather than donate a weekly bottle of whisky to the cook in the local hotel. p. 62
1017. The staff includes every specialist and skilled artisan needed to put an air base into operation overnight. p. 49



1018. It is not the intense cold, however, but the warm Chinook wind from the Pacific that drivers fear most in winter. p. 8
1019. The people of the north expect the Alaska Highway to bring them a permanent economic boom some day. p. 8
1020. Yet the 1612 Penney stores comprise one of the world's most formidable retail organizations. p. 61
1021. But in our own country today, our air leaders officially calculate that they would be lucky to stop five or ten per cent of Stalin's bombers before they reached here. Stalin knows this. p. 85
1022. Daylight operations commence at seven and continue to sunset when night flying begins. p. 49
1023. But nothing in the move to the East seems to threaten the company's decentralization, which top management considers unique and unbeatable and which the company officers have absorbed over all or most of their working lives. p. 64
1024. Sticking to the traditional soft goods, it avoids both the high-markup lines...that fatten the dime store chains, and the home appliances and other big-ticket items that swell the volume of department stores. p. 61

Reader's Digest, March 1951

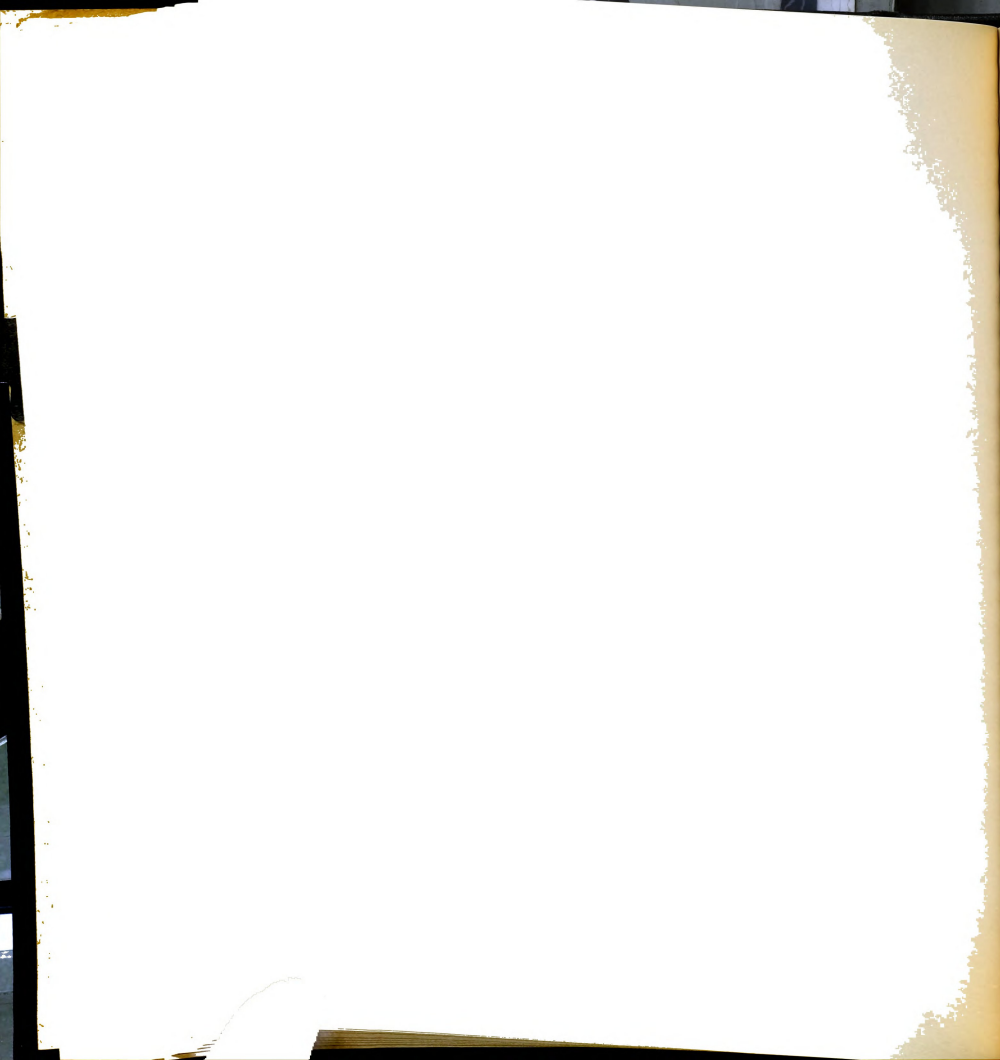
1025. They imagine that lions and tigers are suffering when the circus trainer snaps a whip at them and sticks a kitchen chair in their teeth. They're having the time of their lives. p. 71
1026. Industry, in short, is paying higher premiums than ever before for manual and mechanical skills. p. 30
1027. The Soviet Bloc is waging an ideological crusade against the free nations. p. 121
1028. The kremlin governs (by terror and talk) a vast empire with over a hundred internal colonies. p. 123
1029. They [rats] never eat it again. p. 92
1030. In this article side gives those answers---and sounds some warnings which seem to be long overdue. p. 17
1031. When I arrive at the Senate Office Building at 9 A.M. my staff is opening the 500 to 1000 letters I receive daily. p. 13
1032. Today, drugstores are selling Banthine under doctor's prescriptions, and it has given relief to thousands. p. 116



- 1033. Japan is finding it harder and harder to sell her exports.
p. 68
- 1034. Whatever it is, animals perform it, not only when caged,
p. 71
- 1035. It [European] Industry does things which in the U.S. would
be deemed a conspiracy against the public interest and pro-
secuted under our anti-trust laws. p. 49
- 1036. It [a drug] dilates the pupils of the eyes, and some patients
may have trouble reading. p. 118
- 1037. It [The Middle East] holds the Suez area---the strategic key
to three continents. p. 121
- 1038. Animals, you see, don't have the ideas of freedom and capti-
vity. p. 70
- 1039. "I don't care," I said abruptly. "My family has a black box."
p. 89
- 1040. The school puts on an annual gala week-end, known as "Hotel
Ezra Cornell." p. 104
- 1041. Few people realize that animals have this property instinct.
p. 71
- 1042. The Red Cross needs your help. p. 12
- 1043. The basic reason is that big business in Europe avoids compe-
tition like the plague. p. 49
- 1044. Irritating foods and beverages may make your ulcer grow,
while Banthine masks the symptoms. p. 118

Reader's Digest, September, 1951

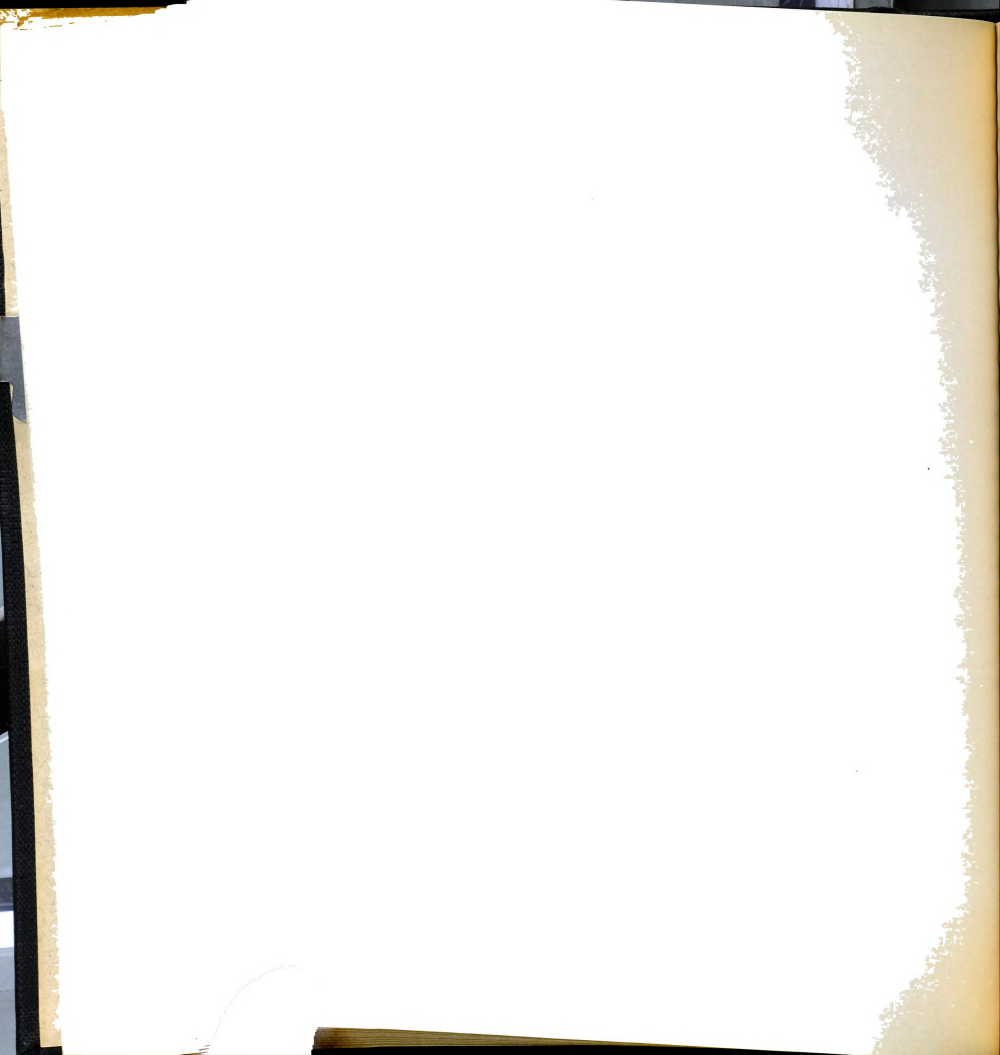
- 1045. The problem involves the capture of men's minds no less than
of their bodies. p. 137
- 1046. It includes the states of Viet Nam, Laos and Cambodia. p. 136
- 1047. The list includes Milwaukee and Madison, the capital. p. 139
- 1048. ...it [fluorine] occurs chiefly in water from deep wells. p. 141
- 1049. ...but they draw visitors from everywhere. p. 143
- 1050. The company receives hundreds of requests a year from all
over the world for its famous Boston baked beans recipe.
p. 145
- 1051. Assembly belts speed the plates in long rows under nine
nozzles which eject filling, in precise amounts at synchro-
nized intervals. p. 144



1052. Machines mix the dough, drop pre-cut linings into plates and crimp the edges. p. 144
1053. They know that Eisenhower won't. p. 15
1054. The practical problem remains untouched by those labels. p. 30
1055. The comparison, then, requires an algebraic equation of the kind familiar to every school child. p. 123
1056. The visitors recognize the element of pride---even vanity---in the American's eagerness to explain his methods. p. 5
1057. Rearmament is creating plenty of headaches for the American people, but I doubt whether they fully realize how much more serious are problems it creates for their European allies. p. 125
1058. They sound more like literary, philosophical essays than political speeches. p. 44
1059. This is how I feel about Dwight Eisenhower. p. 17
1060. "I know how we all feel about being rescued," he said. p. 28
1061. Ike hates to read any document longer than a page. p. 16
1062. "I owe everything to my wife---and boy, is she collecting!" p. 78
1063. Behind the economic illusions of the moment, the dancers are gathering. p. 57
1064. "I'm not asking anything from you, Mr. Morris. You may not believe me." p. 13
1065. His modesty, his directness his tact all enter into this. p. 15
1066. Slowly the pressures of the inflationary spiral are circulating just beneath the surface of our economy. p. 57
1067. We are sitting on economic dynamite, and unless we accept high taxes and tight controls on prices and wages, the fuse is in the Politburo's hand. p. 57
1068. True, we are spinning on a lump of dirt in illimitable space, without being sure why; true, we will surely die. p. 32
1069. One user remarks: "It keeps damp cellars dry; tools no longer rust". His wife adds: "salt flows the year around, shoes don't mildew, curtains don't go limp, our house no longer has that musty summer smell." p. 69



1070. The mass of American people are trying to steer a course between not enough government on the one hand and too much government on the other. p. 89
1071. A lot of women are trying to see who can get the most out of an evening gown. p. 66
1072. Moralists are always talking of the grand and comprehensive happiness. p. 88
1073. "They the letters are all coming from those pesky income-tax people!" p. 72
1074. Then darned if she didn't smile at me and wink, as if to say, "What are you worrying about Skip? You'll get them." p. 40
1075. To make the tours a success, Chambers of Commerce, the CIO, the AFL and the National Association of Manufacturers are cooperating. p. 4-5
1076. These Europeans are discovering something else. p. 4
1077. "Can you pick up a patient at Atlantic City right away and fly her to Memphis? She is my eighty-year-old mother. She is dying and she wants to be home." p. 140
1078. "These birds aren't going to let us go," he said. They're arguing whether they should shoot us or take us in." p. 27
1079. Social Security administrators are having trouble explaining this advice issued by one of their regional offices: p. 69
1080. For simplicity's sake, I am leaving out all the other Communist countries on the one side and all other countries of the North Atlantic Alliance on the other. p. 123
1081. "You're making money out of Joe that he can't afford to lose." p. 13
1082. Pardon, your slip is showing. p. 121
1083. He has a fine baritone voice and is taking singing lessons, hoping to sing in opera some day. p. 88
1084. Beyond that, the Navy isn't talking. The Underwater Demolition Teams are again top-secret units. p. 108
1085. The Red Cross is teaching it to more than 100,000 first-aid and water-safety instructors. p. 8
1086. American air forces were dropping leaflets saying, "Your forests are withering. Why not renew them? We can see everything." p. 117
1087. "Poor gooks think the Commies are coming back." p. 22



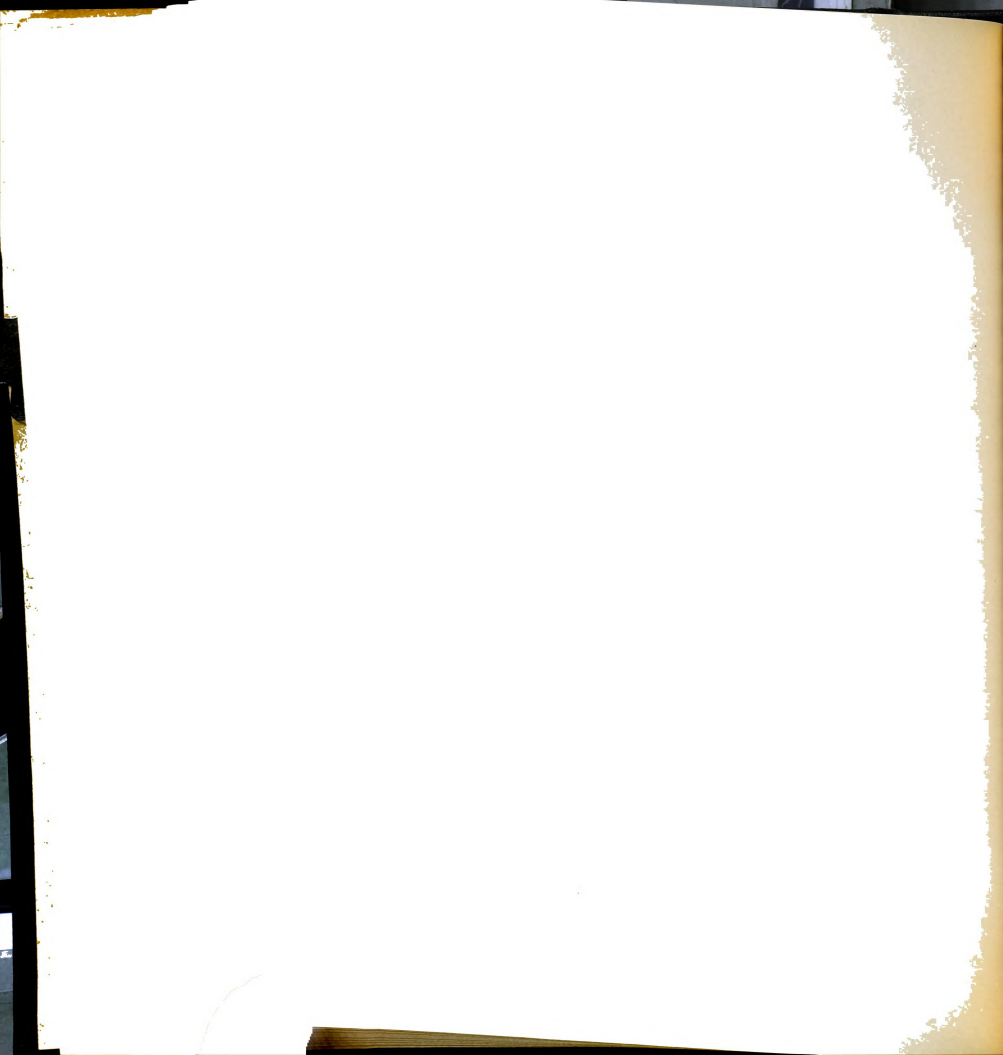
1088. Business men throw open their factories and serve as personal guides. p. 7
1089. Santa Cruz, 75 miles down the penninsula from San Francisco, thrives on tourists, and its Chamber of Commerce is constantly striving for inexpensive publicity. p. 36
1090. The General's liking for other people, his ability to understand the other person's point of view, make him little short of a prodigy at personal relationships. p. 15
1091. But he lets the five stars on his shoulders tell the story. p. 18
1092. Eisenhower at 61 looks energetically fit. p. 16
1093. Steinman helps to balance their budget and keep Air Ambulances flying---by free-lance piloting. p. 193
1094. "Just a minute, Elsie. I have to see if anything is burning besides Walter." p. 78
1095. "Have you any idea who is sending you these letters?" p. 72
1096. "Why not get an appointment to Annapolis?" the midshipman suggested. p. 18
1097. A mediator aims at "keeping the pot boiling,"---keeping the disputants talking---even if a settlement is nowhere in sight. p. 136
1098. Hence, inflation acts to scale down his debt and at the same time to increase his cash income. p. 55
1099. We are sending tanks in to pick you up. p. 28
1100. Salazar writes the speeches he delivers on special occasions. p. 44
1101. "We show our competitors through the plant any old day." p. 5
1102. Today the third fiscal typhoon is forming. p. 57
1103. Usually negotiations take more time. p. 136
1104. Some people argue that Ike is a military man and so should not be President. p. 18
1105. Few of the frogmen themselves know just what sort of amphibious operations they are preparing for. p. 103
1106. The communist propaganda machine says the "Anglo-American imperialists" are arming because they want war. p. 124
1107. Each shift wants to prove it can outdig the other guys. p. 5



1108. "I've been pestered with threatening letters and I want something done about it!" p. 72
1109. On the other hand, by following what the propaganda machine puts into men's minds, one can judge what they're thinking. p. 10
1110. That is what happened in Germany after World War I, and it produced Hitler. That is what is happening to a lesser degree in the rest of Europe today. p. 57
1111. What are the chances of postponing conflict between East and West long enough to allow new and younger men, who are not laboring under the obsolete geographical concept of security to grow up and take over?" p. 10
1112. European members of the North Atlantic Treaty Organizations add another complaint: that the need to import materials for rearmament and the high prices to which materials have been driven all over the world are unsettling their precariously poised balances of payments and leading them to the currency crises that they hoped they had left behind in 1950. p. 122
1113. Some have protested; more have not because of the fact that the husband is bringing home more money than ever before. p. 16
1114. There is evidence from such semi-documentary sources as the Proven, filmed in cooperation with the Navy, that the UDT is now experimenting with some form of "aquapulping". p. 103
1115. Some can stay under for three minutes by remaining motionless, but 50 seconds is maximum when they are working. p. 108

Saturday Evening Post, May 3, 1952

1116. Farmers are arriving in increasing numbers. p. 102
1117. "You're asking him to crawl into a hole, away from life, and pull the hole in after him. It isn't right." p. 90
1118. What are we stopping here for?" p. 30
1119. "You aren't going out, sir?" he asked. "If there's anything I can do---"
"I'm going up and take a look at that sunken road. I'll feel better when I see how things are with my own eyes." p. 90
1120. You are jolting over the cobblestones of a road laid in 1837 for six-horse teams. The highway you want is thirty-five feet above you---elevated through here, and as unattainable as if it ran on the rooftops. p. 112
1121. "I'm going down town for a little while. You better get in the house and see if Ma wants anything." p. 21



1122. "The boys are working shifts around the clock now," she said.
p. 132
1123. "I'm going out for football this fall," he had told Sue a few nights ago, watching her face for the effect of this announcement, and then, not satisfied with it, adding, "I wouldn't be surprised if I make the varsity." p. 121
1124. Captain Weiss said shortly, "You are talking nonsense. England has been defeated. The war is over." p. 37
1125. "Haven't you got through to Corps yet, sergeant?" he asked grumpily.
"Not yet, sir." The sergeant fiddled nervously with the dials of the radio on the back seat of the car. "I'm still trying, sir," he added unnecessarily. p. 24
1126. "Everybody and his brother," Corps radioed back, "are trying to get into that town." p. 136
1127. The propertied middle class is small---ten per cent---many have fled earlier, and the rest are trying to cling to what they have. p. 102
1128. In his swan-song address last month, President Truman declared that it was "just as immoral to use the law-making power of the Government to enrich the few at the expense of the many, as it is to steal money from the Public Treasury. That is stealing money from the Public Treasury." p. 10
1129. Asking directions is how you get back from a 1400-mile trip with 1700 miles on your tires---and why hundreds at this minute are driving due east toward Eternal Rest Cemetery in the happy delusion that the road leads north to U.S. 8. p. 30
1130. "I've lost two trucks; neither the rig nor any of the boys are earning their keep." p. 128
1131. Workers---skilled artisans, factory hands and common laborers---are fleeing the worker's paradise in droves. p. 102
1132. "No Canadian court is going to grant you an injunction against the damming up of a useless bit of territory like this. You don't seem to realize what you're up against." p. 130
1133. "That Sue," Mike went on, "is getting to be quite a little dish." p. 122
1134. England is gathering her strength and she will soon re-enter the fight. p. 37
1135. It is growing late, motels are switching on the No vacancy signs, restaurants are running out of ice for the iced tea. p. 30
1136. Your little lane curves inexorably to the north. Half a mile across the field, cars, trucks and busses are tooling along a fine four-lane highway curving south. p. 112



1137. It was three o'clock in the morning when Turner waked him. "They're hitting the sunken road, sir. I thought you'd want to know." p. 92
1138. Well, we at this end are looking for another contact for you, an odd character called Trawler Langley. p. 86
1139. You may revise your route for the kiddies' sake. You are laying our \$600 to give them a view of their own, their native land, and across six states, five famous rivers and three mountain ranges they have had their beaks buried in comic books. p. 111
1140. "Hi, kind," he said, coming out of the shop, wiping his hands on his coveralls, "How's football practice?"-----
"I'm not playing," he said. "I turned in my suit." p. 125
1141. It's hard to explain. But in these days of battle, murder and sudden death, it is refreshing to know that at least one person, thank God, has had time to remember the ancient varieties. p. 81
1142. It is striving to organize, finance and build an edifice to be known as The Temple of Good Will. p. 100
1143. "I'm sending you, an able-bodied man, on the biggest piece of crack-brained nonsense of the war. That's all." p. 79
1144. That is why 25,000 husbands are snarling. "That was the third stop light, I tell you ----" p. 30
1145. Young punks who would steal pies from pie wagons are sneaking two and four-dollar bets." p. 114
1146. "You are taking an inordinately long time to come to the point. What is it?" p. 37
1147. "You're just throwing away good bits and wearing out your rig for nothing," Cliff said excitedly. p. 128
1148. "Well, what are we waiting for?" I said. "Let's go back there." p. 136
1149. I turned back to carry. "You're willing to go on drilling?" He looked around at his crew. "And why not, eh, boys? We go on drilling till we have to swim for it? That right?" p. 130
1150. Far in the misty distance, if anybody knew which way, lies Route 16, which the travelers seem to be missing by about six miles. p. 30
1151. "I don't give a hang, but I don't intend to have a battalion wiped out because-----" p. 87
1152. "It looks O.k." p. 21



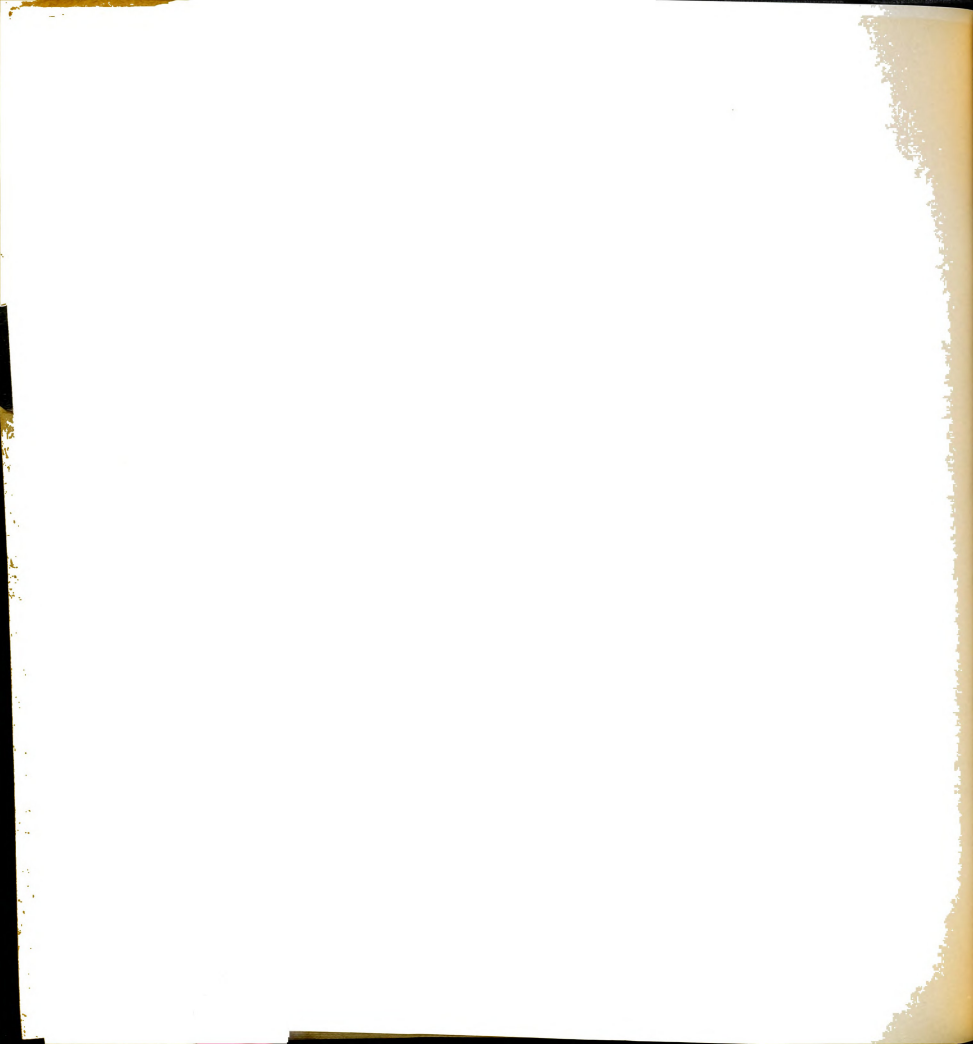
1153. The fact that Columbus is now sitting on top of the world makes the whole town happy and proud. p. 100
1154. A deep voice interrupted him,---"what the devil do you think you're doing?" it said. p. 21
1155. we never, to take an example at random, say 'Jolly good show!'"
"No!" he said.
"No. Nor are we constantly boasting of the antiquity of our institutions. p. 20
1156. In Chicago there is evidence that the new crop is already taking over. p. 116
1157. Rarely, a note of sarcasm may enter the instruction. "When Miss Covington says the right foot, Miss Covington means the foot which is attached to the leg appearing on the right side of the body, directly below the right arm." p. 119
1158. His marriage, like many in Westchester, was the culmination of a slow-blooming dancing-school romance, and his two children are now learning dancing under "Covey." p. 35
1159. I have always liked this little story, and I am passing it along to the readers of the Post---at the risk of embarrassing the general--because I think it points up two characteristics of the man: his deep-rooted integrity and his human, down-to-earth qualities. p. 17
1160. In no time you are bowling down Addison, and in no time Addison runs headlong into the leafy campus of the state veterinarian college. p. 111
1161. In fact, at the moment, Columbus is undertaking a more than ambitious spiritual adventure. p. 100
1162. Now the nervous teacher is telling his story. p. 102
1163. Columbus discovered America, now America is discovering Columbus. p. 100
1164. When Miss Covington is presiding, the bow and the curtsy become graceful and grateful acknowledgements of the worth and dignity of each human being. p. 118
1165. Sergeant Willet alerted him, "They're putting General Desmond on, sir." p. 89
1166. Senator Harry F. Byrd, of Virginia, who has made a long and mostly unrewarded fight for economy in the Federal Government, dramatizes what is now going on by saying that "the Federal Government is spending your money at the rate of \$2000 every time the clock ticks---and collecting taxes from you at the rate of nearly \$1600 every second of every day and every night." p. 10



1167. "They're treating me like a Russian prisoner," Mickey complained in his Los Angeles cell recently. p. 27
1168. "By the way, Eddie, we're moving your outfit back into a rest area in a couple of days." p. 94
1169. "It seems to me," he said. "that somebody's getting mighty prodigal in the way they're expending other people's sheriffs--" p. 31
1170. But just as Columbus likes sports, it is also a town of church-going people. p. 100
1171. The new method of granting the Abitur---the once prized high-school certificate which admits brighter students to the university---would be farcical if it did not throw a tragic light on what is happening to warp the minds of another generation of young Germans. p. 102
1172. If the hour at which you expected to be having lunch in the state capital finds you dragging your pan over a freshly graded cowpath, it's because George sold out, here a while back, to Henry Ivens; guess you hadn't heard. p. 111
1173. You need no local guide to tell you this is the road you are seeking ... p. 112
1174. "You remember Mike, don't you?" p. 121
1175. When discipline begins to fray she'll get the couples into dancing position and have them hold it while she expounds. p. 119
1176. Get what you can out of that young woman and report to me here when you come back. p. 84
1177. It follows that I should know what I am talking about when I say the accounts of Eisenhower's early life which have appeared in print from time to time are mainly fiction. p. 18
1178. In this situation, attention to what the teacher is saying is downright rapt. p. 119
1179. The young officer had looked the Old Man in the eye, as steady as a man could ask. "Young enough to be active, sir." His voice was respectful, belying his words, but not obeisant. "And old enough to know what I'm doing." p. 87
1180. "Look what's happening in Miami." p. 113
1181. What were the bookies doing?
"I'll tell you what they're doing," a lifetime bookmaker said in Miami. p. 27
1182. "Want to know what the stamp tax is doing to us gamblers?" he said cheerily over the telephone. "Sure, I'll see you. But don't louse me up. Remember, no names." p. 113



1183. "I've ample proof of what happened," I said
 "Sure you have---that is, till you see what the witnesses
 themselves are willing to say in the box. "I'm sorry, Bruce,"
 he added, "but looks like they're going to put you through
 the mincer now." p. 120
1184. The big man put out his hand. If we're join' to go a job
 together, we'd best swap names. Mine's Calhoun---Clayton
 Calhoun, from the state of Maryland, but a long time on the
 road." p. 54
1185. When so many prospectors are turning over stones, however,
 other oddities are bound to be uncovered. p. 138
1186. A golfer's hearing is fourteen times as acute when he is ad-
dressing the ball as it is normally. p. 40
1187. "The dam's complete, is it?" I asked.
 Trevedian nodded. "Just about."
 "When are you closing the sluice gates?" p. 133
1188. "We'll run this story and I'll write a leader that won't do
 you any harm. When are you planning to go up there?" p.132
1189. "If you do strike it," I said, "you won't need to worry about
 the rig."
 "It's not the rig I'm worrying about," he snapped. "It's the
 drilling crew." p. 133
1190. "I've told Oxford you're coming." p. 84
1191. It hadn't occurred to me to start legal proceedings. But if
 Fergus wants it that way, he can have it. Tell him I'm fight-
ing him every inch of the ground. p. 130
1192. They say his brother is following in his footsteps. p. 121
1193. With the best will in the world, which is not lacking, Govern-
 ment extravagance cannot be eliminated until the machinery for
 appropriating money and spending it has been co-ordinated and
 simplified. p. 10
1194. Normally there is a stage where the traveler feels sure that
 every mile he covers is amplifying somebody's small error into
 something really handsome. p. 112
1195. These people are afraid to testify against you while you're
running around loose. p. 74
1196. "Do you know who you're speaking to, O'Farrow?" p. 87
1197. Unlike the present chiefs, many of whom are pushing sixty,
 the rising bosses entered the rackets after repeal. p. 116
1198. "The gambling that's going on here now," said Sam, "is a dis-
 grace. If you don't have powerful (protected) gambling, you
 have crooked gambling. p. 113



1197. Careful study of case histories revealed that only one in four is fleeing direct terror. p. 33
1200. "I think," said Gott barr, "that maybe she's holding out for Lennie to catch the person responsible for Bill Brannigan's murder..." p. 72
1201. You'd better get round to Combined Ops straight away---and be back here at two o'clock. I'll warn Oxford you're coming this afternoon. p. 81
1202. "Another thing you Americans have got all wrong," I told him--- "not that I'm criticising you mind---is the idea that everybody over here thinks your country is cramfull of gangsters and grafters. p. 40
1203. He can put them up regally in one of six master bedrooms with bathrooms attached, and be sure that they are all using gold-plated fixtures. p. 27

Saturday Evening Post, November 1, 1952

1204. On passes or delayed plays, however, you can see which system the defense is using. p. 57
1205. But it is even more helpful, I think, to see the basic pattern of movement on defense. You see this at the same time that you are seeing the offensive pattern unfold--- p. 57
1206. "You surprise me," Mr. MacWardle said. "Dear, dear. And what wicked crimes has he committed?" p. 67
1207. "If you don't believe it, you can walk right through it. That's the faith you've got to keep." p. 120
1208. If there's consider ble penetration on the line, then they're rushing. p. 57
1209. "Lilac! If you don't stop that, I'm going to leave the house. Nobody's accusing you of anything. Where is the blue envelope?" p. 116
1210. The situation may be encouraging for those who believe that "private education is divisive" and that all schools ought to take shelter under the smothering wings of the state. p. 12
1211. If you see that the defense is breaking right through the line in one portion of the line, but not in the rest, then you know that a trap play is being run. p. 57



Saturday Evening Post, August 8, 1953

1212. "If I slept I can forget most of it. I can forget that I have been given a role that I don't know how to play." p. 18
1213. "Makes it troublesome, if the enemy uses the excuse to come in after them, which it seems to be threatening to do." p. 23
1214. "If they ring the bell and ask for me," she said, "what are you going to say?" p. 68
1215. "If I put foot outside this house, I'd never in the world get back!" p. 19
1216. "...and perhaps I must walk all night with him, for if we stop, he'll look into my face." p. 70
1217. "And I'll go back! I'll go back because I'm weak, and because he's there in the Eastern zone---my father---and because he's the one they can get their hand on if I stay away." p. 69
1218. "This mood will make him all the angrier when Charlie and I get married." p. 82
1219. "Richard and I want you to meet Mr. Portescue when he comes to town again next week---" p. 75
1220. "I guess that'll hold him until the gendarmes come. I wouldn't want him off down in Bangkok interfering when I catch up with Mei Li." p. 111
1221. "When I leave this house one of them will come down the street behind me, and maybe at the next corner he'll touch me on the shoulder, and he'll say, "Now you've had your little time off, Ingborg, and we hope you've enjoyed it while it lasted, for there's a lot of work to do." p. 69
1222. "But when I travel with them, I'm Madeline or Carmelita or someone else---always a new name and always a stranger to myself." p. 68
1223. "I wish that the attache' had never dreamed up this gold-plated goose chase---and while I'm wishing, I wish I hadn't brought you along." p. 22

Saturday Evening Post, November 7, 1953

1224. "You know what's going to happen here and allace are going to keep it up until they kill somebody." p. 42
1225. "One thing about it, honey," Mark said, "We don't have to pay Tomlin until Bruno pays us." p. 42



Short Stories from The New Yorker
Simon & Schuster, New York, 1944

1226. "The baby's yelling. 'Tye.'" p. 303
1227. "There have been so many doors changed on me," he said, "in the last twenty years, but it is now becoming clear that it is an impossible situation." p. 87
1228. "I've got my stomach full of communist tactics. I'm acting strictly in the capacity of your brother." p. 353
1229. "He is always begging Peggy to slow down on her drinking and asking her to go out with him." p. 256
1230. "I'm not asking you, Lieutenant Berg," he said. p. 16
1231. "Yes," said Smollett. "I am wondering if I could keep my mouth shut. If I promised you----"
"I am wondering if I could believe you," said Mr. Princey.
p. 16
1232. Mrs. Schellincheim ents right with the family. She never has her dinner in her room the way old Mrs. Plotz does when her family has guests in. p. 203
1233. "No," Gus said. "He goes to Africa with a camera. He takes pictures." p. 199
1234. "She comes up to the club with Charlie and leaves with Charlie and goes into New York with Charlie and poor Jim doesn't even get an explanation." p. 380
1235. ...in view of the fact that I am giving up chances which to me may prove valuable as I am not growing any younger each day and opportunities don't hang on trees, all a girl has to do is to go out and pick it off the tree... pp. 334-335
1236. "Do you live with your family, Clara?" p. 360
1237. "He just sits around the house and looks at his old pictures." p. 354
1238. "She was here with Dad and me before you came," Michael said, his voice thin with its burden, "and she's coming back." p. 290.
1239. "Throw on the power light! Rev her up to 8,500! We're going through!" p. 16
1240. "Somebody's got to get that ammunition dump," said Mitty.
"I'm going over." p. 30
1241. "He is going to Carnegie Hall," Sally said. "They're playing Brahms and Debussy." p. 354
1242. "He hardly paints anymore," Sally said. "He just sits around the house and looks at pictures." p. 354



1243. "My father's not home. He's a printer. He works nights," Alfred said. p. 185
1244. Spring comes early and somewhat curtively to northern France. Warily it settles down on the land, warming the stiff fields, ... p. 365
1245. "It's like watching the tide come in," thought Mr. Holt, seated in the warm sun opposite the ramparts of Orme, where an old stone bridge arched above the baguette: it sneaks in when you're not looking. p. 365
1246. "We only live once, Sergeant," said Litty, with his faint fleeting smile. "Or do we?" p. 20
1247. He turned around and looked down the path behind. "Daisy's coming up the path any minute now. She's down at the spring filling a bucket." p. 68
1248. "Well," she said, "Mattie's sulking again." p. 34
1249. "Thank you for the breakfast," she said. "I am going now." p. 273
1250. What are you following these days, old friend, after your recovery from the last bump? p. 89
1251. "What are you talking about?" said Fairlie. p. 213
1252. "What things? What are you talking about?" p. 187
1253. "We are talking about the weather." p. 172
1254. "He's not talking," Lou said. p. 200
1255. Before he said goodnight to her, he told her, "You know I would much rather spend the time with you, but I'm trying now to write a report. " p. 133
1256. "I'm just your wife. I'm just trying to make a home for you." p. 35
1257. She turned off the machine and looked up at him. "What's the matter?"
"I'm trying to sleep," he said
"Well, why don't you sleep?"
"The vacuum cleaner. It's shaking the house." p. 278
1258. "They talk about it in the A and P. And Louise certainly doesn't make any effort to cover up her tracks. p. 380
1259. "---one of my girl friend's (Jennie) commented on same and said 'We're beginning to look like two peas in a pot [sic]. p. 354
1260. "By God," whispered Milton, "he's breaking the damn thing down! p. 115



1261. "I'm your date," said the boy. "I'm bringing you another drink." p. 185
1262. "---but all you did was to talk 'a poor mouth' about how business was bad and the responsibilities you got and gee whiz, people are not buying merchandise like they used to and this, that and the other thing. p. 334
1263. "I'm practically breaking my neck to be nice to her," Ruth cried. "I'm willing to go down on my hands and knees. What more can I do? I can't jump off the roof." p. 399
1264. "Freak it up," he growled. "O'mon, you're blocking the street." p. 300
1265. "The box barrage is closing in," said the sergeant. p. 20
1266. "Look here, Mister Men," I says to myself, "your faith and loyalty to Rotary may be a fine thing, and all that, but it's just costing you the fellowship of your own son." p. 647
1267. She said, "Are you really calling from New York?" p. 131
1268. "not so fast! you're driving too fast!" said Mrs. Kitty. "what are you driving so fast for?" p. 15
1269. "You're getting something in the way of cash out of this, you know. After all, you aren't doing it for the love of the thing." p. 46
1270. "Andrew [sic], you're not writing for the Atlantic Monthly." p. 279
1271. Carole was the first to speak. "I'm freezing," she said. "Shall we go in?" p. 382
1272. "I couldn't help it," the boy said. "The place is filling up." p. 184
1273. "My mind's made up, all right," she said. "and you're not going to do it." p. 40
1274. "and no matter what you say, I'm going to speak to her." p. 36
1275. "That's not the way to take it," Tracy said. "I'm going to do it, and you might as well make up your mind." p. 49
1276. "I'm going to sit here and wait until you go in and get something to eat for yourself," he said. p. 272
1277. "You never know the answers to anything. Well, what are we going to do tonight?" p. 221
1278. "Are you going to start that again?" p. 33
1279. When he was going, she said, "I'm going to make myself a cup of tea." p. 191



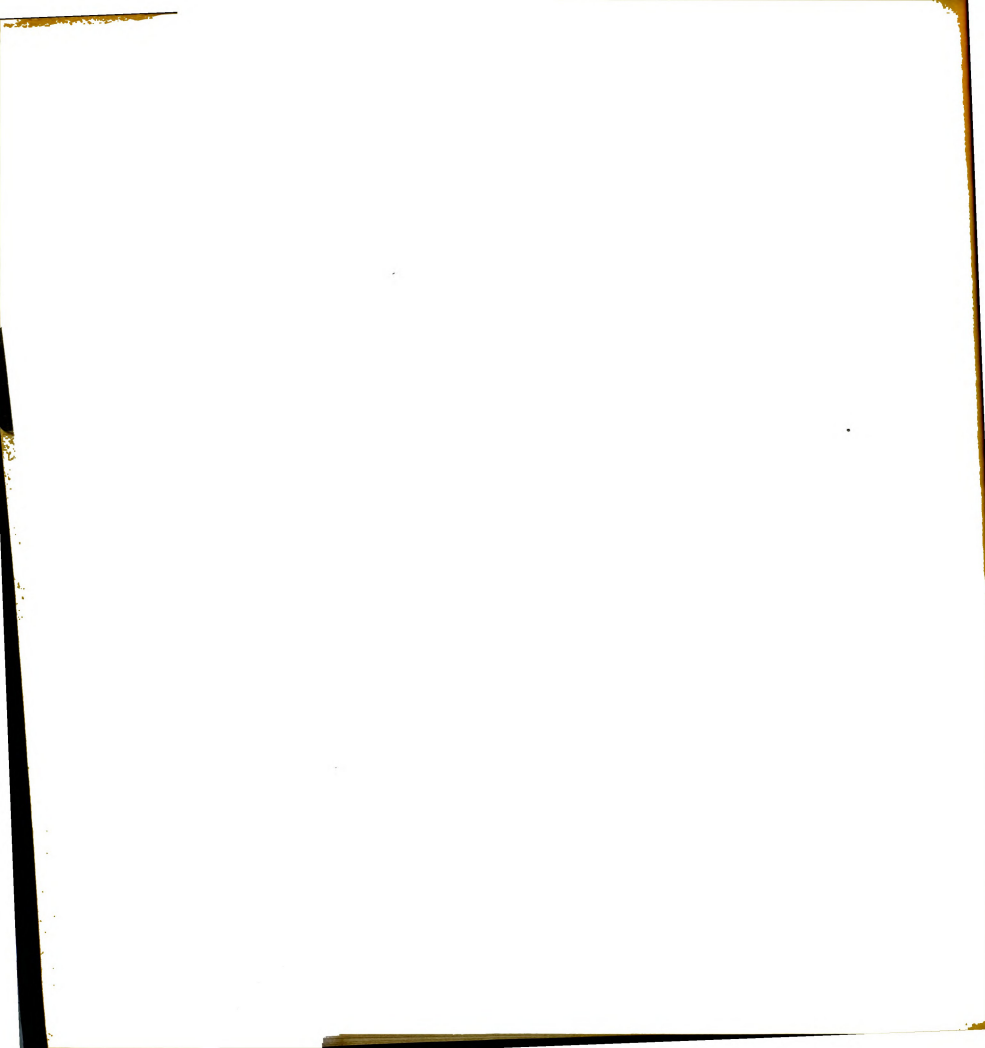
1280. She looked at him. "I'm going to take your temperature when I get you home," she said. p. 21
1281. "The new anæsthetizer is giving away!" shouted the interns. p. 17
1282. "I don't know what you're talking about," said Sylvia with dignity, "and anyway, we're not going in this direction." p. 311
1283. "But I'm growing old, of course, and my brother always said that charity begins at home." p. 379
1284. He said, "I'm not working. I'm just wasting my time." p. 136
1285. "Hello, Mitty," he said. "We're having the devil's own time with McMillan, the millionaire banker and close personal friend of Roosevelt." p. 17
1286. "I'm having a wonderful time," the girl said. "I am having a simply wonderful time." p. 185
1287. "Quiet," said Flacey. "I'm handling this." p. 199
1288. "We are playing a word game," said Agnes. "You are inter-rupting." p. 417
1289. "Henry's making enough money so that Mama can dress well!" p. 203
1290. "He'll pull through," Dr. Slater said professionally. "I'm making him new teeth. He won't be so self-conscious. He'll adjust himself." p. 354
1291. "What you using, Ed?" he said. "Lies?" p. 209
1292. "He's going to Carnegie Hall," Sally said. "They're playing Brahms and Debussy." p. 354
1293. "But you can't sir," said the sergeant anxiously. "It takes two men to handle that bomber and the Archies are pounding hell out of the air." p. 20
1294. He spoke to his milkman. "What am I paying you for milk?" p. 412
1295. "Maybe I'm not intelligent," she said.
"Of course you are," he said soothingly. "Don't misunderstand me. I am not questioning your intelligence. You just do not realize the importance of being exact with an inferior." p. 296
1296. "And for Milda next summer, with their Ellen at Naturnack. For Chester, with their Frank at day camp, and he's just ten, too. And I'm not saying a word about myself." p. 208



1297. "We can't make it, sir. It's spoiling for a hurricane, if you ask me." p. 16
1298. "I'm takin' down your number." p. 300
1299. This clock is a wedding present given to my brother by members of his firm. It is made of china and vaguely supposed to be valuable. A boy and a girl in peasant costume are supporting the clock itself, contained in a basket of purple and green fruit. p. 373
1300. "And if you think I'm going to apologize tomorrow for saying this, you're wrong. Because it's what I think. You're just skipping your hotel bill." p. 40
1301. "I'm only telling you," he said. p. 112
1302. "Yeah, your boy works for me. You'd better come down in a hurry." p. 189
1303. Most people on vacation give you a distinct impression of alteration, I think. And they take on a lightness of spirit which you feel sure they drop when they start back to the city. p. 152
1304. "He has a table down in his cellar, and I have a game with him once or twice." p. 165
1305. I'm feeling my age this summer for the first time. I'm sixty you know. p. 161
1306. "Mattie has a lot to do," Willard Kirk protested mildly. "And she's no chicken. She always gets that way. Send her out to a movie or something and she'll get over it. She loves the movies. p. 35
1307. "Of course, I tell myself, well, it's all in the game, it's the way things go and then of course I have my work and things like that to keep my mind off it, so it isn't as hard on me as it is on Mrs. Powers. p. 165
1308. "You are always joking," said Mr. Princey. "People think there must be something behind it." p. 176
1309. "Pah!" remarked Dutoit, his pride stung. "However to soothe your sense of justice, I willingly offer one of my fish, as a token as it were of--- p. 369
1310. Dutoit abandoned diplomacy and shook his fist under Fochin's nose. "The fish is mine, I tell you!" he shouted. "It was caught with my rod." p. 368
1311. "I think I'll start doing my reports." p. 132
1312. "I think we're getting no place very fast." p. 197



1313. "Louis says that Detroit Edison is very good," Mrs. Morgan said. p. 377
1314. "Are you still keeping up your singing?" p. 102
1315. "Oh," I say to him, "You make me sick, talking like that." p. 100
1316. "Sure, you're always worrying your poor head off about the first. Isn't it the truth?" p. 168
1317. "Timothy says the lights don't work, and if we have a screw-driver we can tell which one is burned out." p. 120
1318. "Mattie stays," he repeated without turning around. "And that's that." p. 30
1319. "She's always bringin' Carole flowers and vegetables," Tom said. p. 380
1320. "As you say," she said. p. 36
1321. "I say 'almost' because, well, I'll have to admit this: p. 161
1322. "He's always doing things for them---giving them clothes and I don't know what all." p. 100
1323. "You play a mighty good game for a beginner, but you can't do much when they keep coming back at you, can you?" p. 160
1324. "Why, every time he goes home, he goes out in the kitchen to see her. He does, really, to this day." p. 100
1325. "---and sometimes she goes into the shops on Madison and Lexington Avenues to see what folks are buying." p. 204
1326. Mildred glanced at the cage. "It looks like a lion," she said. "Yeah, that's what it is." p. 113
1327. "Please," Joe said. "Let it ride as it is."
"Nonsense, my dear fellow. We're keeping the ladies on pins and needles for our brilliant society. Come along, gentlemen." p. 212
1328. "Why don't you have another concert sometime?"
"I'm having one on the sixteenth of this month," he said. p. 102
1329. "Her arches hurt her. She told me so." p. 34
1330. "Mrs. Fowers is keeping all his things intact, you know." p. 163
1331. "But I got them back, the fast ones and the slow ones." p. 160



1332. "The doctor is a busy man," Mrs. Bond replied. "He has to attend his office hours, his clinic service, and the visits to the patients outside." p. 395
1333. "He is occupied with serious things. He has no time for enjoyment or girls." p. 393
1334. "Mrs. Powers - my wife - lets other people about it sometimes and calls it my bragging." p. 161
1335. The world loads you day by day with new burdens that increase on your shoulders. p. 282
1336. "Yes, sir, I hate to admit it, but Al beats me pretty near as often as I beat him." p. 163
1337. "What's the idea?" the young cop asked. "What are you putting it on the ground for?" p. 302
1338. "Lift a pound and you find you're carrying a ton." p. 282
1339. "You accuse me, Monsiuer, of taking what is not mine. I find your insinuation insupportable." p. 368
1340. "I got them a couple of little painting sets. Like the one I got for your secretary's little girl. They both draw, you know. Marcia said the kids would love them." p. 361
1341. I have not been without my opportunities to take a post at this and that college or university, but I choose to remain here. p. 139
1342. "I hate to get sore because it rukes my collar wit." p. 200
1343. "I don't see why you have to use that tone of voice!" she said. p. 160
1344. "---and the question is whether to jump again, even though they ruffle you in the rump with a blast of air---to make you jump." p. 87
1345. "Because it's what I think." p. 40
1346. "And if you think I'm going to apologize tomorrow for saying this, you're wrong." p. 30
1347. The world loads you day by day with new burdens that increase on your shoulders. p. 282
1348. I guess that's what wins in ping-pong. p. 160
1349. "I'm going to take your temperature when I get you home," she said. p. 21
1350. As the spring in one hemisphere advances the darker areas, which are at first few and faint, extend and deepen in contrast. p. 205



1751. She looked at her engagement pad. "Oh, Joe! But that's the night we wed with the Bedfords, darling." p. 207
1752. "But don't tell me you don't think people are getting over." p. 40
1753. "What's that you're chewing?" he asked. p. 312
1754. "Look," said Lottie then. "Wan't you really think that one's always spanning much too much time on drinkards, always trying to get them from where they are to where one thinks they should be? Why not leave him there? He's perfectly comfortable, you know." p. 316
1755. "I was thinking," said Walter Pitty. "Does it ever occur to you that I am sometimes thinking?" p. 21
1756. His mother stood up, her face setting into stern lines. "I can't use it while you're working. I can't use it while you're working. I can't use it until ten o'clock in the morning because you're sleeping." p. 278
1757. "Remember to get those overshoes while I'm having my hair done," she said. p. 17
1758. "I told him a man just has to put his heart into whatever he does, unless he's just going to give up and quit and be a failure." p. 164
1759. He looked at her and his face grew sad. "Said yourself," he said. "And since you're speaking of impressions, I got some myself." p. 221
1760. One day he told her excitedly, "You know, down at the office we've at last collected enough data to tell what is happening." p. 132
1761. "It's very exciting," she said, standing up. "I don't know what they're complaining about." p. 275
1762. "You've disgraced me again and again," she said bitterly. "That's the last time. That's all I'm saying." p. 191
1763. "Say, it's a wonder to me I'm opening [sic] my eyes now." p. 335
1764. "I am very much interested in the work your office is doing. I hear you are the bright young man over there." p. 132
1765. "But mostly I am annoyed. The way things are going, Johnson, I may even get sore." p. 200
1766. "I hope you'll forgive this hideous smock I'm wearing." p. 379
1767. "Tell her the roof's leaking and we're all drowning," I said. p. 97



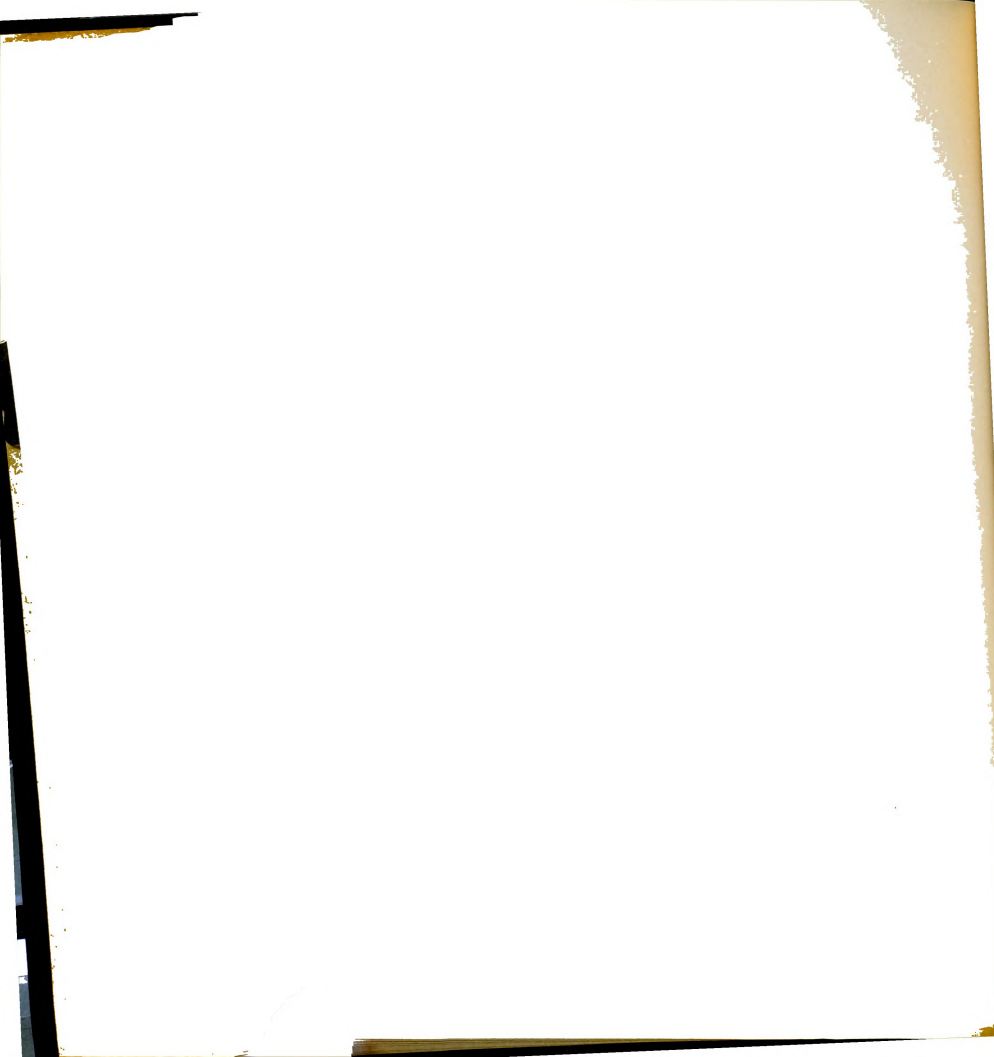
1368. "I guess I'm talking too much and too long here anyway." p. 165
1369. The telephone rang. She said, "I'm sorry---I feel your work isn't going very well. Can I help somehow?" p. 133
1370. "Listen, Barbs, Dave says they're working overtime this noon, so he won't be home for lunch." p. 303
1371. "I feel our colleagues are playing truant and have gone for a stroll on the campus," said Dr. Bowles jocosely. p. 264
1372. "But just between you and I [sic] Harry, I'm not going to be coming out to Rotary lunches anymore. I mean I'm quitting Rotary." p. 344
1373. The thing that Mrs. Zwill can't understand is the way her mother feels about her room. p. 204
1374. "I expect you don't remember me. It's been three years since I left Watertown. You weren't so very old then." p. 117
1375. "Mr. Hodenagl appears to be the general favorite," commented the President softly. p. 262
1376. "I avoid black cats, knock on wood, cross my fingers, and I wouldn't go under a ladder for anything." p. 379
1377. "Oh, I admit I can't send them back sizzling like you do sometimes." p. 100
1378. "Now, me, I don't feel that way at all. I haven't the slightest feeling about colored people." p. 100
1379. "Naturally, I can't blame you, if that's the way you feel about it." p. 401
1380. She said, "I know how you feel, but you can't refuse." p. 133
1381. "--and with both of us away at work all day---well, sometimes, I feel worse." p. 33
1382. "How is the doctor?" Ruth asked Mrs. Rand. "I see him so seldom." p. 303
1383. "I suppose you've noticed she doesn't like Bart in the social life here very much." p. 151
1384. "I suppose so," she told him. p. 221
1385. Gus shook his head at him. "Fussy," he said, "you surprise me. Honest." p. 107
1386. "Well, whatever it is, I guess it's just second nature with me." p. 161



1387. "Levipoletics, eh, no erls?"
"I guess no. I don't exactly know what that means." Tolbert
paused. p. 136
1388. "I like to win, and I hate to lose, I'll say that." p. 161
1389. "I like to win just as much today, or almost anyway, as I did
when I was a young fellow." p. 161
1390. "You were up to 55," she said. "You know I don't like to go
more than 40." p. 16
1391. "I like to think of this part of this school, that in some
small measure I have assisted in its progress. I like to
think of it as more than a mere stepping stone to higher edu-
cation." p. 139
1392. "You seem to place a great deal of confidence in Lattie," she
said. "Not that Lattie doesn't mean well, but you couldn't
exactly say she knows much." p. 33
1393. Mrs. Zwill knows a lot about interior decoration. p. 204
1394. "You want me to run you in?" p. 300
1395. "Just because he's an investment counsel, everybody wants his
advice." p. 377
1396. "I'm Mrs. Ives," the woman said. "What do you want with the
screw driver?" p. 120
1397. "You can run me in if you want to," the man replied. p. 300
1398. One day he told her excitedly, "You know, down at the office
we have at last collected enough data---" p. 132
1399. "Anyway, if somebody's watching from the store, they'll see
us." p. 210
1400. "I wonder if they're coming," Slater said finally in a flat
high whisper. p. 355

Sixteen Famous American Plays,
Carr, Bennett A. & Cartwell, Van H. (ed.)
The Modern Library
Random House Inc., New York, 1941

1401. "Only this one [star] is straining away, straining away all the
time to make something of itself." p. 793
1402. "I and Bert Turner are taking Lissie and Ethel and canoeing."
p. 82



1403. "I'm taking the advertisement for my store out of your paper--- and it won't go in again, I tell you, not unless you reco-
gize." p. 271
1404. "Get me enough people to love it! Do you understand that? Now, beat it! And remember, I'm relying on you!" p. 127
1405. "And now, here you are standing here with the train leaving any minute!" p. 94
1406. "Hurry up, wooden shoes: I'm starving!" p. 70
1407. "What's that, Mr. Burns? Why, your language is shocking, Mr. Burns." p. 73
1408. "Nobody's using it [a desk] Roy. Everything's all right," p. 119
1409. "What are you writing for?" p. 60
1410. telephone conversation "vot:--- doorbell rings wait-- wait a minute---Someone's ringing." p. 252
1411. "It's raining." p. 786
1412. "Those engineers in Russia are building something new! That's where they've got it on us. We aint building--we're repair-
ing." p. 363
1413. "Keep it up, halfback. I'm rooting for you. Touch-down!" p. 396
1414. "Pure as the driven snow, that's me. They're running me for president of the ACQU." p. 281
1415. "All right, I'm flooring it [the peace] for you." p. 943
1416. "Are you referring to me, madam?" p. 131
1417. "Tick, the phone's ringing." p. 941
1418. "The car is running down like a tired clock." p. 747
1419. "I wish to God you'd stop that praying, Mrs. Whiskett."
"I'm not praying. I'm singing." p. 114
1420. "I see. You are punishing me. But I won't let you punish me." p. 841
1421. "Come on---are we playing cards or aren't we?" p. 64
1422. "Why, Birdie. You aren't playing." p. 603
1423. "Is my Amy havin' good fun, Joe?"
"Sure she is! She's playin' with the kids." p. 29



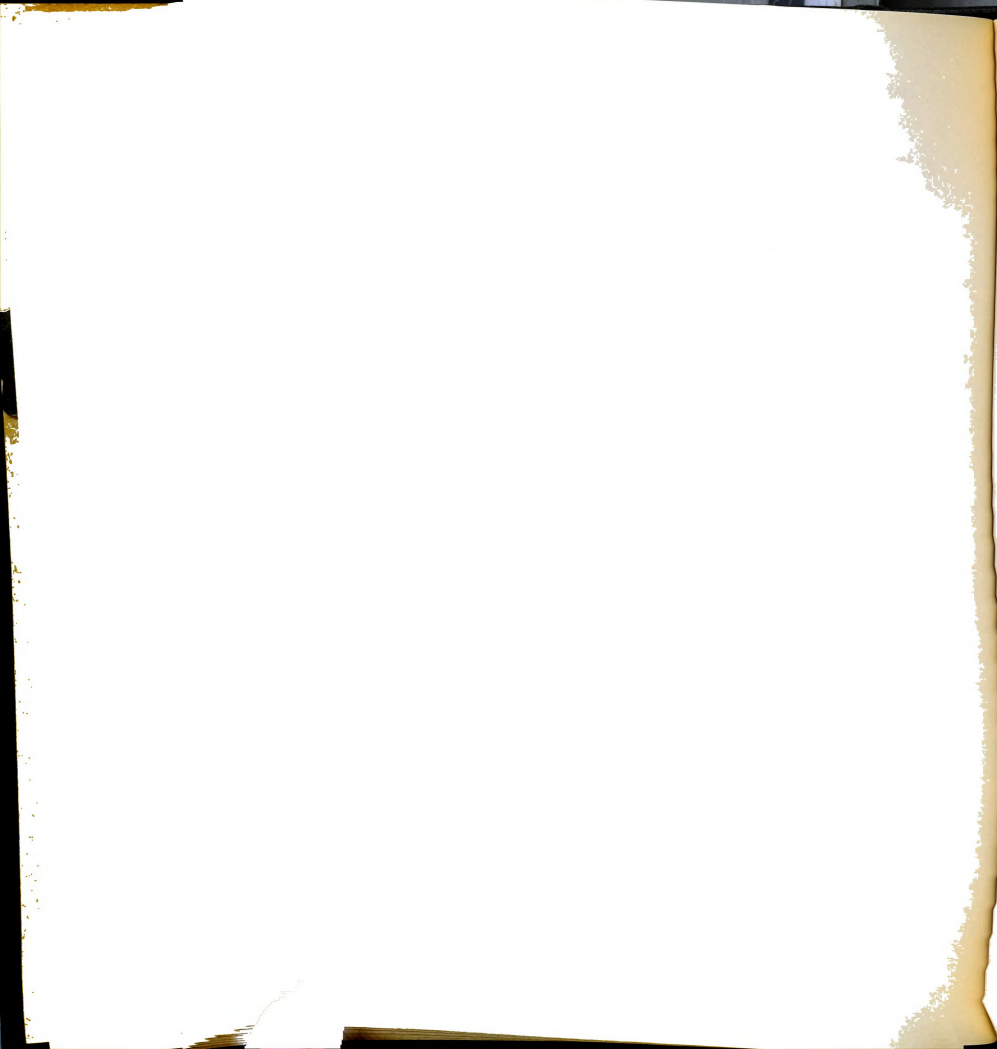
1424. "I'm revisiting my old. She's not to be taken out of her house for a month." p. 291
1425. "O.K. Ryles, we're pulling out. See you then." p. 415
1426. "Yes, he'll be right in. He's waiting off the car." (She continues upstairs." p. 1180
1427. "I'm pretending there isn't no Earl living us." p. 119
1428. "By the way, did I glimpse that little honey better yet, Dr. Sheldon, in a motor-car as I came up the driveway?"
"You did indeed. She's waiting us Christmas visit." p. 291
1429. "Why do you guess it is that music's not the whole world scared: it's because they're making chard. They're blowing ing." p. 363
1430. "Oh shut up Sylvia. She's only playing until Mary comes down." p. 605
1431. "You'd better come with me, Duke. I'm planning to be buried in the rethired forest." p. 397
1432. "Why aint you marrying a woman out of your own parish instead of wrapping all the way to Greece to pick out a heretic?" p. 9
1433. (looking out the window) "She's moving! Thank God she aint killed herself." p. 114
1434. "he's making good money in Waterbury." p. 292
1435. "Why are you making me this offer?"
"I'm not making you an offer. I shall merely attempt to expedite----" p. 245
1436. "How you makin' out, Tony?" p. 25
1437. "Vinnie, you're just making a lot of plans for nothing. Who said I was going to be baptized at all?" p. 1038
1438. "You're making it up, Beverley. Nobody sounds like that." p. 692
1439. (into phone) "You're just making a God-damn nuisance of yourself. What's the idea of calling up all the time?" p. 96
1440. "I'll be right with you. I'm making a personal call." p. 106
1441. "I'm looking for the young man I talked to on the telephone." p. 933
1442. "You know, I'm looking forward to Lake Placid. Bert's the kind of man who will do all the winter sports beautifully." p. 912
1443. "Listen! they're lookin' for you too! If you're smart, you'll get outa here." p. 106



1444. "Yeah, you're leavin', but we gotta work here with all them stink pots. What a sense of humor you got." p. 111
1445. "Yeah, in the press room. He told me the boy was on his way--- What the hell are you laughin' about?" p. 102
1446. "What're you laughing at? I guess I ought to know." p. 287
1447. My hat and coat, Maggie, and also your railroad ticket. I am leaving for New York. p. 916
1448. "I'm talkin' to you with the cassock on, Joe. I'm lettin' you in on the secrets of the Mother Church." p. 42
1449. "We're listening." p. 86
1450. "This is everything, Sherry. I'm leaving three carbons. Is there anything out here? What's in the basket?" p. 914
1451. "Circence is keeping you entertained, eh?" p. 1906
1452. "Sherry, you're joshing me, aren't you?" p. 914
1453. "Excuse me. (he stands up) Would you rather I left?"
"Stay where you are!"
"But I'm introducing." p. 396
1454. "Now you're insulting my daughter. I won't forget that."
"I'm not insulting her. I think Mariel is a darn nice girl."
p. 291
1455. "Joe, he's hurting that boy. I'll kill him." p. 977
1456. "Maggie, are you hiding something from us?" p. 899
1457. "We're having chicken livers Tetrazzini and Cherries Jubille for dessert." p. 870
1458. "Be quiet! The hell with that. Shut up, will you? (He is hunting for a hiding place.) p. 135
1459. "I wanted to tell you that Oscar is going to Chicago, to-night, so we can't be here for our usual Friday supper." p. 833
1460. "Now, Joe, don't be tryin' to tell me that things is goin' to be any better for havin' a revolution, because they aint." p. 41
1461. "Quiet, Pepito--quiet. We aren't going to do any harm. All we're going to do is ask you to cook something. You wouldn't mind that, would you Pepito?" p. 388
1462. "My God, I'm trying to keep this phone clean and I'm not going to have you fellows coughing and spitting in it either, or pawing it with your hands!" p. 63



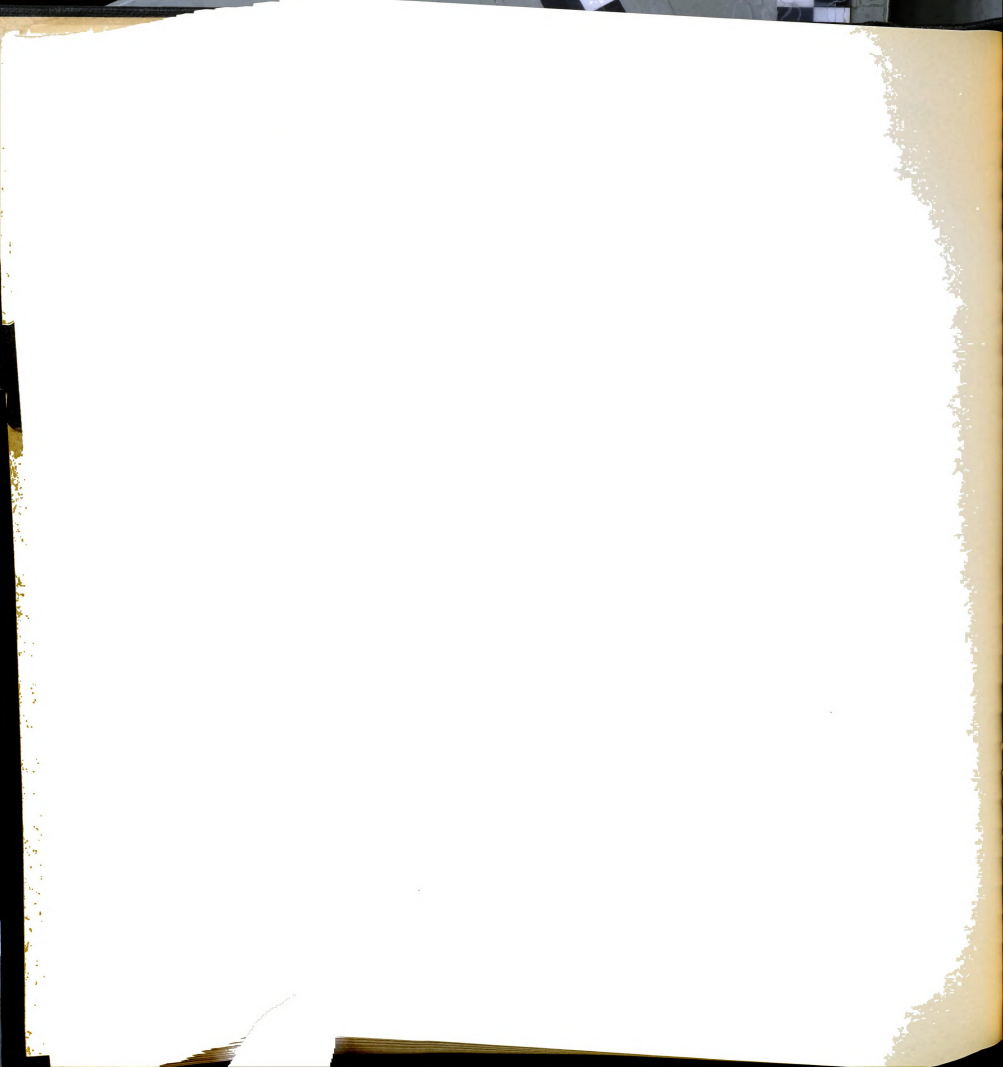
1463. "Don't look so scared about everything, Birdie. I'm going to live in Chicago. I've always wanted to. And now there'll be plenty of money to go with." p. 806
1464. "Oh, I don't mind kids if they go to bed when they ought to and know how to behave. Believe me, if I ever have any kids, they're going to behave." p. 30
1465. "I've waited long enough for your answer. I'm not going to wait any longer." p. 829
1466. "When it comes, we're going to finally get something of that equality they talked about in the Declaration of Independence." p. 362
1467. "A guy aint going to walk out on a job when he's drawing down seventy bucks a week." p. 62
1468. "Mr. Whiteside---I am giving you fifteen minutes in which to pack up and get out." p. 909
1469. "The point is, I have only fifteen minutes. Banjo, dear, the master is growing a little desperate." p. 910
1470. "Four more cablegrams and more packages---Dad is going crazy downstairs, with that bell ringing all the time." p. 857
1471. "Mr. Whiteside is inside, I suppose?"
"Yes, he's getting ready to go on the radio." p. 895
1472. "I'm getting hungry." p. 539
1473. "I'm always getting funny ideas that nobody will laugh at." p. 946
1474. "Is festa goin' good?" p. 25
1475. "Now let's see. We're getting a bigger share. Who's getting less?" p. 828
1476. Marion walks back into the room. A pause. She stands still a moment; she shakes her head. She is very distressed and saddened and a deep unhappiness is gnawing in her heart, an awareness of the vast, uncrossable deserts between the souls of human beings. p. 268
1477. "Everything [breakfast] is getting cold down here." p. 791
1478. "Well the world may need reformin' but I got no kick. The grapes is near ripe and ready for picking. The nights is getting longer, the mornings is getting colder, and Tony's getting better. Down town they're putting up the posters for the circus and I hear the show's going into winter quarters just the other side of Napa. I guess that's all the remarks I got to make now." p. 45



1479. "I really think you better put on the lights, Norah. It's getting so cloudy out, and this pesky room is so dark anyway." p. 296
1480. "Here, let me do that, Essie. I'm taller. You'll only strain yourself."
"Thank you, Lily. It's a stretch for me, I'm getting so fat." p. 296
1481. "Horses are getting rarer." p. 782
1482. "Oscar, listen to him. He's getting ready to swear that it was you and Leo. What do you say to that?" p. 848
1483. "Maybe I could go with her, Regina. I'd really like to."
"She is going alone. She is getting old enough to take some responsibility." p. 813
1484. "You can call me sap if you want to, Gabby—but I guess I'm falling in love with you. I'm getting so I want you more than is good for me." p. 369
1485. "This town's gettin' bigger every year." p. 753
1486. "What time is it getting to be?" p. 297
1487. "You're givin' way to ignorant superstition, which aint right in no good Cath'lic." p. 11
1488. "Wait a minute! You're not forgetting me?" p. 412
1489. "They're fixin' up a pain in the neck for somebody." p. 71
1490. "Good-night. Joe's fixing you up a bed. He'll be here if you want him." p. 38
1491. "But where's Richard? We're forgetting all about him." p. 283
1492. "Who's that?"
"He's fixing the plumbing." p. 888
1493. Father McKee is fingering Joe's papers ominously. p. 44
1494. "Yes, well, it's colder than that at Hamilton College. Student's ears are falling off." p. 790
1495. "What's eating you? I want you to go on an errand for me." p. 947
1496. "What are you complaining about? You're eating." p. 362
1497. "You are exciting yourself." p. 809
1498. "You needn't lose your temper. I'm only demanding you do your duty by your own as I've already done by mine." p. 291
1499. "I'm dying to ask her one thing. When you made love to her in the old days, did it always sound like a prepared speech on tariff schedules?" p. 257



1500. "Sure it was a dirty trick and he was crazy to think he could get away with it. I aint denyin' it's the dirtiest trick I ever heard of. Only he didn't mean no harm." p. 23
1501. "But you are doing this for Papa's own good. You are doing this entirely for his sake. Tell her papa I want him to come home, that I miss him very much." p. 814
1502. "Is my Amy havin' fun, Joe?"
"Sure. She's dancin' with the postman." p. 27
1503. "Come on, Mother. We're disturbing people." p. 95
1504. "Getting any of 'em boss?"
"Can't get a good angle on 'em. But they're drifting over--- and Jack'll get 'em." p. 414
1505. "While I'm painting, I think of funny things to say, funny phrases. It won't be a serious biography, thank God. I'm dedicating it to Vicki: "To Vicki, the gayest person I have ever known." p. 234
1506. (into phone) "Hello Sarge. McCue. Anything doing?" p. 61
1507. "You're doing nothing of the kind." p. 903
1508. "Have you ever read The Hollow Men? Don't. It's discouraging, because it's true. It refers to the intellectuals, who thought they'd conquered Nature." p. 380
1509. "You know where he is. You're covering up for him." p. 64
1510. "Look, it's clearing up." p. 792
1511. He has risen and is crossing to occupy the chair vacated by Boze. p. 363
1512. "Hey, Dick, wake up! Pa's calling you!" p. 284
1513. "Clarence, that young girl is crying, she's in tears. What's the meaning of this?" p. 1015
1514. "A monster dragnet has been cast over the entire southwest from St. Louis to the Pacific Coast. National Guardsmen are cooperating with state police and the famed Texas Rangers as well as countless local posses and Legion posts in a determined effort to apprehend the members of the notorious Mantee gang." p. 393
1515. "You're barking up the wrong tree, Hatmann." p. 130
1516. "Has he got a lot of jack?"
"It's choking him." p. 76
1517. "You're cryin'. What's the matter, kid?" p. 40
1518. "Annie, why aren't you clearing the table?" p. 993



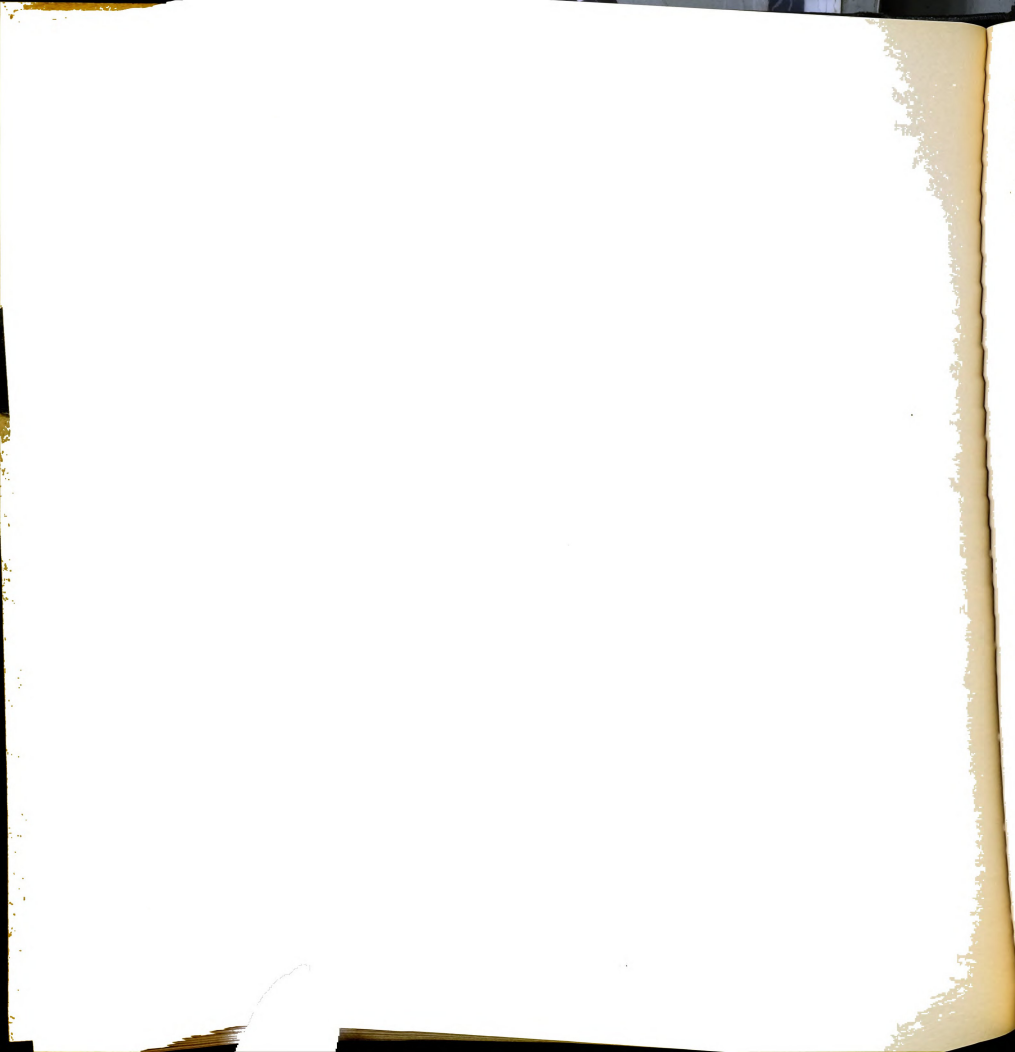
1519. "What are you chattering about?" p. 809
1520. "The stars are coming out." p. 792
1521. "The sun's coming up." p. 789
1522. He is calling the police stations, hospitals, etc. on behalf of his companions in a never ending quest for news. p. 60
1523. "He's not coming because Muriel isn't. I'll bet he's got a date with her somewhere." p. 285
1524. "I'm not betting a nickel on him. You bet everything you've got on McCarthy." p. 947
1525. "You're both being very gay with my money." p. 812
1526. "You are boring Mr. Marshall with these ancient family tales." p. 804
1527. "Now get this! A God damn Tribune sneak is coming over to get a job." p. 123
1528. "Orrin Kennicott--The newspaper publisher?"
"Yes, He's backing me for the Senate." p. 218
1529. "That's a dirty trick--telling that before a total stranger."
"Honestly, Boze---I'm not blaming you---not for an instant." p. 396
1530. Jackie is opening his knife, Pyles is picking up the ammunition sack and Duke is covering all when the Duesenberg horn is heard again. p. 412
1531. The tenor is again vigorously repeating the last phrase and cadanza of "La Donna e' Mobile. p. 25
1532. Hildy sails his hat and coat into a corner and is removing his overcoat as the curtain falls. p. 88
1533. "Why certainly. Forgive me--- (He is reaching for the bottle, but Gabby stops him.) p. 394
1534. He is returning to his old subject but the wine distracts him. p. 10
1535. "Oh, it's you, Oscar, What are you doing here so early? I haven't been down yet. I'm not finished dressing." p. 817
1536. The Duke has opened the road atlas to Arizona and New Mexico, and from now on he and Jackie are studying it and murmuring to each other in inaudible tones. p. 394
1537. She is weeping. Endicott enters and makes for a phone. Woodenshoes watches him. p. 89



1538. Others are springing for the telephones as searchlights sweep the windows from the direction of the jail. p. 86
1539. Gramp and Iaula are sitting at the table at the left. p. 391
1540. "What are you doing here, son?" p. 817
1541. It is eight-thirty at night. Four men are playing poker at the main table in the center of the room. p. 59
1542. "I want it from the point of view of the escaped men. (acting it out) He hides, cowering---afraid of every light of every sound---hears footsteps---his heart going like that---and all the time they're closing in--- get the sense of an animal at bay." p. 122
1543. During the quieter moments of the remainder of his act Hildy is opening his parcels and putting the contents into his suitcase." p. 84
1544. The linemen are paying at the counter. p. 364
1545. Ernie is gifted beyond his comrades. He plays the banjo and sings. He is dreamily rendering his favorite piece, "By the Light of the Silvery Moon" as the poker game progresses. p. 60
1546. "What are you talking about? You haven't seen Ben?" p. 840
1547. "I'm not talking about that." p. 1017
1548. "You're talking to the Examiner, Hawkshaw." p. 130
1549. "Joe, if you aint goin' to be rev'rant---"
"I'm talkin' now." p. 13
1550. "I'm talking medicine, not love." p. 25
1551. "She's kinda restless. She's talking in her sleep and twisting and turning." p. 1031
1552. "He's trying to make me. That's all he wants." p. 380
1553. All right. I'm not holding you against your will. I'm not trying to force you into anything that's wrong." p. 386
1554. "Damn it! I'm trying to save him." p. 106
1555. "Well, just make the best of things, anyway."
"I'm trying to. 'I'm trying to'." p. 40
1556. "I'm waitin' here for the boy to bring over my money--- the two hundred and sixty dollars he owes me. p. 102
1557. "I aint said I wouldn't marry you, Tony."
"Eh bene!"
"I'm only tryin' to tell you." p. 9



58. "Watch the gate. He's probably trying the gate!" p. 88
59. "You talk like a horse-trainer." p. 634
60. "You talk as if you were an old woman, dear." p. 612
61. "Why, whatever is the matter with you, Richard? You sound as if you'd lost your best friend." p. 295
62. "That sounds alarmingly like a compliment." p. 381
63. "Leo? Oh, I see. I am beginning to see. Everybody will get theirs." p. 828
64. "Well, maybe you're right."
"You're beginning to admit it." p. 409
65. "Clarence! You're beginning to talk as crazy as your mother." p. 103
66. "It's beginning to look as if he doesn't want to come home." p. 810
67. "An' the only way you can make a revolution anythin' but a mess to no purpose is to change the people's ideas an' thank goodness there aint nobody can accomplish that. It can't be done."
"They're changin' already, Padre." p. 42
68. "No, he has to get right out again. He's sailing Friday on the Queen Mary." p. 880
69. "Sandy's leaving tonight, Mr. Whiteside. He'll probably be gone a year. We've simply got to decide. Now." p. 885
70. "I don't give a God damn what you think of me. I'm leaving for New York tonight! Right now! This minute! p. 86
71. "But I'm not going away tomorrow, Birdie. There's plenty of time to worry about Horace when he comes home." p. 806
72. "She is sailing tomorrow on the Normandie. p. 892
73. "We're leaving here tomorrow." p. 876
74. "Well, she's not getting married tomorrow. But she is going to Baltimore tomorrow, so let's talk about that." p. 814
75. "A horse named McCarthy is running in the sixth race today." p. 934
76. "Is he really coming out today? I brought him a plant---" p. 859
77. "Girls, what do you think? He's getting up and coming out today!" p. 858



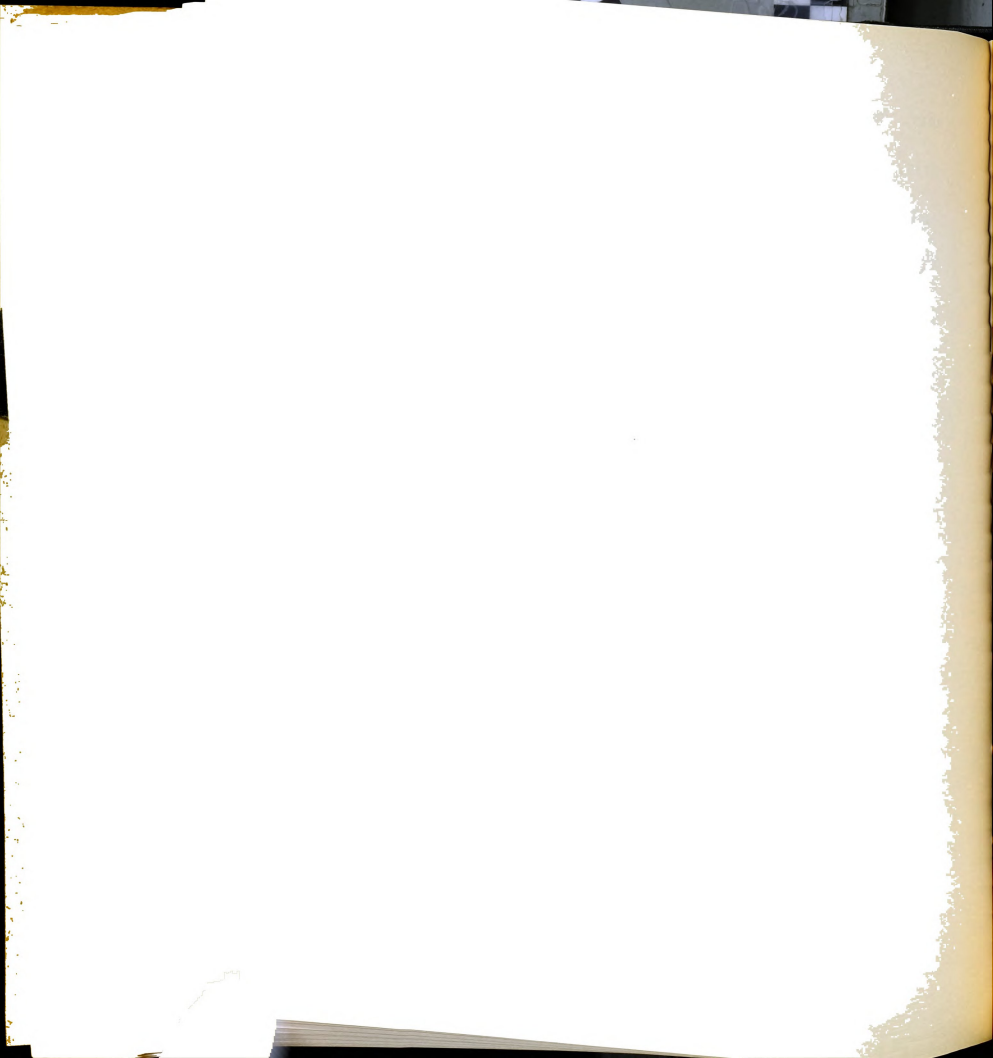
78. "Mama! Papa! They are coming in now." p. 800
79. "I'm leaving now. And I--I took five bucks. If anything delays me getting back, I'll phone." p. 371
80. "What kind of joke are you playing now?" p. 840
81. "In fact, he's screaming at me now. Here he is." p. 864
82. "I was deeply shocked to hear of Mrs. Day's illness. I hope I can be of some service. Will you take me up to her?"
"She's resting now. She can't be disturbed." p. 1030
83. "He's going away with Lorraine this afternoon." p. 907
84. "St. Paul's! I was through with St. Paul's long ago. I'm starting in Yale this fall." p. 996
85. "Well, he's only getting up this morning--after all, he's had quite a shock, and he's been in bed for two full weeks." p. 860
86. "Hello, Miss Preen. My you're looking radiant this evening." p. 878
87. "God is no cheap fella, Joe. God is lookin' out at Tony right now, and you know what he's sayin'?" p. 29
88. "I'm not working just now. I'm looking for work." p. 975
89. "Oh, I do wish you would! It's extraordinary how little one knows about one's own body isn't it? I get so impatient with myself sometimes - of my physical limitations. My mind is seething with ideas but I haven't the physical energy to go on working. I tire so quickly - and often for no apparent reason. Why is that Mr. Kinnicott?" p. 263
90. (into phone) "Hello, Elsie? (Listens) You're coming down? (Elated to Saloon) She's coming down!" p. 943
1. "Oh, yes. June, tell your father he'd better come down, will you? Mr. Whiteside is coming out." p. 859
2. "I am now going upstairs to smash our radio, so that not even accidentally will I ever hear your voice again." p. 910
3. "I want to talk to you, Horace. I'm coming up." p. 830
4. "I'm waiting here for Walter. He's coming over with some dough." p. 109
5. "I'm ---I'm just waiting in the kitchen until Mr. Whiteside is---Excuse me." p. 894
6. "Louie, listen. My whole future depends upon this. My girl's waitin' at the train. I've just got fifteen minutes to get there. If you'll help me out---" p. 104



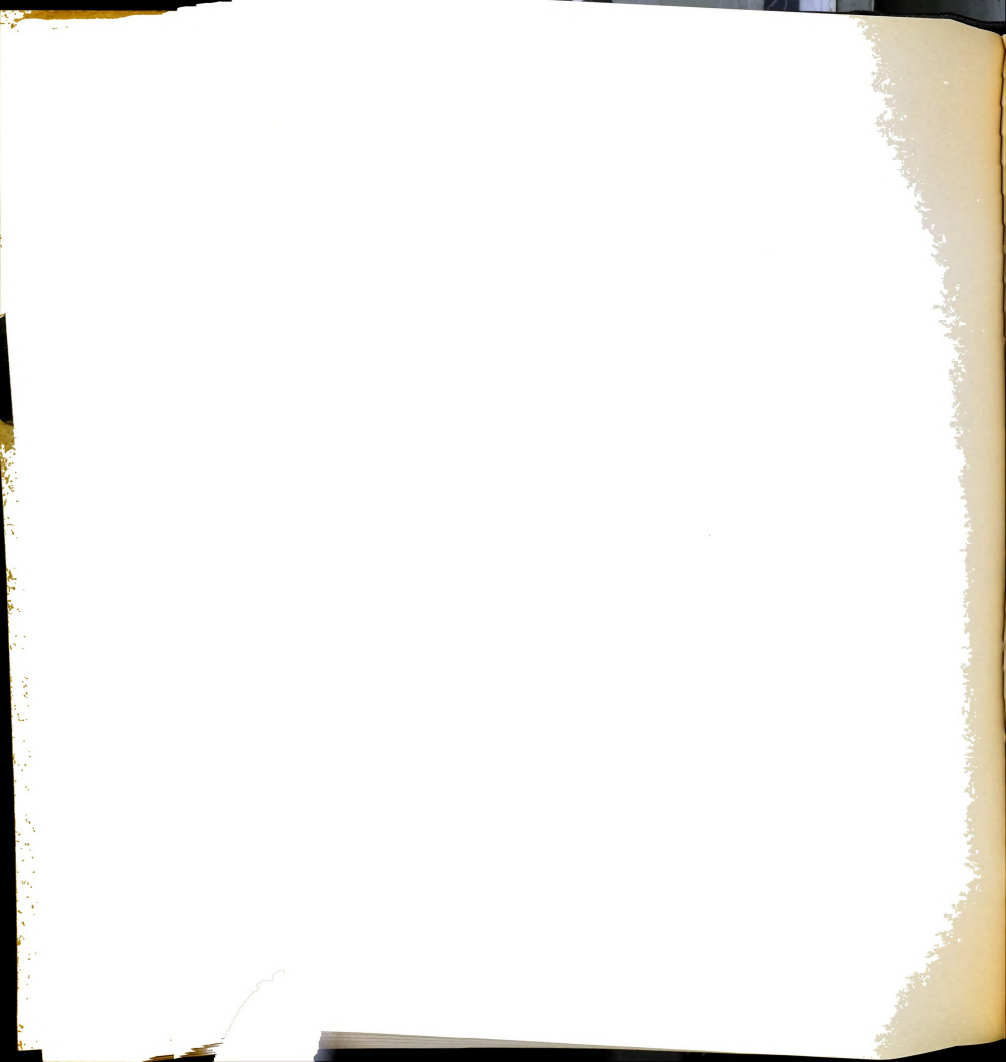
997. McCue of the City News Bureau is telephoning at Bensinger's desk through the gambler's chatter. p. 60
998. "Your grand daughter is stifling and suffocating in this desert when a few of your thousands would give her the chance to claim her birthright." p. 399
999. "Aren't we starting at the wrong end Regina? What did Horace tell you?" p. 847
1000. "Don't make a fool of yourself Allan. They're all staring at you."
"I know they are." p. 409
1001. "Jefferson, you are standing in the presence of one of the great men of our time." p. 869
1002. "They're moving in on us again, bag and baggage. (The door bell rings) Don't let them in." p. 1043
1003. "Einstein's coming around to it." p. 543
1004. "They're crawling into the sagebrush the other side of the road. Where are them pans?" p. 413
1005. "How do we know there won't be another reprieve tonight? For all I know I'm hanging around here for nothing. When I've got a sick wife! p. 82
1006. "Come on, boss or we're all dead."
"The law's closing in on you." p. 412
1007. "What's he doing in the mayor's office?" p. 68
1008. They are crowding about Woodenshoes. p. 85
1009. "Gregg is walking out on Young England." p. 561
1010. "Well, what's going on between you two anyhow?" p. 899
1011. "I'm going next door to Frankie's to make a bet. I'll be right back." p. 927
1012. "Quiet! quiet please! We're going on the air!" p. 902
1013. "Can I drop you, Mr. Jefferson? I'm going down to the -- Mansion House, I think it is called." p. 889
1014. "You know what, Doc? I'm going to Lake Placid for three weeks. ---isn't that wonderful?" p. 905
1015. In its Italian folder the manuscript of her book is lying on the piano before her. She picks it up ---she gives the effect of weighing the script in her hand. p. 268
1016. "Walter's pretty sore. You better come over and see him." p. 103



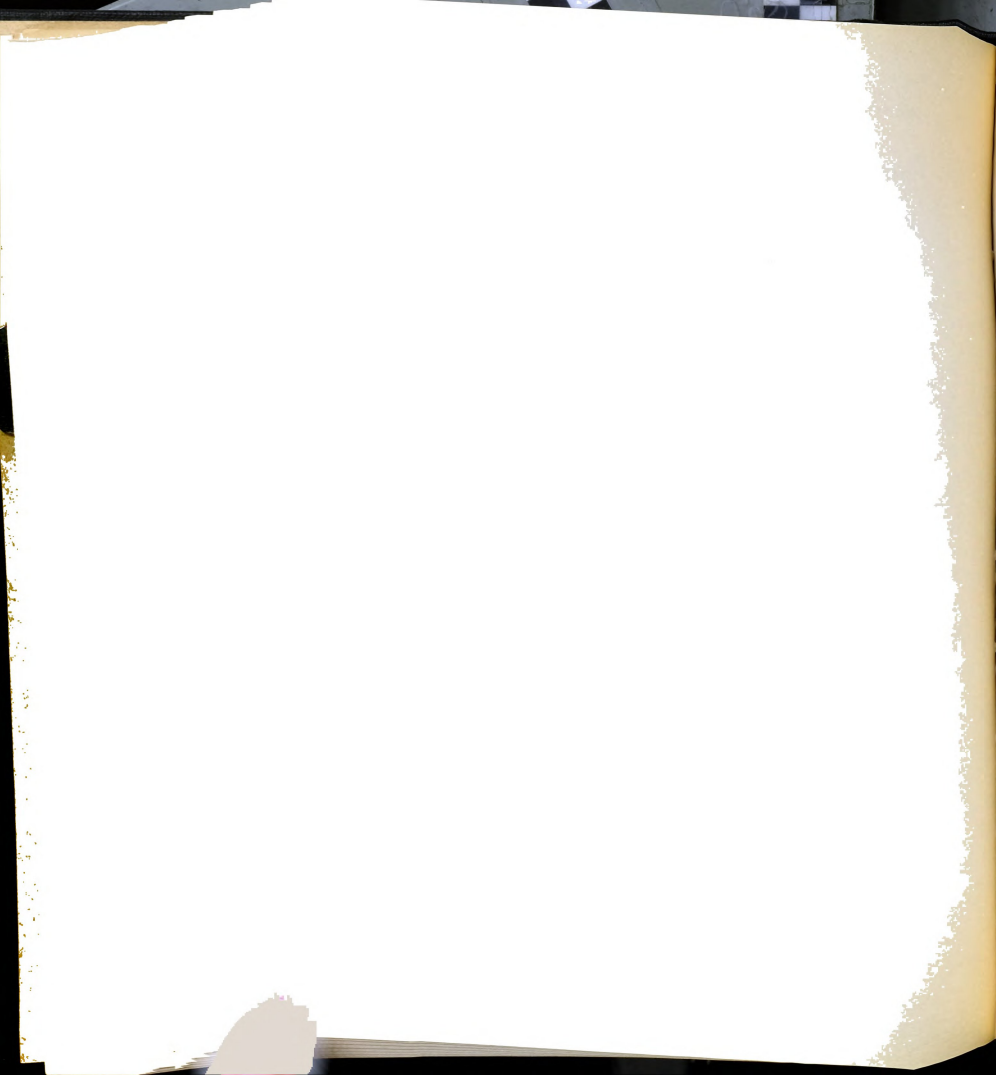
617. "Now you come along with another of your moron blunders--- the worst of your whole career." p. 98
618. "Well you just go ahead and try it, that's all I can tell you." p. 259
619. "Now you Hildy Johnson, you keep away from me! I'll hit you with this mop! I will!" p. 77
620. "In costume? Or are you wearing your costume?" p. 929
621. (into phone) "Every night I make dinner and you and Marion go out!---I'm not yelling---" p. 252
622. "Grover's Corners lies on the old Archaeozoic granite of the Appalachian range." p. 757
623. The congregation streams into the church and sits in silence. p. 779
624. "What'll I do?"
"You wait in my bedroom." p. 262
625. "And I'm positive he had. You're not accusing me of being a liar, I hope." p. 290
626. (Reading) "Dear Fried Day: We are assigning you the exclusive rights for Staten Island for selling Gem Home Poppers for popcorn." p. 991
627. "You hear dat, Joe? Any is askin' you for stay here." p. 33
628. "She's deliberately afflicting mankind with the jitters." p. 381
629. "Considering the damage I have suffered at your hands, I am asking very little." p. 861
630. "You're not asking me questions. I'm telling you." p. 936
631. "I'm only asking that you attest to my signature on this." p. 403
632. "And, of course, our favorite mountain, Mt. Monadnock, 's right here---and all around it lie these towns---Jaffrey and East Jaffrey----" p. 783
633. Annie has reached the side-board and is sniffing audibly. p. 989
634. She is sitting down, smoking a cigarette in a holder, watching him. He becomes conscious that she is studying him. p. 248
635. (into phone) "Well, hurry up. (to the room) He's stepping high." p. 68



536. "Let me out, I can't stand it!"
"Keep quiet! You're sitting pretty!" p. 115
537. "Well, I got away, didn't I? I'm in the country, aint I?
And I aint working so very hard, either, that I can notice."
p. 39
538. "You're just using that for an excuse. You're not going to
get out of this room until you set a date for your baptism."
p. 1039
539. "Oh, politics!"
"Yes, but it's taking the bread out of our mouths. It's robbery, that's what it is, highway robbery." p. 993
540. "I'm just tellin' you the truth. You're damn lucky you
picked a girl like Amy." p. 29
541. "I said they're pioneering. They're opening up new territory for the benefit of all, not so's a few land grabbers can step in and take the profits after somebody else had done the real work. " p. 363
542. "Of course I'm showing off. I'm trying to out-do Boze in gallantry." p. 403
543. "Paula's scared."
"What's she scared of?"
"The Mexicans are saying that Mantee is headed this way."
p. 366
544. "No, Gabby. You mustn't blame Boze for anything he says now. He's a man of muscle and he's suffering from the pangs of frustration." p. 395
545. Marion enters from the balcony. She is wearing a dove-colored evening dress---the gamin transformed into a lady-of-the-world. p. 245
546. "I told you about that major artist that's been hidden. I'm transferring him to you." p. 409
547. "I'm not thinking about myself! I don't care what haprens to me." p. 407
548. Nature is proving that she can not be beaten---not by the likes of us. She's taking the world away from the intellectuals and giving it back to the apes. p. 381
549. Boze is in an ugly mood and is taking it out on the one completely defenseless person present. p. 395
550. Squire is leaning forward, watching the Duke intently. p. 412
551. "Your soup's waiting for you, my friend." p. 372
552. "I'm wondering if you really believe all that---I mean about women?" p. 405



653. "He doesn't know what train he can get out of Chicago, but he'll be here sometime this evening."
"Good! Is he staying overnight?" p. 880
654. "These are probably my luncheon guests. Metz, you're stay-
ing for the day, of course?" p. 870
655. "My plans have been uncertain."
"You mean you were just bumming along?" p. 370
656. "Oh look, Sherry, it's starting to snow." p. 898
657. "Dr. Crippler is taking care of me." p. 864
658. "I'm taking the one o'clock train, Sherry, I'm leaving."
p. 903
659. "Don't drag yourself into the idea that all you're thinking
of is my happiness. You're thinking of yourself a little
bit, too, and all those months of breaking in somebody new."
p. 876
660. "Sarah's got a little surprise for you, Mr. Whiteside.
She's just taking it out of the oven." p. 906
661. "I'm afraid he isn't taking notice of the Mesalia Journal.
Do you mind?" p. 866
662. It [lunch] will be sent up to you on a tray. I am using
the dining room for my guests." p. 862
663. "I am not only walking out on this case, Mr. Whiteside, I
am leaving the nursing profession." p. 908
664. "Mr. Jefferson, I'm not leaving after all. My plans are
changed." p. 901
665. "Now listen to me, Maggie. I'm willing to forgive your
tawdry outburst and talk about this calmly." p. 905
666. "I'm on my way to Nova Scotia."
"Nova Scotia? What are you going to Nova Scotia for?" p. 907
667. "What are you giving me for Christmas, Jefferson? I have
enriched your feeble life beyond your capacity to repay
me."
"Yes, that's what I figured. So I am not giving you any-
thing." p. 880
668. "I'm savin' my duties for the brotherhood of man." p. 43
669. "You are tampering with more than you bargained for." p. 247
670. "I'm saying all the wrong things as usual. Let's try to get
along better." p. 826



71. "I'm a soft man for a woman's smile."
"I'm smiling, Ben. I'm smiling because you are quite safe while Horace lives." p. 848
72. "I tell you everything's all right, Tony. Oh, I aint sayin' you aint got to keep things movin' along easy and friendly an' all that. But that aint goin' to be so hard. Just be good to her and take care of her. That's what Amy needs. She's tired, poor kid!" p. 28
73. "And Oscar, I have one more wish. Just one more wish."
"What is it Birdie? What are you saying?" p. 808
74. "What's the talk?"
"I'm telling you. There's going to be a wedding---over my dead body there is." p. 823
75. "Is he thinking of going away, Tony?" p. 33
76. "Old enough to get married, you're thinking, eh?" p. 814
77. "Yes. For once in your life I'm tying your hands. There is nothing for you to do." p. 841
78. "I am worrying about the horses. I am worrying about you." p. 815
79. "Who are you waiting for?"
"No one."
"I'm not waiting for anybody, either." p. 940
80. "She won't come to the phone, but I keep trying anyway. She's out. She's in. She's working. I get the wrong number. Everything goes haywire. I can't sleep." p. 933
81. "Come on, baby. Your mama's waiting for you, and she aint nobody to keep waiting." p. 815
82. "Where are you dining?" p. 216
83. (He reads) "Treacle Face, what is this I hear about a hip fractured in some bordello brawl? Does this mean our Hollywood Christmas party is off?" p. 865
84. "You won't do anything lurid, will you?"
"Just print the story---just as you write it---practically as you write it." p. 229
85. "You wait. Some day you'll need a woman friend. Then you'll think of me." p. 654
86. "I wonder whether he's hanging around her to see what he can get." p. 293
87. "How do you mean?" p. 213



- . "Yes. You use the word as a term of contempt." p. 210
- . "Sid, you're a caution. You turn everything into a joke." p. 282
- . "The morning star always gets wonderful bright just before it has to go." p. 751
- . "Clarence, if a man thinks a certain thing is the wrong thing to do, he shouldn't do it." p. 1016
- . "The cook's letter of reference. Sign here. The insurance papers. You sign here." p. 643
- . "Oscar, listen to him. He's getting ready to swear that it was you and Leo. What do you say to that?" p. 848
- . "You always talk like that when I'm having a nice time." p. 800
- . "Formula 284---Diapers gag".
"Ah, yes, but the tiger runs away with the baby's diapers! Fade-out! Now we need excitement. The tigers are loose---" p. 568
- . "Now, Mother, I never missed a train in my life. You run along with Peggy---" p. 95
- . "I paint pictures." p. 377
- . "You make me feel a little old-fashioned." p. 265
- . "You make me horribly ashamed." p. 215
- . "No! No! You let go of me! The warden'll be mad! He'll do something." p. 78
- . "Anyhow, this looks like the last hanging we'll ever have to cover." p. 63
- . "But from what the husbands say, it looks like he's a Lothario." p. 62
- . "You leave me no alternative. I am very sorry." p. 247
- . "But I happen to know about her. Didn't I have to write all Tony's letters for him?" p. 13
- . "Nancy, you don't humor your friends enough." p. 613
- . "It makes you look like a sissy." p. 368
- . "That gives me an idea." p. 369
- . "This gives us power of attorney until you get back." p. 643
- . "You're making it impossible for her to do anything now but get a divorce!"
- . "You flatter us. We didn't realize how much influence we had on our friends' lives." p. 635



10. "And yet you flirt and curry favor and bandy with them. and you're amused---always amused." p. 267
11. "But you forget, Dickie. You're a born martyr. I'm not." p. 268
12. "Cut the coronation scene---it drags." p. 572
13. "Things don't change much at Grover's Corners." p. 783
14. "The postal district brings in 507 more." p. 757
15. "What two hundred and sixty bucks?"
"The money I spent on the story! He's sending it over, but I want you to take that and give me the money now!" p. 103
16. "You're holding us up, and that's not pretty, Regina, not pretty." p. 811
17. "Your mother still lives there?" p. 374
18. "You gentlemen having your breakfast with us here?" p. 817
19. "Come, come, dear---mustn't be bitter because he got better notices that you did."
"Don't be silly, Sherry. I never read notices. I simply wouldn't care to act with him again, that's all. He's not staying here, is he? I hope not." p. 889
20. "Vinnie, I'm putting my foot down about this musical, just as I've had to put my foot down about your keeping this house full of visiting relatives. Why can't we live here by ourselves in peace and comfort?" p. 990
21. "Would you like to come along with us June? We're taking some presents over to the Dexters." p. 886
22. (into phone) "I've got them [tickets] right here in my pocket, honey---Three on the eleven-eighteen. I'm bringing 'em right out, mile a minute." p. 86
23. "We're giving him a lift as far as the Phoenix Biltmore." p. 385
24. "What's that? Delmonico's?"
"You're taking Mother, Cora, and Mary to Delmonico's for dinner." p. 1004
25. "There's been a slight change in plan. Miss Sheldon is off on a world cruise---I'm taking your play to Catherine Cornell." p. 916
26. "They're building a house on that vacant lot on Fiftieth Street." p. 986



727. "They're changing the guards down there. Look----they've got sixteen of them." p. 75
728. "They're throwing a dragnet around the whole North Side." p. 90
729. "Mr. Stanley would like you to help this gentleman down to the airport with this mummy case. He is sending it to a friend in Nova Scotia." p. 915
730. "You're superficial and casual and irresponsible. You take life, which is a tragic thing, as though it were a trivial bedroom farce." p. 249
731. "You're one of those tolerant people, aren't you?"
You say that as if tolerance were a crime." p. 227
732. "You take that back!" p. 124
733. "Sie bleiben ganzen abend zu Hause?"
"Yes, Minnie. I'm spending the evening alone with my life." p. 232
734. "It's Nature hitting back. Not with weapons, floods, plagues, holocausts. We can neutralize them. She's fighting back with strange instruments called neuroses. She's deliberately afflicting mankind with the jitters." p. 381
735. "You know, you're taking this much too seriously." p. 392
736. "What's the matter with you? What you scaring me this way for?" p. 48
737. "Have a cigar?"
"You're forgetting. I never smoke." p. 289
738. "Everybody's reading that now, Essie---and it don't seem to do them any harm. There's fine things in it seems to me - true things." p. 288
739. "We're getting him out of bed now. He'll be out very soon." p. 858
740. "And I'm warning you now that if the market ever goes up I'm going to unload that pew." p. 1001
741. "I've got a little surprise for you. Who do you think is paying me a flying visit tonight?" p. 889
742. "Where is Tom?"
"He's getting a job tonight driving a truck. He'll be back in a couple of days." p. 973
743. "Tell me, Miss Preen, is he---are they bringing him out soon?" p. 858



"Have you ever written anything about that?"
 "Off and on."

"Any definitive work, I mean?"

"I'm considering doing that right now." p. 263

"Lawrence, you're having tea with Edith Bailey Thursday
 afternoon." p. 991

"Aggie, why don't you come along? Why don't you desert this
 cannonball of fluff and come with me?"

"Everley, dear, be careful. You're catching me at a good
 moment." p. 891

"Morraine's taking him away with her this afternoon." p. 908

"I'm warning you for the last time." p. 994

"Yeah, They're sending over---it's my salary. They're send-
ing over my salary." p. 94

"Tonight they're giving me a dinner at the Waldorf Astoria
 for the press to meet my brother. Irony, if you like, eh,
 Marion?" p. 214

"You're going to be in office for exactly two days more and
 then we're pulling your big nose out of the feed bag and
 letting you out on your big fat can." p. 135

"Well, this afternoon May Lewis's mother is giving a party
 for everyone in May's dancing class. Harlan's going to
 that." p. 1042

"Well, after all these years she's repaying my affection
 by behaving like a fish-wife." p. 907

"Now I'm waiting for some dame I've never seen before."
 p. 931

"All right. Get funny."

(getting funny) "Now I'm standing on the corner of Third
 and Market. I'm looking around. I'm figuring it out.
 There it is. Right in front of me----" p. 929

"Listen, you lousy stiff. I just did this as a personal
 favor. Now I'm leaving town and I gave Jacobi every cent
 I got and I want it back right away!" p. 92

"And this evening I'm staying at the Rand's for dinner."
 p. 282

"Well, I never! Here they are reformin' the world and they
don't even know what day of the week it is." p. 45

"For the last time, young lady, you give me one good reason
 why you don't like me." p. 659



For Chris' sake, Jennie! Everytime we turn our backs you start that God-damn sweeping." p. 90

And now I have great news for you. You are going to Baltimore in the morning to bring your father home." p. 813

In my simple day you said: "That young man in bumptious and insufferable," and you dismissed him. Now you say: "He has an inferiority complex, and you encourage him to be more bumptious and insufferable. It's very confusing." p. 235

Father has ceased explaining women to Clarence and is now explaining himself. p. 1016

quire is now examining the pictures with rapt attention. p. 379

But you're always helping me. It isn't fair to ask you--- in your vacation." p. 297

This is really our farewell party. I'm never coming back to New York." p. 664

You radicals, Joe, you're always and forever hollerin' an' carryin' on 'bout your rights." p. 42

I aint sad---It was a swell wedding and everybody had a swell time. Hear that? They're still singing." p. 36

"Who's Vicki?"

"An old friend to whom I'm dedicating the biography." p. 250

"Don't you realize---there are probably thousands of artists in France today who are saying, "I'd find a really big theme for my canvas if I could only get out to Arizona." p. 379

"But you get so excited Clare, and besides Miss Gulick says that our President, whom you're always belittling, prays to God for guidance and---" p. 1018

"Well, one day I woke up and I said to myself; Look here, Nolan, you've got to take stock. You've got to ask yourself where you're heading." p. 219

"Look out where you're pointing that gun, Pinky!" p. 132

"Where you shooting, you God-damn fools? For Christ's sake! (another pane goes). Look out where you're aiming, will you?" p. 88

"I've asked before: where is this extra share coming from?" p. 811

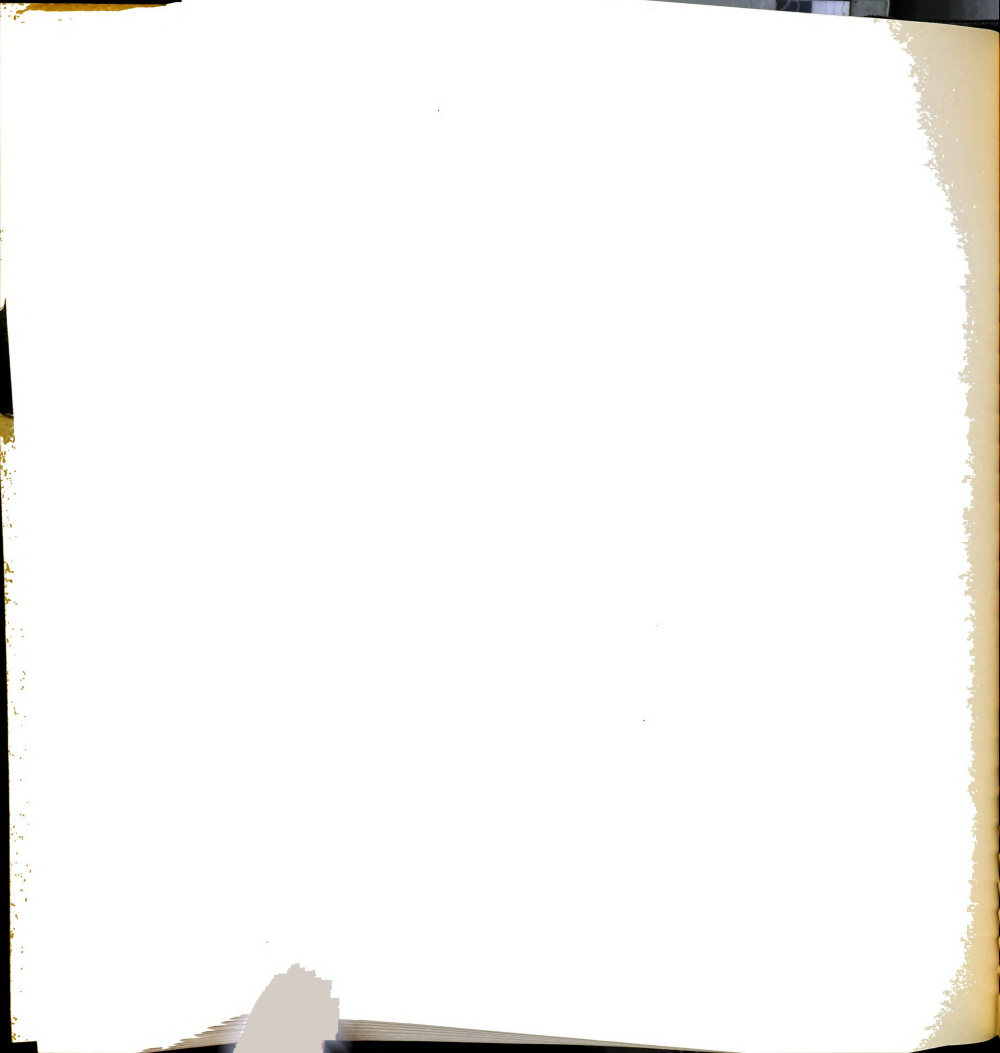
"There are kinds of laughter, son. I must say in all truth, that I am laughing, although not out loud." p. 947



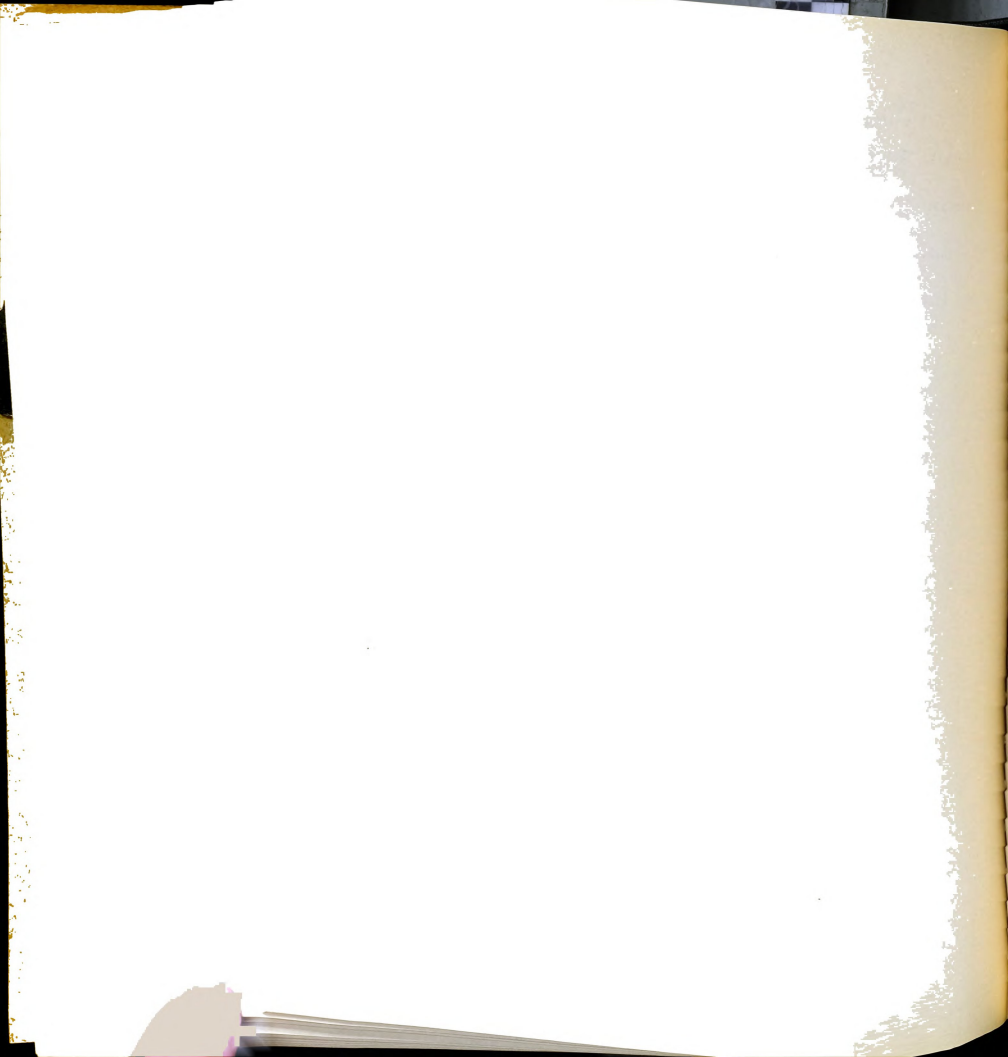
1777. "Dr. Lloyd, there's something that's troubling Mrs. Day's mind. I think you know what I refer to." p. 1031
1778. "And if your Finance Committee thinks it's too small they can blame the rascals that are running the New Haven railroad." p. 1000
1779. "The day wouldn't come when I wouldn't want to know everything that's happening here." p. 775
1780. "There you go again---defending the woman that's endangering your entire career and using up my energy and yours when you ought to be home right now getting together with folks and thinking how to cinch this here election." p. 254
1781. "It's not the rye! It's the same disease that's afflicting Boze! Impotence!" p. 398
1782. "They were so certain they had it [Nature] subdued. And now do you realize what it is that is causing world chaos?" p. 380
1783. "What's that you're reading?" p. 367
1784. "I hope you notice that Clarence is returning the pug dog." p. 1040
1785. "And just what does this mean?"
"It means, Mr. Whiteside, that I am leaving." p. 908
1786. "Do you mean that you are turning this down? Is it possible that's what you mean?" p. 829
1787. "Do you know what I'm beginning to think?" p. 94
1788. "It doesn't make any difference to you what I'm trying to tell you---because you don't know what it means to be really crazy about somebody." p. 396
1789. "Do you think I'm crazy enough to believe what you're saying?" p. 840
1790. "Now then! What is all this nice cheerful talk about a libel suit? That's what they're always having in England, isn't it, on the slightest provocation." p. 260
1791. "I'd hate to tell you what I had to do to get that---Not what you're thinking, however, from your expression." p. 370
1792. "Call it a day? You'll need me in the Senate, Leander, to fill in the gaps when you get hung up in a speech. Consider carefully what you are discarding." p. 256
1793. "I'm a natural worrier. Especially when I'm getting ready to close a business deal and one of my partners remains silent and invisible." p. 821



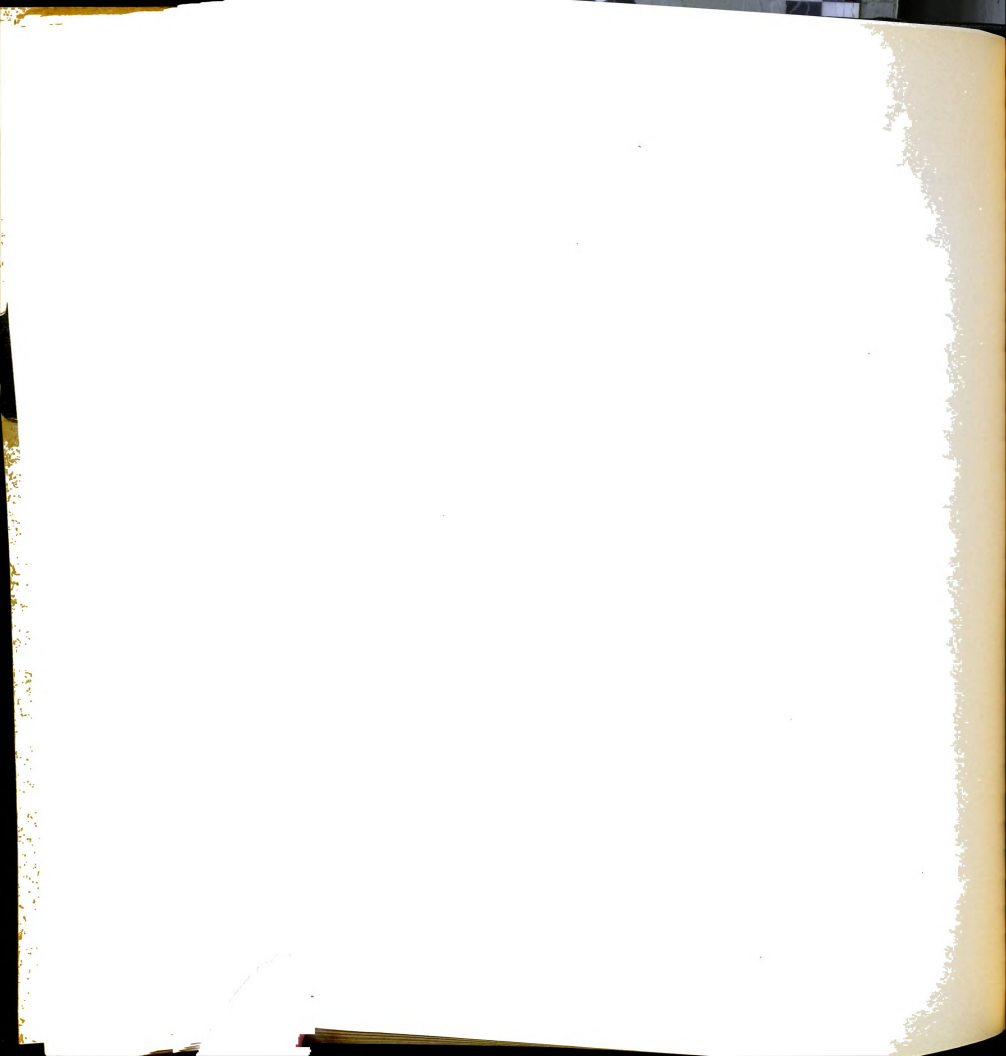
1794. "Well, good-bye, you lousy wame slaves! When you're crawling up fire escapes and getting kicked out of front doors, and eating Christmas dinner in a one-armed joint, don't forget your old pal, Hildy Johnson." p. 87
1795. "My, how time flies when you're having fun." p. 912
1796. "How can I serve myself when she's holding that platter over my head?" p. 988
1797. "And when you're walking up and down North Avenue with blue eyeglasses selling lead pencils, we're not going to forget you either." p. 135
1798. "And as for you, Richard Croker---don't think, just because you're hiding behind these minions you've put in public office, that you're going to escape your legal responsibilities." p. 994
1799. He is a manly, serious, good-looking boy. Because he is starting in at Yale next year, he thinks he is grown up. p. 984
1800. "Vinnie, you know I like to live well, and I want my family to live well. But this house must be run on a business basis. I must know how much money I'm spending and what for." p. 1017
1801. "That's why I'm giving her credit for ordinary good sense." p. 291
1802. "I was the only one with guts enough to stand up for him! And that's why you're persecuting me!" p. 80
1803. "I don't understand why I'm always getting damn fool letters like this!" p. 991
1804. "Get all the kinds. Get as many kinds as they're selling." p. 965
1805. "It'll take a great deal of money to live as you're planning, Regina." p. 808
1806. "Sheriff Hartman has just put two hundred more relatives on the payroll to protect the city against the Red Army, which is leaving Moscow in a couple of minutes." p. 67
1807. "I see you've got your new dress on."
"Yes, I thought if Sid's taking me to the fireworks---I ought to dress up a bit." p. 297
1808. "Come on, all of you, if you're looking for trouble. I never asked for quarter and I always save it." p. 937
1809. "You goin' look for my Amy, Doc? You goin' see if she is havin' fine times?" p. 25



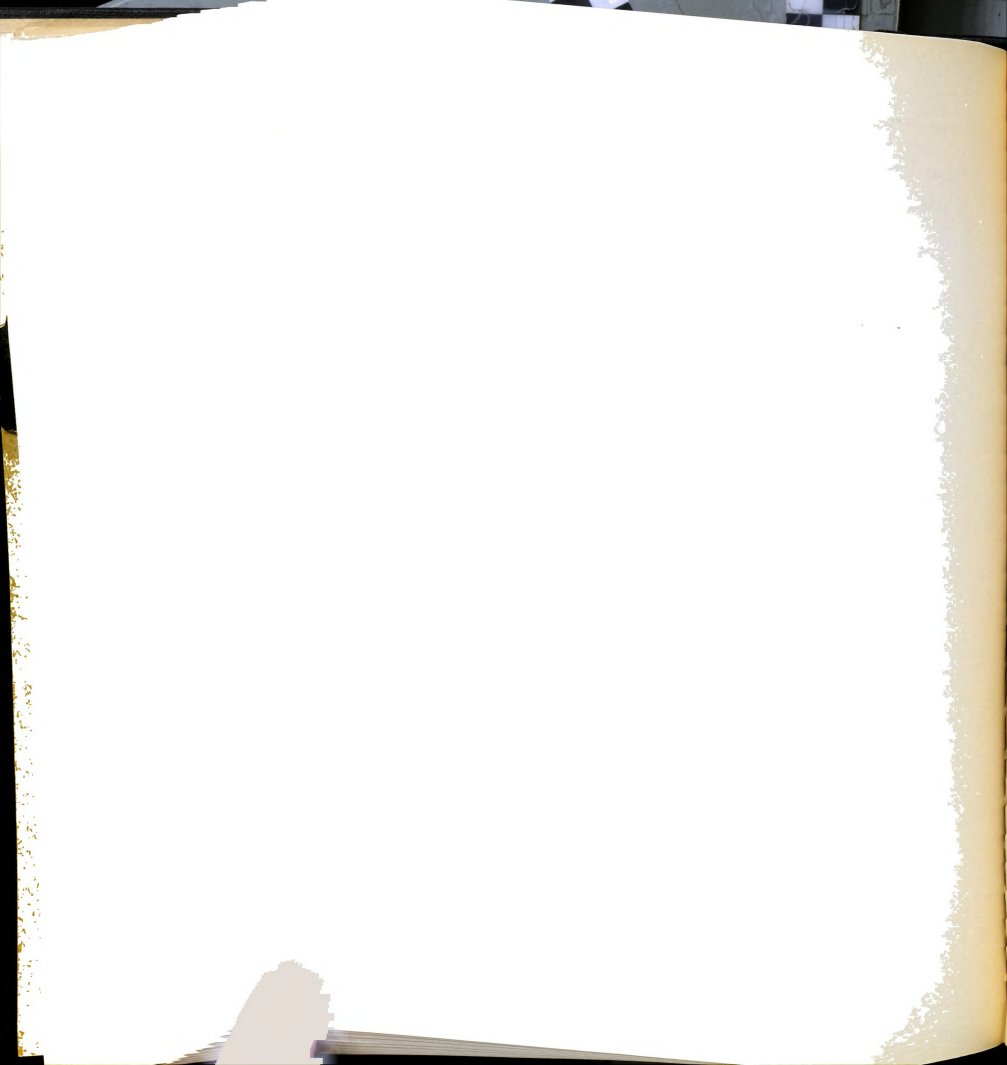
1810. "Yes, you can see life in Waterbury, all right---that is, if you're looking for life in Waterbury!" p. 231
1811. "Say-lop- I wish you wouldn't talk so much about blood while we're eating." p. 392
1812. "You mean now?"
"Yes, while I'm finishing 'Today's Special'" p. 375
1813. "You don't think I'm going to sit here and hold your hand while you're remembering your conquests, do you?" p. 231
1814. "Now I can underst nd Oscar's self-sacrifice, but what did you have to promise Marshall Company besides the money you're putting up?" p. 828
1815. "And how do you feel? Tip-top, I bet, because that's the way you're looking." p. 824
1816. "I asked you what is that strange costume you're parading around in?" p. 824
1817. "But that isn't the tale I am telling, Mr. Marshall." p. 803
1818. "You get curious about the way they [toys] work and you forget whatever it is you're remembering that's making you cry." p. 949
1819. "I can feel sort of electric waves running over me---and I can be pretty sure she's doing some broadcasting, whether she knows it or not." p. 369
1820. "The party I am speaking of, my friend, is you." p. 945
1821. "What dream?"
"What dream! The dream you're dreaming." p. 925
1822. "Busy is right. Tomorrow, now, I've got two confinements I'm watching and an appendicitis, all up on St. Helena's Road." p. 27
1823. "I'll handle them. It's that three-toed Sheriff I'm worrying about. If he starts sticking his snoot into this--- I wonder if we could arrest him for anything?" p. 119
1824. "These people I'm depending on to elect me aren't sophisticated like you or me." p. 242
1825. "Where is my rival? Don't tell me she's holding up two big shots like you two boys." p. 256
1826. "Tell her she's getting a break when you don't go home." p. 84
1827. "Of course he had to have a gun to re-enact with, and who do you suppose supplied it? Peter B. Hartment---"B" for brains--- I tell you, I'm not kidding." p. 91



1828. "I am so sorry that my husband isn't here to meet you. He's been very ill. He's at Johns Hopkins. But he will be home soon. We think he's getting better now." p. 302
1829. "Then something certainly has happened. People don't just say they are arriving on Thursday night and they haven't come by Friday morning." p. 817
1830. "I mean I am scratching your name off the ticket Tuesday and running Czernecki in your place. It's nothing personal." p. 98
1831. "I bet all those people are laughing at me." p. 40
1832. (turning from phone) "Hey! this looks good. An old lady just called up the detective bureau and claims Williams is hiding under her piazza." p. 109
1833. "Thank you, my dear, and a very Merry Christmas to you. Don't forget we're dining on June tenth." p. 885
1834. "He admits killing the policeman but he claims they're just using that as an excuse to hang him on account he's a radical." p. 69
1835. "I think maybe the moon's getting nearer and nearer and there'll be a big 'splosion." p. 766
1836. "And did you ever notice fellows when they get sweet on a girl-- the silly things a girl can make them do? And they don't even seem to know they're acting silly." p. 995
1837. "Get a good one. Tell the man you don't know anything about fire-arms and you're trusting him not to fool you." p. 949
1838. "What kind of work is this you're planning to do?" p. 1023
1839. "Mac, you don't know what you're fighting for either." p. 943
1840. "Just what is it you're charging him with?" p. 290
1841. "Hmm, that's good. But where's the connection, exactly? Something from that book you're reading?" p. 286
1842. "How are you going to pay for all that liquor you're drink-
ing?" p. 395
1843. "Look here now, Tony, I let you out of the hospital to get married."
"You bet your life! You think any goddam doc is stoppin' me from gettin' married?" p. 25
1844. "For God's sake, Roy, can't you see he's kidding you?" p. 111
1845. "She's taking the one o'clock train out."
"You mean she's quitting you after all these years? She's really leaving?" p. 910



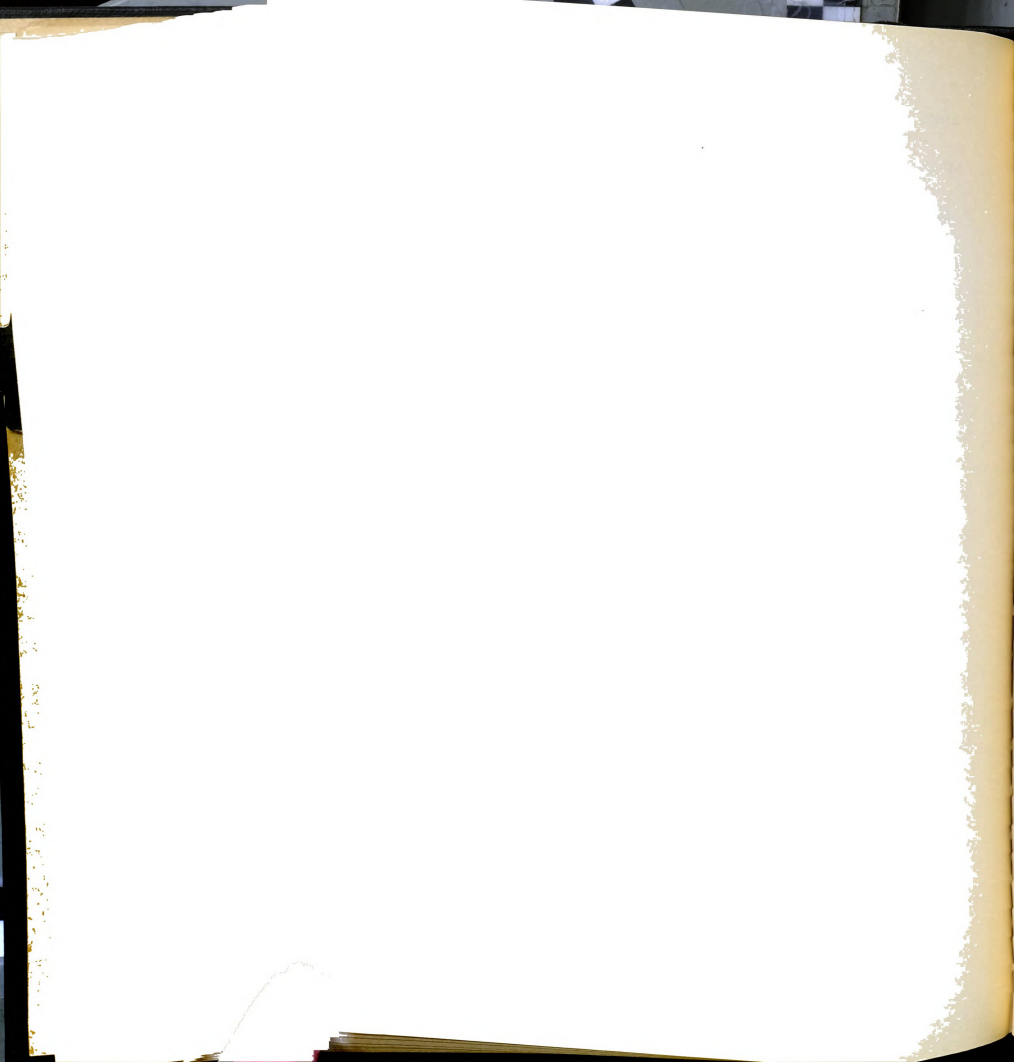
1846. "Darn him! When he gets his nose in a book, the house could fall down and he'd never----" p. 284
1847. "Mother Gibbs, when does this feeling go away?" p. 787
1848. "Waterbury's a nifty old town with the lid off, when you get to know the ropes." p. 281
1849. "I only hope I'm around here when it happens. I want to see you when you've joined the mob and started waving the red flag." p. 365
1850. "When I get through, there won't be a person in town will buy a dishrag in your place." p. 292
1851. "When that baby drops through the trap tomorrow, it's a million votes. He's just a divine accident." p. 70
1852. "It's all that Walter Burns. Oh, I'll be so glad when I get you away from him. You simply can't resist him." p. 93
1853. "Listen, Hildy. We ought to have our plans all set when Butch gets here." p. 123
1854. "Now, son, when you get control of your temper, and cool down a bit, you'll see that my ordering hasn't been so bad for you." p. 255
1855. "I'll write out a note to Walter sayin' for him to give you the money he owes me." p. 104
1856. "Lucy, where's Mrs. Haines?"
"Down waiting for the mail. You'll miss her a lot when she goes tomorrow?" p. 648
1857. "There is a way out. I've got this Williams surrounded, haven't I? Now if you just give me a couple of hours---" p. 98
1858. "You mustn't mind if Sid comes home feeling a bit---gay." p. 297
1859. "Lily, I swear to you if any man offers me a drink, I'll kill him--that is, if he changes his mind." p. 282
1860. "And if you take my advice, you'll call her back." p. 85
1861. "I've read a plenty of your radical literature an' if you ask me, it's plain stupid." p. 42
1862. "That stuff is warm--too damned warm, if you ask me." p. 293
1863. "Wait a second, Louie. Come here. (as Diamond Louie approaches) Where do you keep your cap pistol, here?" p. 71
1864. "Why don't you take him out to your house and hang him?" p. 84



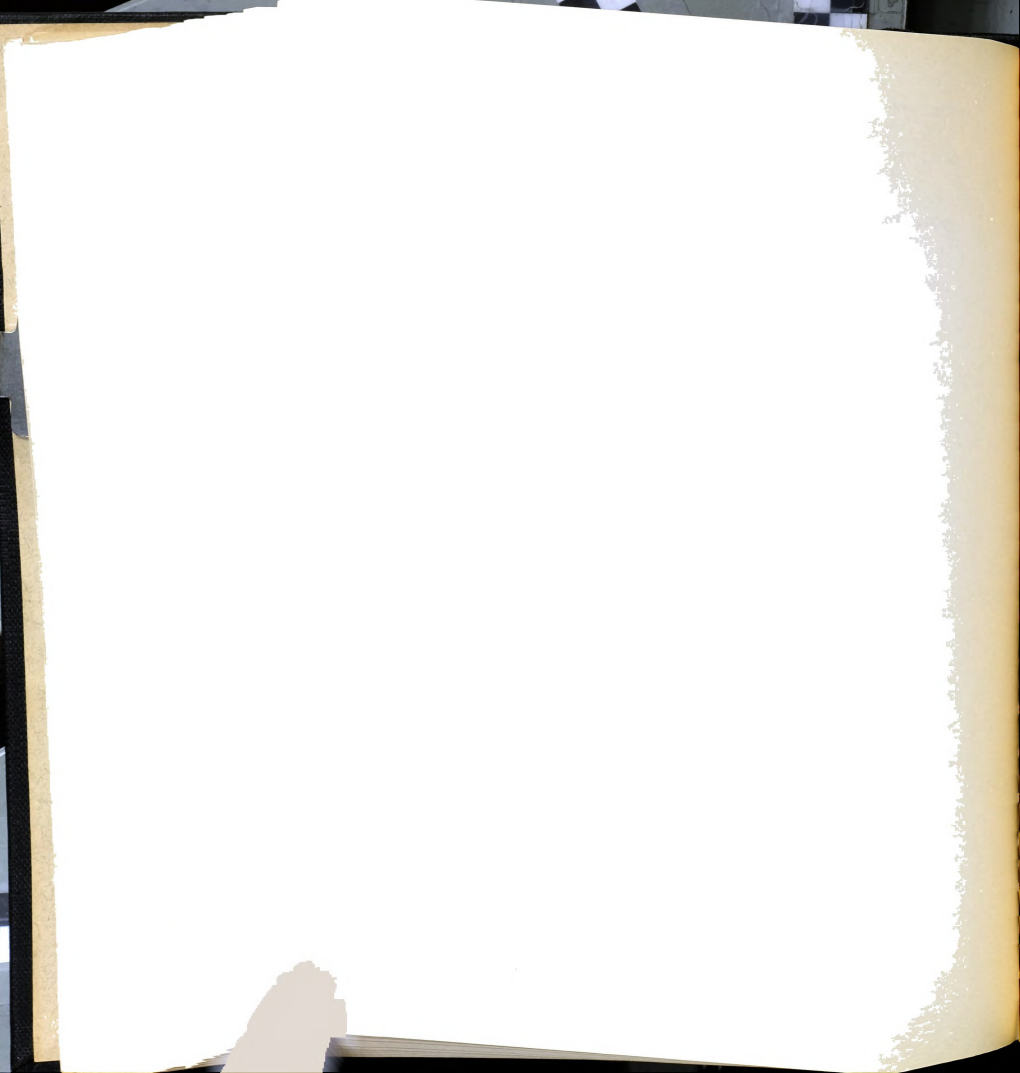
1865. "No. I see there's no point in asking you questions."
"Den vy do you ask dem?" p. 208
1866. "Good for Marion."
"Why do you say that?" p. 209
1867. "Why do you grudge giving him a laugh somewhere?" p. 214
1868. "Well, why don't you ask him to state his proposition and have done with it?" p. 226
1869. "Most autobiographies are written by corpses. Why not do yours while you are still vital, young, in the thick of life?" p. 228
1870. "Why don't you take me for a walk, Richard," p. 262
1871. "Mary, why don't you call this whole thing off?" p. 641
1872. "Now don't move until I come back and don't talk much and remember about his medicine, Addie----" p. 823
1873. "But mother, when you love somebody, I thought you loved them until the day you die." p. 645
1874. "What are you interested in, Miss Allen, evening gowns?"
"Until I--I organize my social life---I won't have much use for evenin' gowns." p. 625
1875. "I don't believe you. Is it true?"
"Wait till you hear." p. 608
1876. "No! No! We don't want him. But wait till he gets through. Then tell him his poetry stinks." p. 123
1877. "Something terrific's happened, Peggy. Wait till I tell you." p. 117
1878. "Now wait! Don't cry. Wait till I tell you. I just captured Earl Williams." p. 105
1879. "The next time I see you---no matter where I am or what I'm doing---I'm going to walk right up to you and hammer on that monkey skull of yours until it rings like a Chinese gong." p. 73
1880. "You know where he is and I'm going to stay right here till I find out." p. 65
1881. "I better speak to him about a new suit for you before he finds out he's being surprised by visitors." p. 985
1882. "Go and see your boy friend, why don't you?" p. 80
1883. "He'll start crying in a minute. Why don't you send him some roses, like Molly Malloy?" p. 69



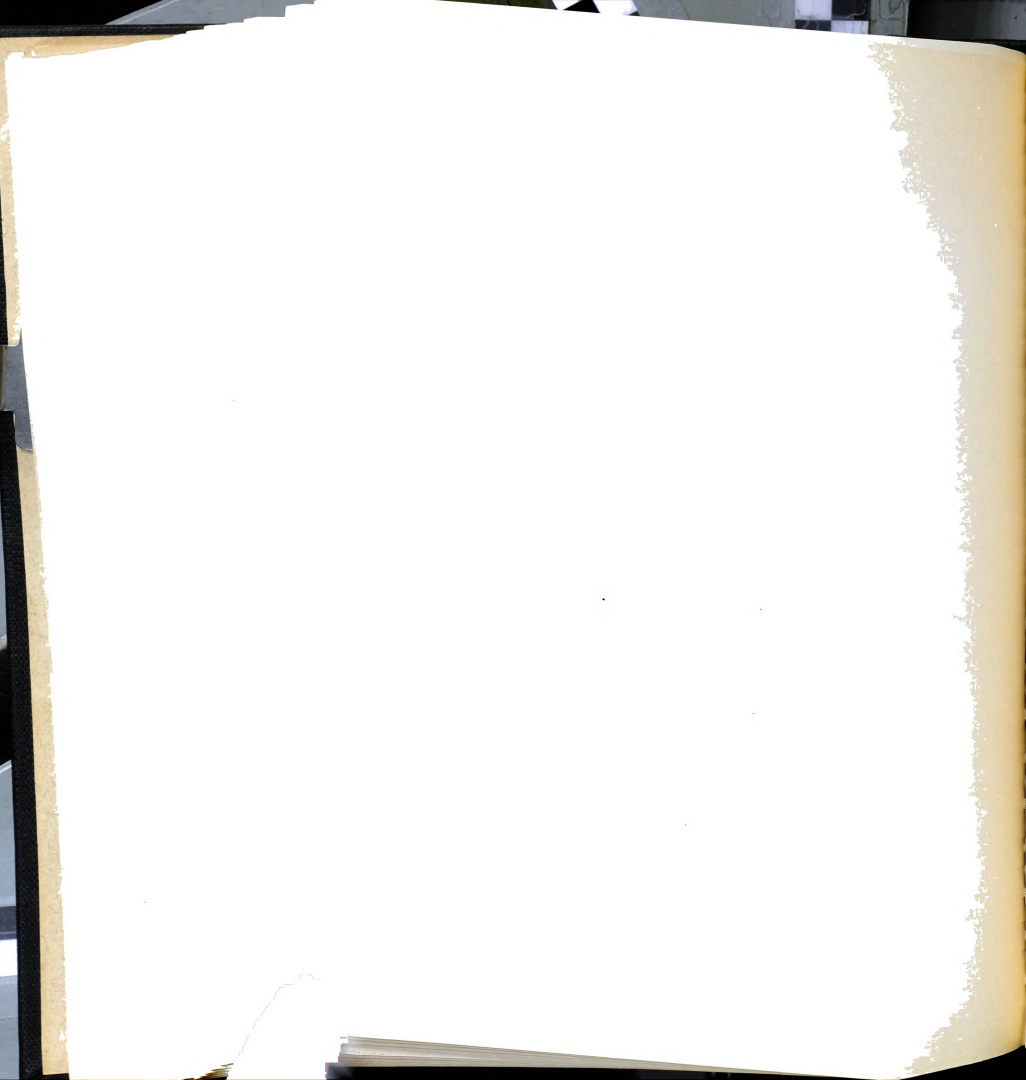
1884. "Oh, Bunny, after you get to Washington will you introduce me to some Senators?" p. 219
1885. "I don't see how you stand me---having a cranky old maid around all the time." p. 297
1886. "Before you go on, Woodenshoes, would you mind running down to the corner and getting me a hamburger sandwich?" p. 69
1887. "We got to think fast before those lying reporters get hold of this." p. 99
1888. "Slade---this is no time---please leave before she comes." p. 256
1889. "I must write some of it down before I forget it." p. 265
1890. "Mary, mother wants to talk to you before she goes away." p. 644
1891. "But before she brings him home, I want to know what he's going to get." p. 811
1892. "I'll get Cal to take you upstairs."
"Before you do, I want to tell you that after all, we have invested our money in Hubbard Sons and Marshall, Cotton Manufacturers." p. 840
1893. "Why, I wouldn't let him stay---Go on Hildy, before I make you city editor." p. 139
1894. "Come on, now. Where is he, before I hurt you?" p. 113
1895. "Come on, you lousy tart. Before we kick your teeth out." p. 113
1896. "He's in a better position to get married than he ever was."
"Well, I hope he finds a woman who's willing---though after he's through with his betting on horse races, and dice and playing Kelly pool, there won't be much left for a wife---" p. 297
1897. "Report to me, Charlie, the minute you get there! I'll be in the building!" p. 97
1898. "Well, I only hope some day my own daughter will learn to cultivate a little respect for the things I stand for." p. 367
1899. "Suppose he finds he's insane or something?"
"He won't find he's insane." p. 82
1900. "You asked me what brings me here, so I'll come to the point at once." p. 290
1901. "Let's get the cops and search the building. What do you say?" p. 111



1902. "No, I'm not over it. What makes you think I'm over it?"
p. 265
1903. "Well, there's a patent device on this drinking fountain so
that it never over-flows, Mother Gibbs, and it never sinks
below a certain mark they have there." p. 787
1904. For we are dealing here with a factory that manufactures en-
tertainment in approved sizes; that puts the seven arts right
on the belt. p. 538
1905. "I must admit, Bunny, that you provoke in me all my malicious
impulses. You come here suddenly and you convey to me what
I've missed in not marrying you. You dangle before me the
inventory of your felicities--a career, a fortune, a fabu-
lous bride--and then because I get a chance to chronicle my
own adventures---you object--you tell me I mustn't! I have
a nice nature, Bunny, or I should be angry---I should be in-
dignant. p. 244
1906. "I want no one to come in or out while I'm in this room."
"What do you mean, sir?" p. 861
1907. "Lady wants five gallons of gas . Get going!" p. 357
1908. "You just wait till you see what."
"Seems to me she might wait till the Fourth is over before
bringing up----" p. 284
1909. "You ought to do it for his sake, if you had any sense---
unless you want him to end up in jail." p. 291
1910. "I'll be upstairs, Mother, if you want me." p. 859
1911. "Listen a minute! I'm just going to call your damned bluff
and tell you that, whether you want to reconsider your de-
cision or not, I'm going to refuse to print your damned ad
after tomorrow." p. 291
1912. "You go, Ma. I'm not really sick. I'll be all right. You
go. I want to be alone." p. 295
1913. "Gee, I sure would hate to be a woman!"
"Nobody is wantin' to be a woman, Joe---but ees playita good
womans like my Amy!" p. 29
1914. "Oh, I like the job first rate, Nat." p. 281
1915. "Well, I like it. I really do." p. 610
1916. "I like pictures of the sea." p. 385
1917. "Well, Sylvia, whatever I'm living in, I like it." p. 610
1918. "I--I've read it too--at the library. I like some parts of
it." p. 288



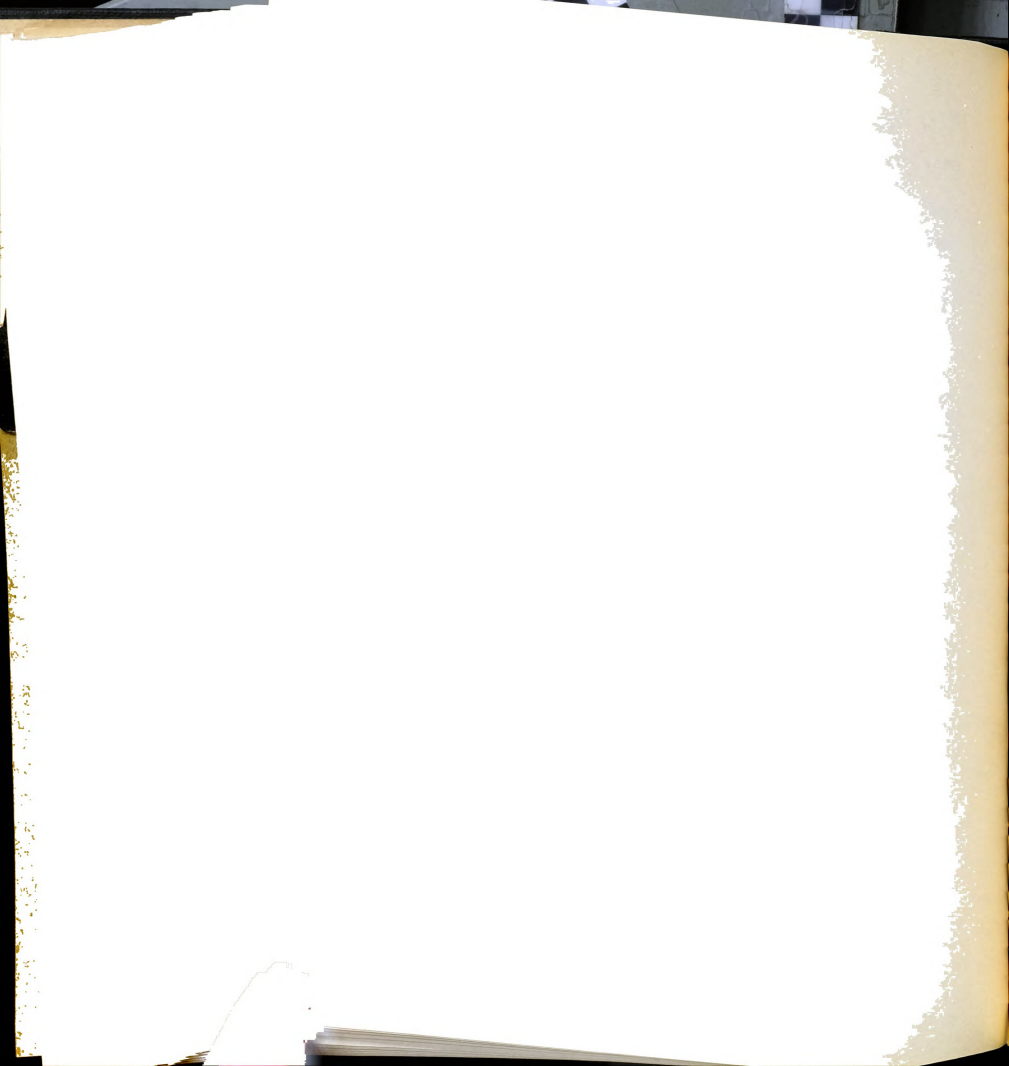
1919. "What about me do you like? There must be something." p. 209
1920. "Don't you like me, honey sweet?" p. 367
1921. "I'm going to send a bill to the Examiner tomorrow for all the wreckage that has been committed around here. How do you like that?" p. 64
1922. "I put a touch of absinthe in the dough. Do you like it?" p. 371.
1923. "Mary, how do you like that?" p. 610
1924. "I'll read you the one I like best." p. 375
1925. "This is the one I like best." p. 379
1926. "Say, I didn't know they were as good as that. I just like to take pictures, that's all." p. 883
1927. "I like to feel I'm a sort of second mother to them." p. 298
1928. "You better look out if you want to hang on to your job. Dad might come in and he doesn't like to have the help making passes at me." p. 369
1929. "I can't tell that, Pa. I'd have to snitch on someone---and you wouldn't want me to do that."
"No, I suppose I wouldn't. Hmm--well, I believe you--and I guess that settles that." p. 353
1930. "Well, I don't believe him---didn't then and don't now. I do believe he didn't deliberately plan to, but--Oh, it's no good talking, Essie." p. 298
1931. "Seems Mr. Parrish came home one night with lipstick on his undershirt." p. 614
1932. "But you've never lied to me before and I don't believe, even to save yourself punishment, you'd lie to me now, would you?" p. 293
1933. "If he gave me proof he'd--but even then I don't believe I could." p. 298
1934. "I should say not! I don't believe in this silly celebrating the Fourth of July---all this lying talk about liberty--when there is no liberty." p. 285
1935. "If you believe this would corrupt Muriel, then you must believe she's easily corrupted." p. 290
1936. "No--I know you perfectly well--it's just that--no, don't tell me." p. 216
1937. "Maybe that's all you're good for."
"I know--that's what you think." p. 365



1938. "I'm sorry to have to do a thing like that, but you know how Herman is about money." p. 65
1939. "When I got your letter I was sure you were jowly and, you know--convex." p. 211
1940. "Do you know what that pew is worth today?" p. 1001
1941. "And you know damned well it's your fault I don't get more scope for using it." p. 366
1942. "Still I know you---I'm sure---I've seen you somewhere." p. 210
1943. "Think it over and see if you don't agree with me." p. 294
1944. "Mrs. Potter, you come right back here where you belong." p. 635
1945. "He's not giving anything to her that belongs to you, or you would have felt that yourself long ago." p. 622
1946. "He's got seven kids, a mortgage, and belongs to a country club." p. 76
1947. "Also there is a faint flavor of condescension in the way you say "young man" for which I don't really care." p. 209
1948. "Sometimes I can feel as though I were sparkling all over, and I don't care what happens--I want to go out and do something that's absolutely crazy--and marvelous." p. 380
1949. "A hell of a lot you care how he feels." p. 81
1950. "Anyhow, the doctor is being held for malpractice and the station is full of his patients who claim he's innocent." p. 62
1951. "I regret to say it's something disagreeable--disgraceful would be nearer the truth--and it concerns your son, Richard." p. 29
1952. "You mean you haven't enough money?" p. 381
1953. "A shelf of Devonian basalt crosses it with vestiges of Mesozoic shale, and some sandstone outcroppings; but that's all more recent: two hundred, three hundred million years old." p. 757
1954. "Yeah? Well there it is--most of it, except what it costs to go to New York." p. 77
1955. "Look at it--it checks! Cinderella--Prince Charming--Boy meets girl---". p. 597
1956. "I had no idea you felt that way about me---you despise me, don't you?" p. 248



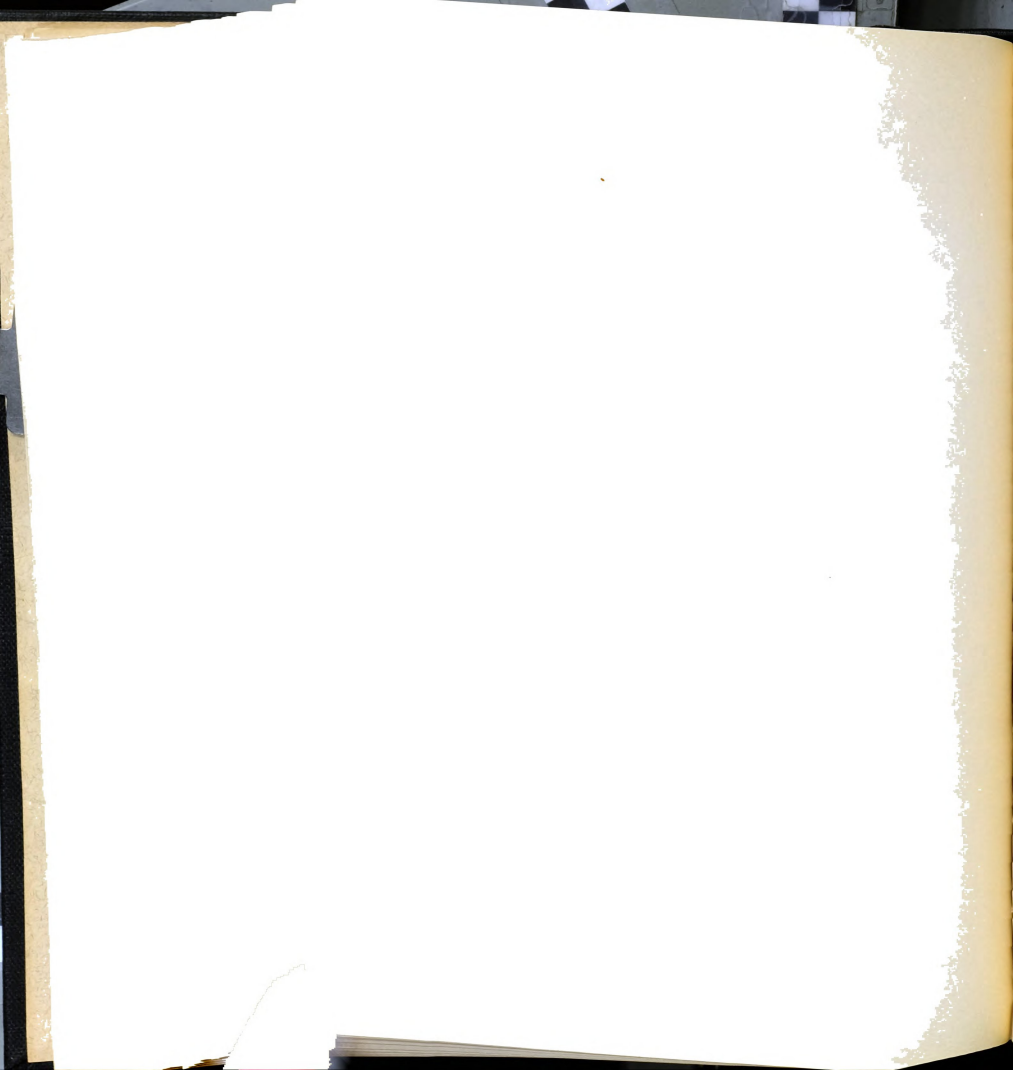
1957. "I doubt whether you can say anything to me more penetrating than the remarks I habitually address to myself." p. 214
1958. "By God, if that's true, he deserves that licking McComber says it's my duty to give him." p. 293
1959. "Gentlemen, I envy you your great adventure." p. 870
1960. "You know, Gabby--you're a queer kid. Sometimes you seem too young to know anything. And then---sometimes---you seem like God's grandmother." p. 369
1961. "Dear Mr. Whiteside, my I show you a few mementos of the past? I somehow feel that you would love them as I do." p. 872
1962. "Remember I'm next on that one, Dick. I feel the need of a little poetical education." p. 288
1963. "What's the matter, Tony? Aint you feeling good?" p. 28
1964. "Oh, hello, Vinnie. How're you feeling today?" p. 1037
1965. "I feel lucky today." p. 610
1966. "I guess I aint¹ so tired. I guess I better go back or they'll be wondering what's become of the blooming bride---" p. 30
1967. "Last time I came here I was awfully busy----Now they seem less eager." p. 212
1968. "What time will you be home, Dad?"
"About ten, I guess---maybe later." p. 366
1969. "Evil minded, I'm afraid, Nat. I hate to say it of your sister." p. 283
1970. "The little coward! I hate her! She can't treat me like that! I'll show her." p. 294
1971. "We hear you're getting married." p. 73
1972. "I hear you're going to be promoted. Anything doing?" p. 63
1973. "And tell me--how do I seem to you?" p. 218
1974. "I hone every little tummy is a - flutter with gastric juices." p. 870
1975. "What has this to do with me?"
"A good deal, I'm afraid. You seem to be the woman." p. 674
1976. "That means you've got brains." p. 380
1977. "Much obliged, and I hone you like it." p. 862



1978. "Oh, I've managed well enough up to now---if I'd been more provident I dare say I could have put a tidy bit by---but at the moment people don't seem in the mood to have their portrait done." p. 212
1979. "Well, Richard, I've always found I've had to listen to at least one stump speech every fourth. I only hope getting your extra strong one right after breakfast will let me off for the rest of the day." p. 286
1980. "That's why he came out top of his class. I'm hoping before you leave New Haven they'll find time to teach you reading is a good habit." p. 284
1981. "If these people intend to have their friends using the front door---"
"What do you want them to use, -- a rope ladder?" p. 865
1982. "I imagine we can make it by midnight." p. 384
1983. "You know I love to help. It makes me feel I'm some use in this house instead of just sponging---" p. 297
1984. "Why, I--I love her! I'm going to marry her---after I get out of college!" p. 294
1985. "I notice Hildy Johnson aint here either. I suppose the two of them are out sopping it up together." p. 64
1986. "May I move this chair?"
"You mean he's coming out now?" p. 860
1987. "He needs that more than you." p. 287
1988. "Well, thank you very much, Mr. Whiteside---you've been very kind. By the way, I'm a cribbage player, if you need one while you're here." p. 868
1989. "But I owe it to you." p. 215
1990. "To hell with him---I own this building." p. 78
1991. "Because my girl's uncle owns the business, that's why." p. 76
1992. "If Stephen is a rich man, now, he owes it largely to you." p. 640
1993. "I seem to attract youth, Feydie." p. 216
1994. "Your education in kicking a football around Yale seems to have blunted your sense of humor." p. 283
1995. "Now I realize, that you are a distinguished man of letters--"
"Yes, of course we both do." p. 873



1996. "What do I care what you believe? I do the dirty work and then---"
"I'm remembering that. I'm remembering that, Leo." p. 345
1997. "Did he die? You're always remembering about people dying." p. 821
1998. "Well--it a name suits this kind of country." p. 375
1999. "No, he passed that period long ago. Poetry's his red meat nowadays. I think---love poetry---and socialism, too, I suspect, from some dire declarations he's made." p. 284
2000. "I suppose Dick is deep in Nick Carter or Old Cap Collier." p. 284
2001. "I do hope those men folks aren't going to be late for dinner. But I suppose with that darned Sachem Club picnic it's more likely than not." p. 297
2002. They claim he was treating their wives with electricity for a dollar a smack. p. 62
2003. "I'm sorry- Mr. Whiteside is seeing no one." p. 866
2004. "The next time you see me I'll be riding around in a Rolls-Royce, giving out interviews on success-y." p. 87
2005. "Damn the Fourth of July. I wish we still belonged to England." p. 295
2006. "Can't imagine what--But it's to complain about something, I know that. I only wish I didn't have to be pleasant with the old buzzard." p. 239
2007. "Oh, that! Well, I'm not feeling so good lately. All I want is some peace and quiet." p. 684
2008. "We're going to have dinner in the evening tonight, you know---the best shore dinner you ever tasted and I don't want you coming home---well, not able to appreciate it." p. 684
2009. "I said I'm suing you for a hundred and fifty thousand dollars."
"You mean---because you fell on our steps, Mr. Whiteside?" p. 861
2010. "What have you heard? Oh, do tell me, Bunny!"
"Well---I mean about your life." p. 220
2011. (Reading) "The idol of the air waves rests until further notice in the home of surprised Mr. and Mrs. Stanley. Possibility: Christmas may be postponed this year. What's that mean?" p. 859



2012. "What beats me is why I didn't notice the Gates. The second time, I mean." p. 75
2013. "What do you mean?"
 "I mean simply this: belittling our system of government, preaching revolution and destruction, and red propaganda---well, it isn't a very healthy occupation. That's all."
 p. 364
2014. "But what the hell! They never mean it!" p. 374
2015. "Now, you don't mean that, Mr. Whiteside. You used to be a newspaper man yourself." p. 866

The State Journal, May 19, 1952

2016. The United States has two and a half times as many motor vehicles as all the other countries combined. No other nation on earth relies so heavily on automotive transportation for the mass movement of people and products. p. 11
2017. A 38-year old widow, whose husband drowned when the couple tried to sail across the Atlantic three years ago, is attempting the risky crossing again---and alone this time. In her 23-foot boat she hopes to become the first woman to make the sole crossing. 2:6
2018. The Austrian leader flies to Chicago tomorrow. 2:3
2019. Not to have an ulcer now is a kind of rebuke of your way of life, an implication you have been cheating by failing to do your fair share of the general worrying. Even housewives, smarting under the criticism they have a soft touch, are developing more ulcers. 6:7
2020. How does an ulcer feel? It feels like a little demon inside you is probing your innards with a blow torch. 6:8
2021. If you are playing poker and get a hundred dollars ahead, you can grimace, clutch your belt, and mutter, "Ugh, my ulcer! Sorry boys, I'll have to go home." 6:8
2022. A woman is running for probate judge of Kalamazoo County for the first time. 4:6
2023. Today, for example, the various states have sixteen different methods of marking center lines and three different rules for making left turns. p. 11
2024. Americans are beginning to realize that installing more stop signs, re-routing trucks, reducing car speeds and other restrictive measures taken in the interest of safety provide no permanent solution to the problem. p. 11



This situation creates endless confusion in long distance travel. p. 11

A large crowd in the Music Auditorium Sunday afternoon heard the second concert on the "Music of Schubert" series, which the Michigan State College Music Department is offering. 7:3

A veteran victim of ulcers gave this description of his affliction: "Having an ulcer is as near as the average man ever comes to motherhood. You feel like you are pampering a spoiled child." 6:8

Although the steel controversy occupies the public mind, labor troubles involve such other key defense industries as the railroads, aluminum and allied minerals, petroleum, communications and electrical equipment 1:1

If you are at a party and the host serves poor liquor, you can get out of drinking it. 6:8

But if the GOP wins next November on this and related issues, and especially if it carries the house (An anti-Truman coalition already dominates the Senate), Phillip Murray may regret the day when he challenged Uncle Sam to a show-down. 6:5

Congress has repeatedly rebuffed Truman's efforts to repeal the Taft-Hartley Act. Now it seems to be in a mood to strengthen the law which he refuses to utilize. 6:5

Special treats not open to most Washington visitors are on the schedule for Ellen and Duane arranged by the State Journal, which provides the prize trip. 1:3

Again, the famed Viennese, whose work after 154 years continues to charm the majority of music listeners was given her due. 7:3

Think Before You Write

Leary, Wm. G. & Smith, James S.

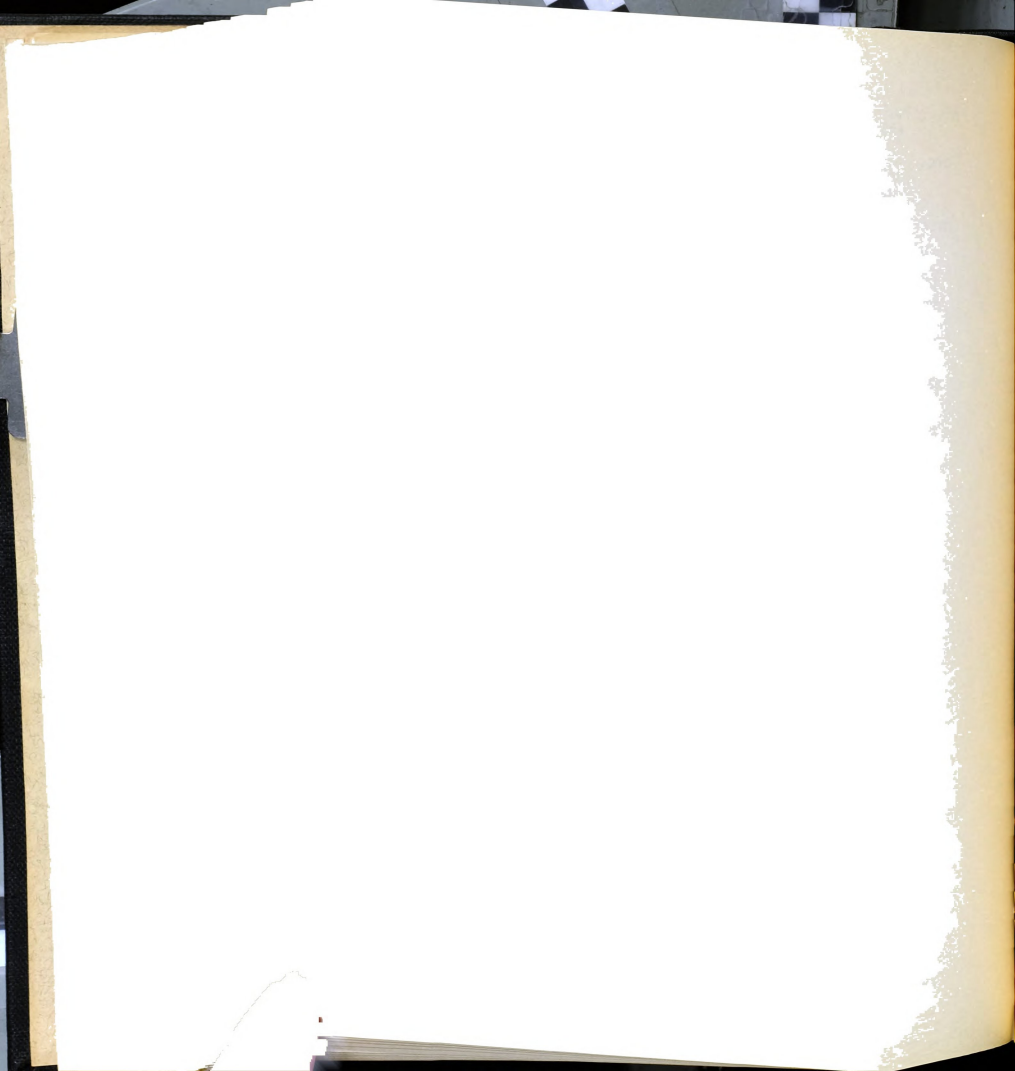
Harcourt, Brace & Co., New York, 1951

Chester Barnard, one of our associates, president of the New Jersey Bell Telephone Co., thinks scientifically about organization. p. 196

All our knowledge of history, for example, comes to us only in words. p. 295

Your news of international affairs comes to you---through one of the great wire services, such as the AP or UP. p. 406

A popular writer on "crowd Psychology", for example, begins by pointing out the cruelty, irresponsibility and lack of intelligence of a crowd. p. 311



ence people with sociological training speak of mental patients rather than of lunatics and of itinerant workers rather than tramps. p. 363

and not one of the profusion of stars in their myriad clusters looks down on scenes comparable to those which are passing beneath the rays of the sun. p. 208

but the real test of your ability to use these skills comes when you do not know which skill or combination of skills is going to be required of you by a particular news article or certain controversy going on in your school or town. p. 418

writer with something to sell, whether soap, perfume, cigarettes, automobiles or intolerance, chooses words loaded with favorable or unfavorable connotations. p. 365

in part, the use of euphemisms comes from our desire to escape the thoughts of unpleasant reality. p. 363

the dishonesty in slanting comes from the purpose of the writer or speaker to direct attention away from what exists in the world of reality and toward the desires, fears, and prejudices already in our heads. p. 365

in a democratic legislature, shared power shows itself in a strong opposition. p. 342

Often the complexity of human life makes us look enviously at the relative simplicity of lives such as dogs and cats lead. p. 290

The picture of their reduction frequently drawn by correspondents, who wisely stay as far away from them as possible, leaves a false if terrifyingly brave image in the public mind. p. 370

The use of concrete terms frequently saves time. p. 322

The National Better Business Bureau, in a service bulletin for members, states with admirable clarity the five lessons for advertisers which the decision lays down. p. 390

The cries of the hawkers of soft drinks, soap chips and laxatives pursue us into our homes. p. 294

In general, the connotations of words suggest approval, disapproval or neutrality. p. 362

---and its regimentation of opinion and scholarship no less effectively subordinates reason to the will of the dictator. p. 328

The existence of oxygen in the Martian atmosphere supplies another argument in support of the existence of vegetable life. p. 205



at least the surface of Mars shows a season change such as we might well imagine the forest clad earth could show to an outside looker. p. 205

newspapers in a real democracy meet a third test: competence of staff. p 345

sharp competition for huge audiences makes it dangerous for a journal seriously or consistently to offend any group of its readers. p. 409

strangely enough, the possession of shiny automobiles even under these conditions makes their owners feel prosperous. p. 294

-- but the researches of Sir J.H. Jeans lead to the conclusion that rotational break-up produces a double star and never a system of planets. p. 207

the trifling rise in something or other still looks almost insignificant as it is. p. 395

ignoring the error in a sampling study leads to all kinds of silly conclusions. p. 397

oting habits in America have a suspicious tendency to run in families. p. 406

one of these methods envisages mass infantry attack, which could be suicidal. p. 370

f everyone we respect avoids certain words, we avoid them in order to be respected in turn. p. 363

robably the vocabulary of most people contains some words which are thus meaningless. p. 313

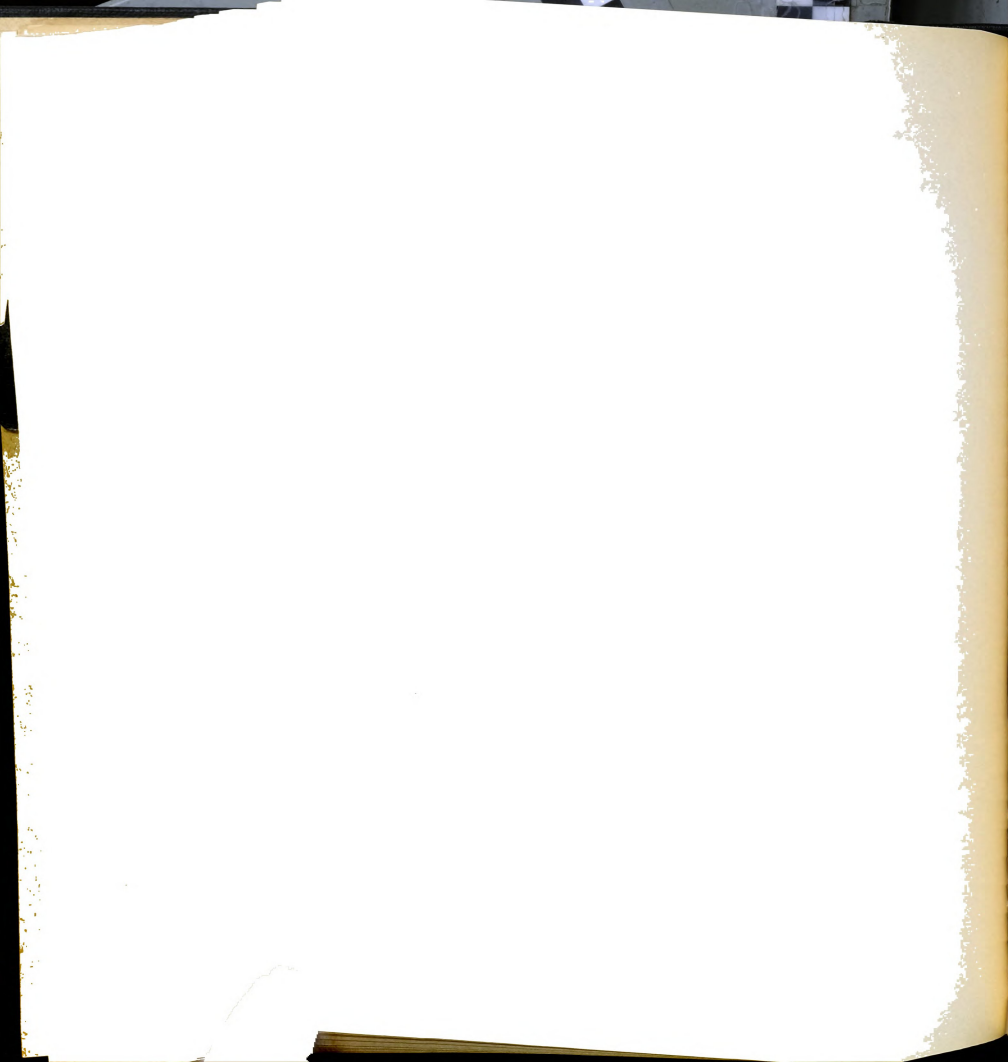
oday the world-wide network of news sources covers every major spot on the globe. p. 426

ne several reports of President Truman's commission on higher education contain recommendations which constitute a constructive contribution to American educational thought. p. 265

ny mental activity they carry out by means of such words hardly deserves the name of thinking. p. 313

anyone hearing us expects to find that by looking in the same direction, he will experience a similar event in his nervous system. p. 291

n theory Communism maintains that the dictatorship, a drastic technique essential to the revolution but ending with it, will be replaced by a democratic government of free and equal individuals... p. 328



citizens of a modern society need, therefore, more than ordinary "common sense." p. 295

he deviation from the mean marks the difference, and you can freeze or roast if you ignore it. p. 397

he resignation and the hopelessness of the Secretary of Interior, counseling us to "place our faith in God," provide no effective guide for action. p. 214

most of the propaganda in our lives relates trivially to those lives--- p. 405

..and the purposes of this book restrict the analysis of propaganda to those things which affect other people... p. 406

analysis of these cases reveals two main reasons why such a misinterpretation arose. p. 214

ard, in the first selection, reveals how language, useful as a tool for understanding and problem-solving, can become so emotionally charged that it leads to misunderstanding and the creation of new problems. p. 360

as the spring in one hemisphere advances, the darker areas, which are at first few and faint, extend and deepen in contrast. p. 205

It is my own opinion that the only hope to control atomic energy and prevent its use for destruction lies in applying the scientific spirit and scientific method to this problem. p. 195

Toward Liberal Education

Locke, Louis G., Gibson, Wm. M. & Arms, Geo. (ed.)
Rinehart & Co., New York, 1948

athleticism attracts boys and girls to college who do not want and cannot use a college education. p. 29

Why? I think it is because nobody wants to. p. 28

athletics, we are told, produces well-rounded men, filled with the spirit of fair play. p. 29

The American public believes that there is a correlation between muscle and manliness. p. 31

They come to college for fun. p. 29

But Athleticism focuses its attention on doing good for the boys who least need it. p. 30



United States News and World Report
August 1, 1952

2084. The shadows of our ancestors rest upon us. p. 95
2085. The program that the democratic party faces is toward this new day. p. 94
2086. Nations that are resisting Communism look to the President for leadership and material help. p. 49
2087. American units are serving in distant corners of the earth. p. 48
2088. Union leaders in the big labor centers are talking against Eisenhower. p. 46
2089. Loneliness consumes people. p. 96
2090. His word controls billions in loans to countries abroad. p. 48
2091. That gives 186 votes. p. 17
2092. The army has 1.5 million men... p. 48
2093. His decisions raise or lower the temperatures of the "cold war". p. 49
2094. In short, the Council tells the President there's nothing much to worry about in the business picture for the next year or two. p. 63
2095. The living watch us. p. 95
2096. His word influences policies in far away countries. p. 49
2097. The Council, in its mid-year report, thinks there is a very good chance of avoiding a serious business downturn at least through 1960. p. 64
2098. This usually takes time, several changes of mind. p. 54
2099. It does not accept the theory of inevitable war. p. 98
2100. The survey points out that it is still too early to conclude that people generally are getting accustomed to the present price level. p. 63
- We will halt the "creeping socialism" that is taking your freedom." p. 18
- ...and certainly that objective cannot be achieved where government is steadily enlarging its business ownership and management commitments. p. 23



the Governor has a Dalmatian dog, Artie, short for King Arthur, that accompanies him on his walks. p. 57

Party officials believe this time the Republican opposition will have much more appeal to Southerners than in 1948. p. 16

Republicans believe they have a simple and effective formula. p. 17

And these items together and you have a sign that the U.S. wants Europe to earn its dollars in the U.S. market, rely less on getting gift dollars. p. 81

That question does not mean much to me apart from specific issues. p. 18

That does concern me, in common with thinking partisans of both parties, is not just winning this election, but how it is won. p. 92

His platform commits him to push the "Fair Deal"... p. 12

Today the number exceeds 2.5 million. p. 48

That favors the Republicans. p. 46

Democrats figure they have an equally simple formula. p. 17

That interests European business men and officials about President Truman's refusal to raise the tariff on garlic, admittedly a minor item, is this: p. 81

The nation needs a clean sweep in Washington. p. 18

The Democratic Party recognizes that man is a threefold creature. p. 96

Census Bureau, looking ahead, sees an 18 per cent drop in the number of children under 5 by 1960. p. 61

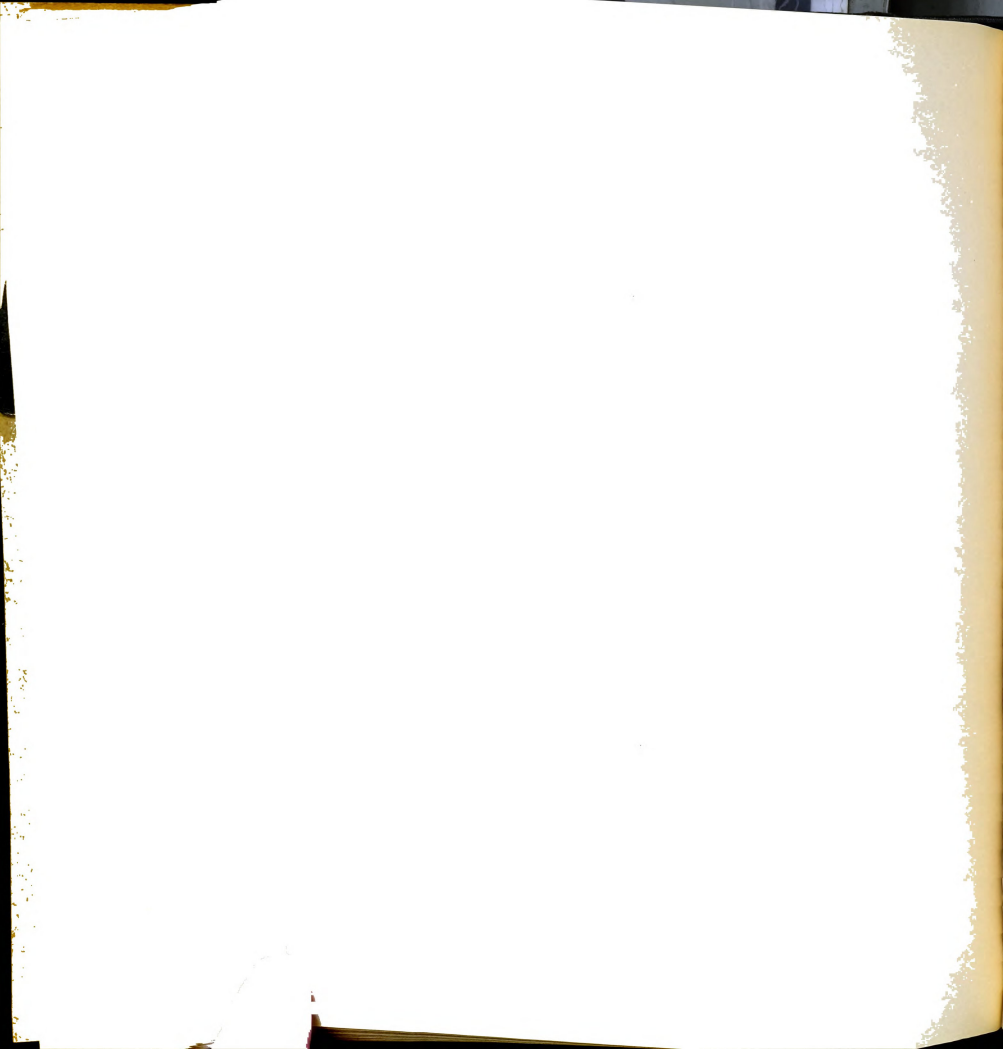
I would not seek your nomination for the Presidency because the burdens of that office stagger the imagination. p. 91

The Wayward Bus, Steinbeck, John

He said, "I'm not complaining about the season, but---" p. 18

"I'm not criticizing you," Ernest said. "I think you've got a very sound idea there. I'm for it, only----" p. 157

And now here it came, the voice as shrill as a whetstone. "There's a state law about talking to passengers. You watch the road." The old woman addressed the whole bus. "This driver's putting our lives in danger. I'm going to ask to get off if he can't keep his attention on driving." p. 117



I wish we'd get a bridge so when a big rain came I could sleep at night. I just lay in bed and hear the rain on the roof, but I'm listening for the bridge to go out." p. 183

Well," she consoled herself, "I can turn right around and go out. Nobody's stopping me. Nobody's pushing me in, but I know I must." p. 261

I see your point," Ernest said. "I was four years in the Army."

Oh!" said Mr. Pritchard. "Oh, yes---you're not wearing your discharge button I see!" p. 153

I wish they'd come out of there," she said. "I'd like to use my bathroom."

They're stirring around," said Juan. "They'll be out in a little." p. 36

Hey, there's a fly in this cake!"

Alice stiffened. "You had a fly in your soup yesterday. I think you carry flies in your pocket."

No, look here. He's still kicking." p. 30

Take nearly every year in California it rains this season." p. 18

I think you've got a very sound idea there." p. 157

I guess you're making a little something out of it yourself," said Mr. Pritchard. p. 46

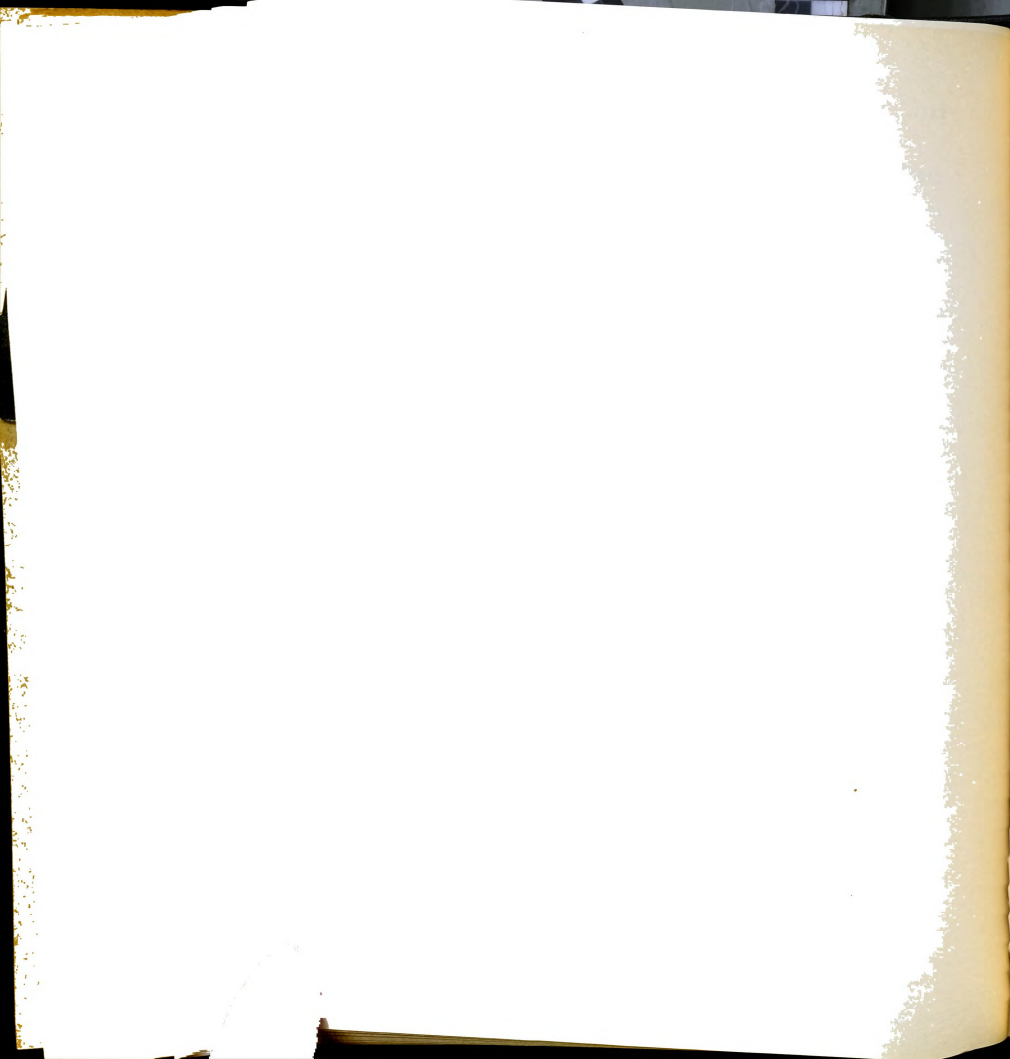
When people are traveling they don't like anything to interrupt them---" p. 23

Ernest said, "I didn't understand at first. You've already been in pictures. Are you a star already?"

"Yes," said Norma. "But you wouldn't know me by the name I'm using here. I have another name I use in Hollywood." p. 57

Mr. Pritchard interrupted him. "The returning soldiers," he said, "They're the ones I'm worrying about. They don't want to settle down and go to work." p. 277

"By God, if it rains," he said, "that would be one too many." p. 18



World Enough and Time, Warren, Robert Penn,
Signet Book, The New American Library of World
Literature, Inc., New York, 1952

Jeremiah could not recognize their greatness, even if they
had it, because he belonged to their world, and if we recogn-
ize it, we can do so only because we do not belong to their
world. p. 42

When he stands he is not much taller than common," says the
the letter of a spectator who sat in the courtroom at Frank-
furt, Kentucky, in June 1826. p. 10

You know how when the lost fawn bleats in the glade, be the doe
trayed or dead, the great bear hears and comes forth. p. 36

and by the same token, we may find the pathos only in those
moments when the big speeches are fluffed or the gestures for-
gotten, when the actor improvises like a lout, when he suffers
nakedly from the giggles and the inimical eyes, or flees from
the stage. p. 11

When the jury was hung, and the hour grown late when men go
home to bed, a juror proposed that they should settle the
question by the game of Old Sledge, for, as he said, 'we
don't know a goldurned thing about this fellow nohow!' p. 36

It was past the gabbling season for wild turkey when the
mark slips on the elm, and dogwood time when the she-bear
rings out her young, and it was the hour for the hunter
to unhouse himself and look to the powder in his horn. p. 21

"All right," the Colonel said, "And you can return it to me
when you come to work at the law." p. 46

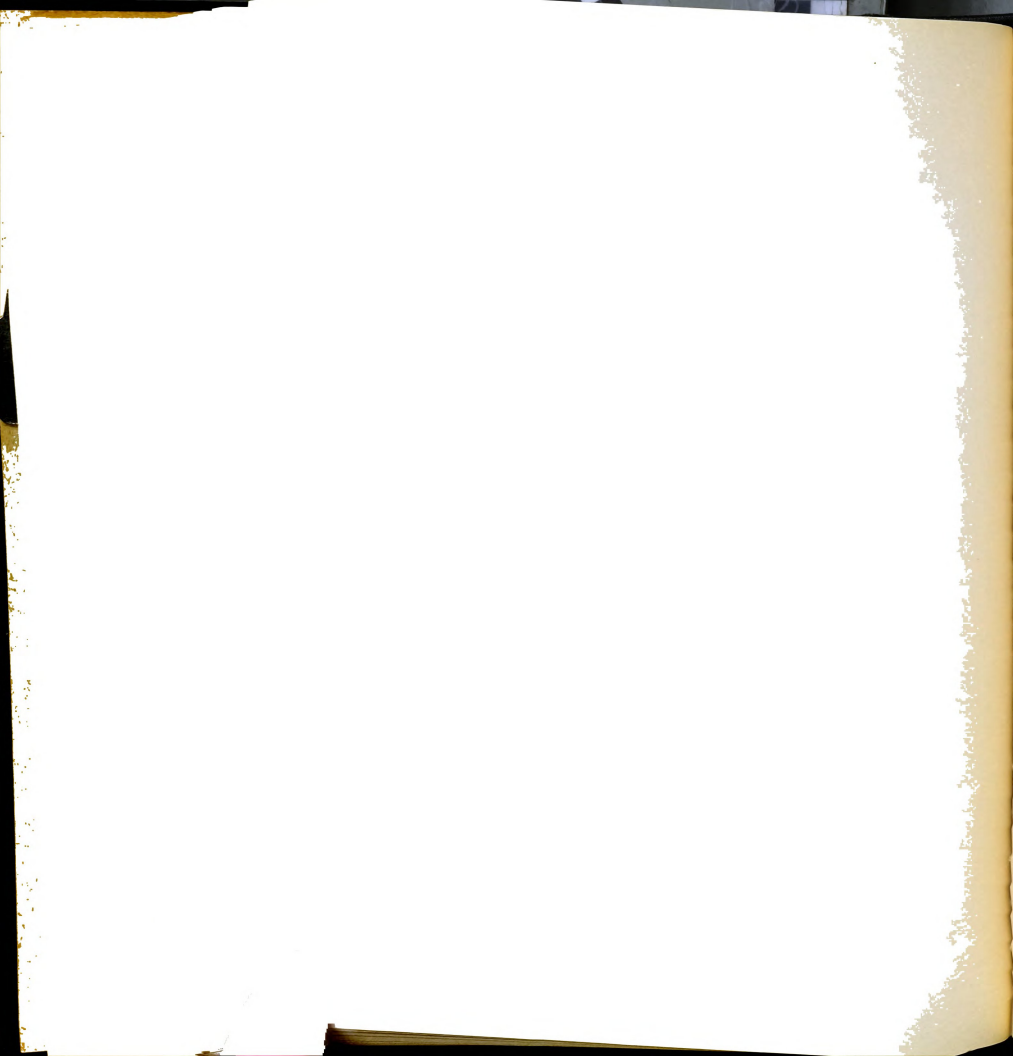
and it may be that a man cannot live unless he prepares a
drama, at least cannot live as a human being against the
luck of the world. p. 11

Give a man time to breathe and he'll pay out if God lets him.
. 53

If everybody keeps pushing for payment and crying for specie,
we will pull down this state on our heads and the whole
country with it, and where would you be then, specie or no
specie?" p. 53

Whatever a man does is well done if he puts a strong hand
to it, and when a man is young he should try many ways and
conditions of life to enlarge his experience and ripen his
mind." p. 47

It is strange to see that for tracts of time he does not seem
to attend to what goes on about him while men dispute his
life. p. 10



Appendix II

The items in this appendix are citations showing an expanded form, or, occasionally, a construction akin to an expanded form. The citations are taken from the literature of the three historical periods of the language. They are numbered consecutively and follow the sources from which they come. The sources are arranged chronologically.

BEOWULF, ed. Fr. Klaeber, (D.C. Heath & Co., 1941).

2145. (ac se) āeglāeca ēhtende waes, (l. 159)
2146. gyf þonne Frysna hwylc frecnan sprāece
þaes mor ƿ orhetes myndgiend wære, (ll. 1104-05)
2147. Swa se secg hwata secggende waes
lā ƿ ra spella; (ll. 3028-29)

THE PARKER CHRONICLE, ed. A.H. Smith, (Methuen & Co., 1951).

2148. þy ilcan 3 eare ferde to Rome mid micelre weorþnesse
þær was xii monaþ wuniende (p. 22)
2149. hie late on 3 eare to þam 3 ecirdon, þæt hie
wiþ þone here winnende waerun, (p. 25)

"ACCOUNT OF THE POET CAEDMONT", Bright's Anglo-Saxon Reader, ed. James R. Hulbert, revised edition (Henry Holt & Co., 1948).

2150. . . . ond ut waes gongende to nēata scipene, (p. 9)
2151. Eft he cwaeð sē ƿe wið hine sprecende waes: (p. 9)
2152. . . . nū þu þus rotlice ond þus glædlice tō ūs
sprecende eart. (p. 12)

SPECIMENS OF EARLY ENGLISH, PART II, FROM ROBERT OF
GLOUCESTER TO GOWER, A.D. 1298--A.D. 1393, ed.
R. Morris and W.W. Skeat, 4th ed. (Clarendon Press, 1898).

Northumbrian Psalter

2153. He . . .
Ne his siluer til okir es giuand; (p. 24)
2154. Koles þat were dounfalland
Kindled ere of him glouand. (p. 25)
2155. . . . forhiler es he
Of al þat in him hopand be. (p. 27)
2156. Rewed es Lauerd, þare he wones,
Of þa þat him dredand be; (p. 30)
2157. þare sal sparwes be nestland. (p. 32)

Robert Mannyng, Handling Synne

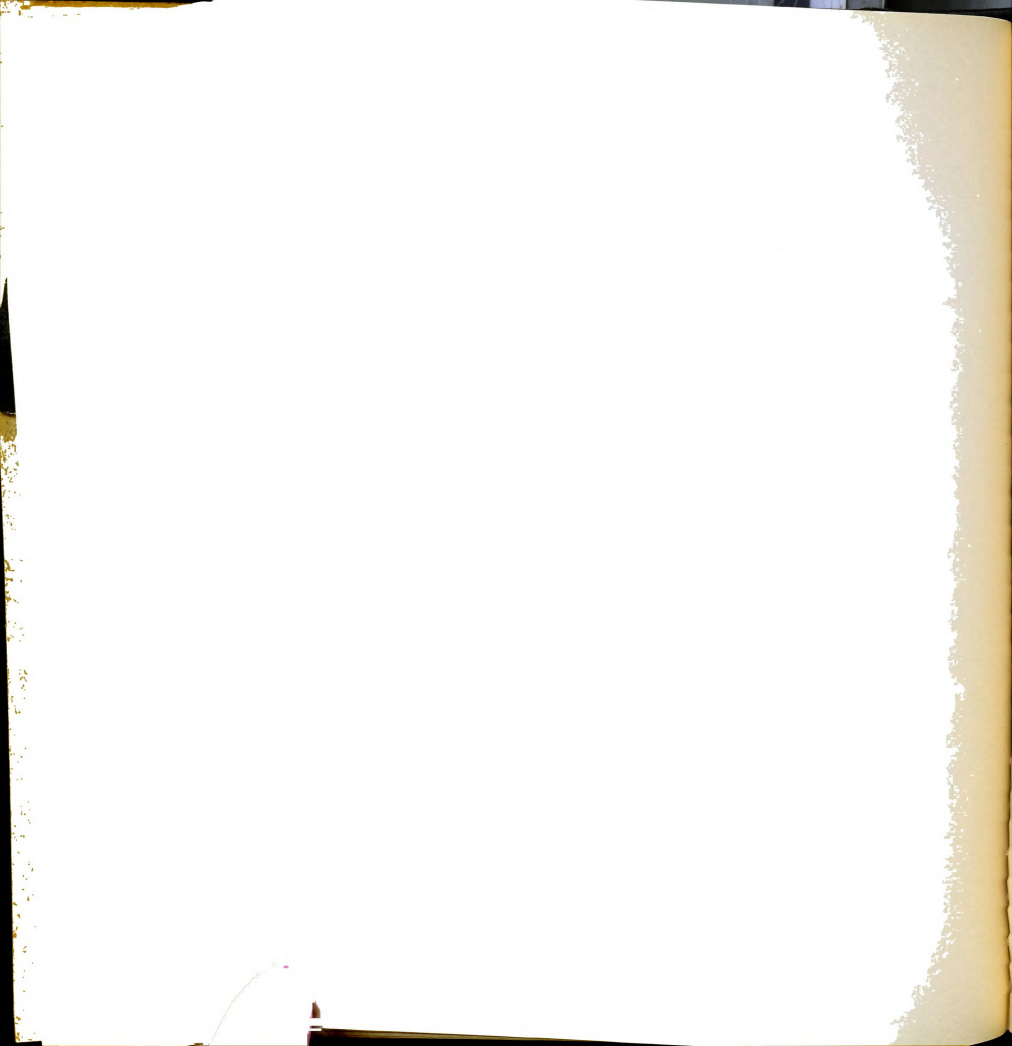
2158. Wulde þey bydde hym sytte or stande,
Euer he wulde be bowande; (p. 58)

Curser Mundi, Cotton Ms. Vespasian A.iii.

2159. þai went, and tua yeir war wakand. (p. 71)
2160. þat bi-yond þam ar wonnand nan. (p. 70)
2161. þis king we sal be offrاند nu,
And honour him wit trutthes tru;
Al þe kinges o þis world
For him sal be quakand and ferd. (p. 71)
2162. þe crop was euening to þe rote. (p. 79)

A Metrical Homily, from a MS. in the Library of the
Royal College of Physicians at Edinburgh.

2163. The ferthe day, freis water and se
Sal bren als fir and glouand be. (p. 84)
2164. And forthi that Crist tholess this,
Ite sembeles that he slepand is; (p. 91)



Dan Michel, Ayenbite of Inwyt

2165. . . . þe uader of þe house wyste huyche time þe þyef
were comynde. . . (p. 98)
2166. Ich am drede and beþenchinge of dyaþe. and dyaþ [is]
comy [n] de. . . (p. 99)
2167. . . . alneway ich am wondrinde. (p. 103)

Richard Rolle de Hampole, The Pricke of Conscience

2168. Fyngers and taes, fote & hande,
And alle his touches er tremblande. (p. 113)
2169. And an alde man to dede drawand
May noght wake, bot es ay slepan; (p. 115)
2170. For he lykend mans lyf til a tre
þat war growand, if it swa mught be, (p. 121)
2171. Of þe filth of syn, þat swa filand es, (p. 124)

Lawrence Minot, "How Edward at Hogges"

2172. And folk fer ferd war fast fleand; (p. 137)

"The Deluge", Cotton MS. Nere A.x.

2173. þenne in worlde wat3 a wy3 e wonyande on lyue, (p. 153)

John Barbour, The Bruce, Book vii

2174. And said, 'he is gretly to priss,
For I knaw nane that liffand is
That at myscheif can help hym swa: (p. 207)

The Gospel of St. Mark, Wycliffite Version

2175. Jhon was in desert baptisynge, and prechinge the bapty^m
of penaunce, in-to remiscioun of synnes. (p. 216)
2176. And he was prechynge in the synagogis. . . (p. 217-218)



2177. And disciplis of Joon and the Pharisees weren fastynge;
(p. 219)
2178. . . .and ther was a man hauynge a drye hond. (p. 220)
2179. Forsothe there was there aboute the hill a flock of
hoggis lesewyng in feeldis. (p. 225)

Geoffrey Chaucer, THE TALE OF MELIBEE, ed. F.N.
Robinson (Houghton Mifflin Co., 1933).

2180. Whan the condicion of man is pleasant and lykynge to
God ...

A BOOK OF ENGLISH LITERATURE, ed. Franklin Bliss Snyder
and Robert Grant Martin (Macmillan Co., 1935).

Sir Thomas Mallory, LeMorte Darthur, Book XXI

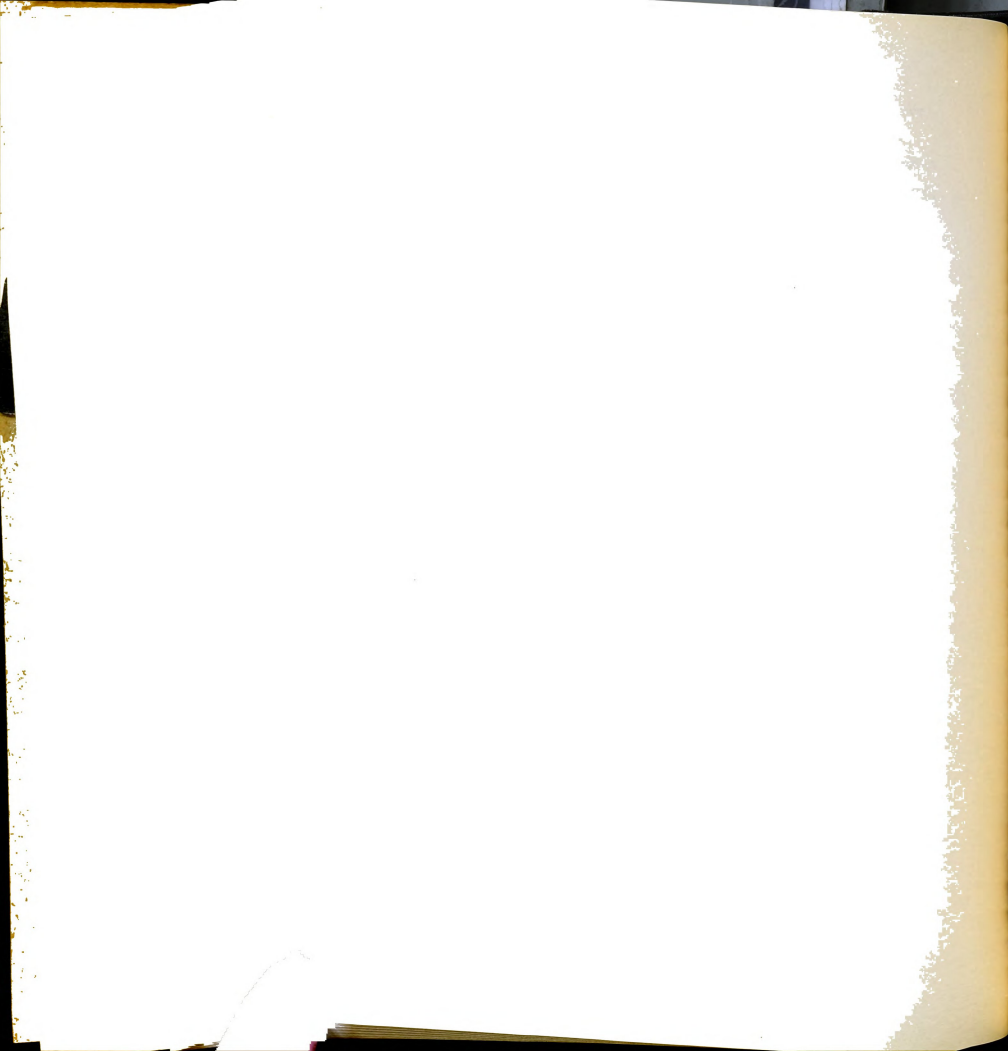
2181. . . .ever he was lying groveling on the tomb of
King Arthur and Queen Guenever. (Chapter XII)
2182. Also when I remember me how by my default, mine orgulity
and my pride, that they were both laid full low, that
were peerless that ever was living of Christian people...
(Chapter XI)
2183. Welcome, my sister's son; I wend thou hadst been dead;
and now I see thee on live, much am I beholding unto
almighty Jesu. (Chapter III)

Sir Philip Sidney, An Apologie for Poetry

2184. . . . sith as I sayd before, there is no man living, but
by the force trueth hath in nature, no sooner seeth these
men play their parts, but wisheth them in pistrinum.
2185. Now therein of all Sciences, (I speak still of humane, and
according to the humane conceits) is our Poet Monarch.

Frances Bacon Essays

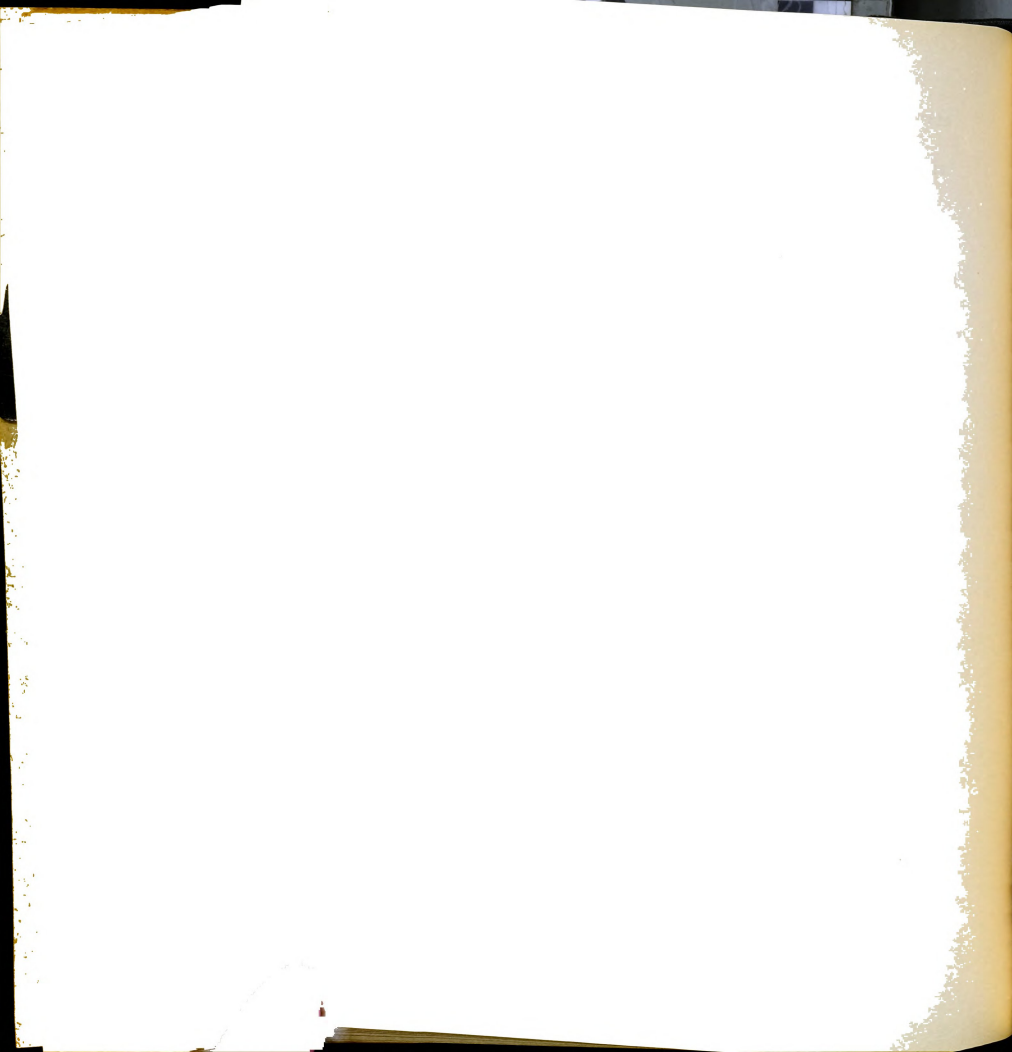
2186. We see in needleworks and embroideries, it is more
pleasing to have a lively work upon a sad and solemn
ground, . . . (No. 5)



2187. The stage is more beholding to love, than the life of man. (No. 10)
2188. Be not too sensible or too remembering of thy place in conversation and private answers to suiters: (No. 11)
2189. But all these things are graceful in a friend's mouth which are blushing in a man's own. (No. 27)
2190. A man had need, if he be plentiful in some kind of expense, to be saving again in some other. As if he be plentiful in diet, to be saving in apparel; if he be plentiful in the hall, to be saving in the stable... (No. 28)

Izaak Walton, The Compleat Angler, "The Third Day"

2191. Look yonder! 'on my word, yonder, they both be a-milking again.
2192. Come, Sir, with all my heart, for I begin to be hungry, and long to be at it, and indeed to rest myself too. . .
2193. We anglers are all beholden to the good man that made this song. . .
2194. . . .come, hang him upon that willow twig, and let's be going.
2195. I have been a-fishing; and am going to Bleak Hall to my bed. . .
2196. Look! under that broad beech-tree I sat down, when I was last this way a-fishing. . .
2197. Let's be going, good master, for I am hungry again with fishing.
2198. . . . she told me as I was going out the door, that my brother Peter. . .had sent word he would lodge there to-night. . .
2199. . . . they took great pleasure to see their Mulletts change to several colours when they were dying.
2200. Let's be going, with all my heart.
2201. . . .and all the time he is a-broiling, baste him with the best sweet butter, and good store of salt mixed with it.



John Bunyan, Grace Abounding to the Chief of Sinners
(approximately the first third)

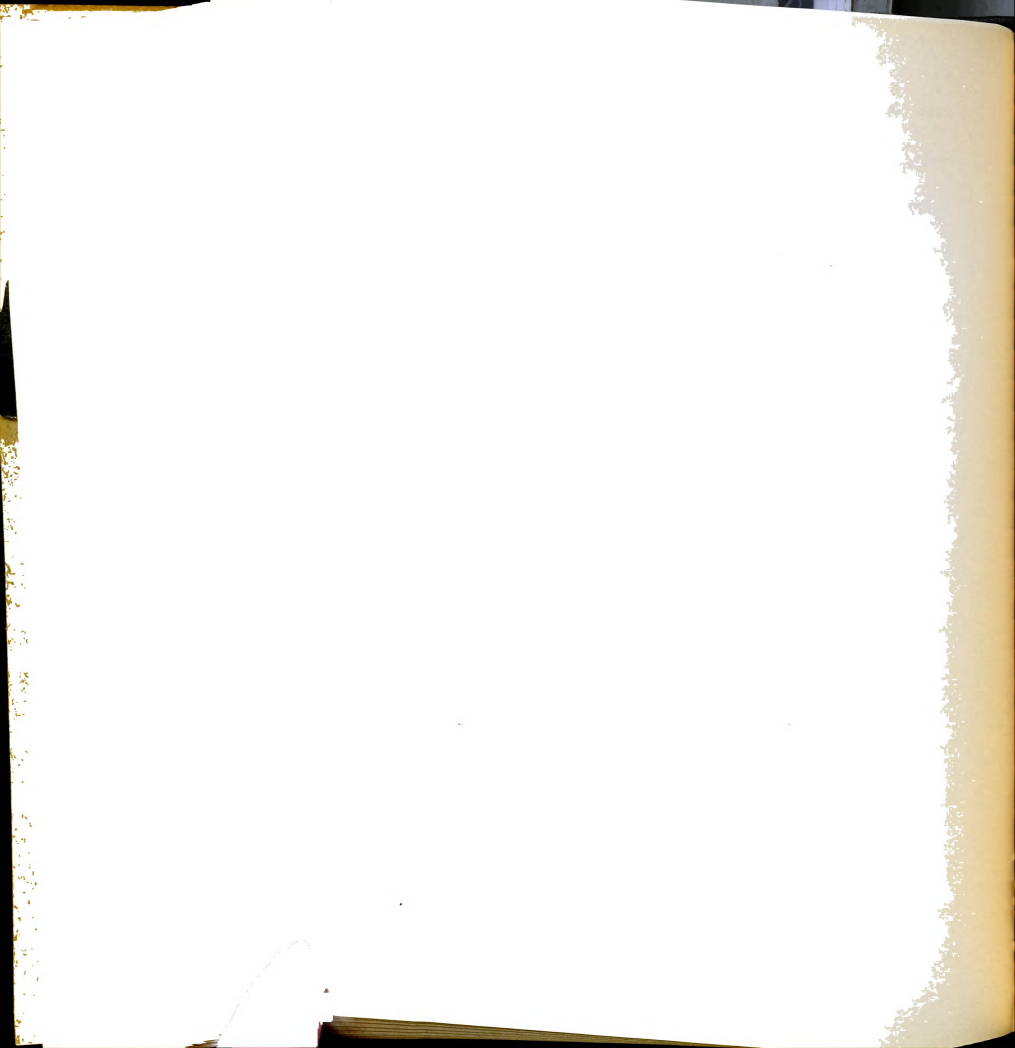
2202. . . . and if it was going off without it (for the sense of sin would be sometimes as if it would die, and go away),. . . .
2203. My soul is dying, my soul is damning.
2204. Now, I remember that one day, as I was walking into the country. . . .
2205. . . . as I was new quite giving up the ghost of all my hopes of ever attaining life, that sentence fell with weight upon my spirit.
2206. . . . and was often, when I have been walking, ready to sink where I went, with faintness in my mind.
2207. I saw. . . while I was shivering and shrinking in the cold, afflicted with frost snow and dark clouds.
2208. These things have often made me think of the child. . . who, while he was yet a coming to him, was thrown down by the devil. . . .
2209. So as I was a going home, these words came again into my thoughts. . . .
2210. In these two books . . . wherein I also found some things that were pleasing to me. . . .
2211. . . . I came where there were three or four poor women sitting at the door in the sun, talking about the things of God. . . .
2212. . . .and being now willing to hear what they said, for I was now a brisk talker also myself in the matters of religion.
2213. . . .he was willing to be persuaded of me,
2214. . . .I better considering the matter, was willing to put myself upon the trial,
2215. And truly, one time I was going to say so indeed. . . .
2216. Therefore I should often make it my business to be going again into the company of these poor people. . . .
2217. But one day as I was standing at a neighbor's shop window . . . there sat within the woman of the house, and heard me. . . .



2218. And while I was thinking of it and fearing lest it should be so, I felt my heart sink in despair. . .
2219. She also would often be telling me of what a godly man her father was. . .
2220. But poor wretch I was, I was all this while ignorant of Jesus Christ, and going about to establish my own righteousness. . .
2221. Wherefore while I was thus considering, and being put to the plunge about it . . .the tempter came in with his delusion. . .

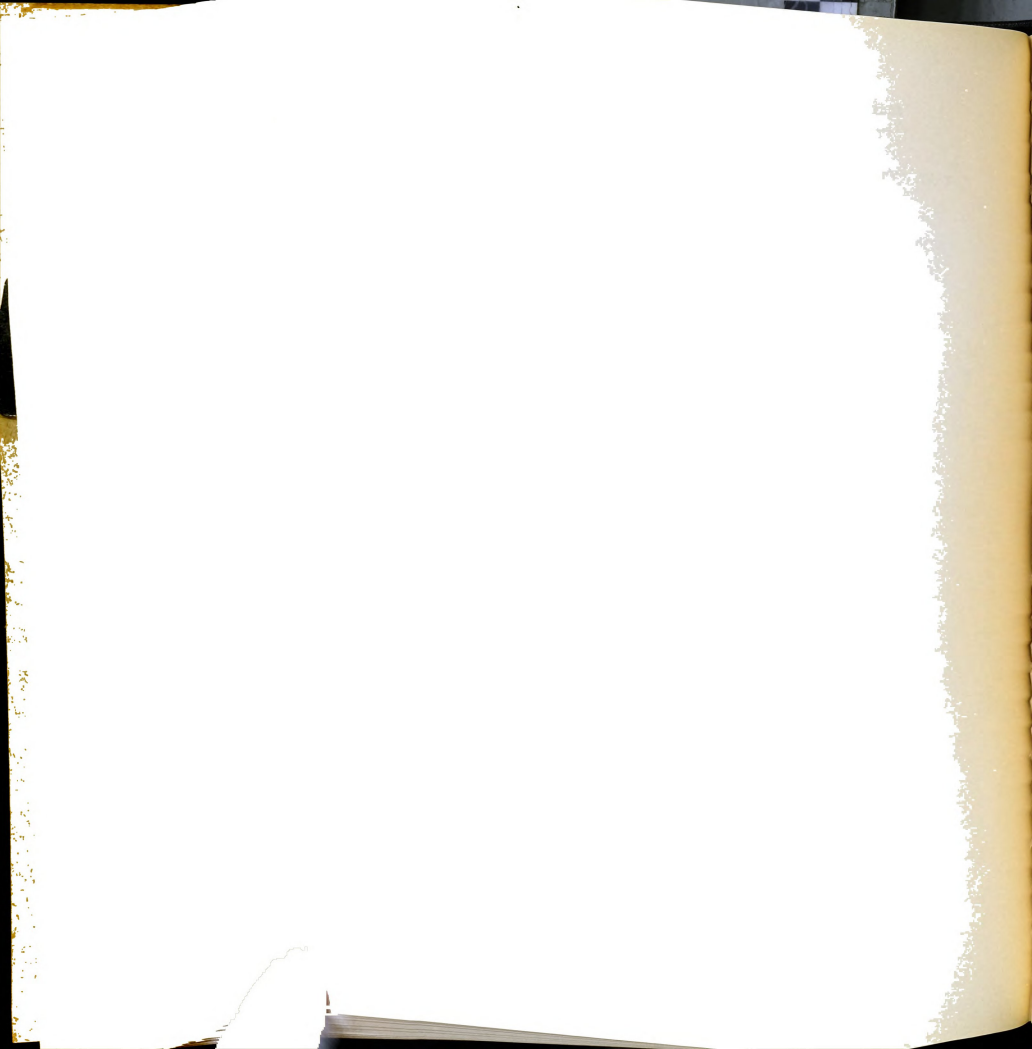
John Dryden, Preface to the Fables

2222. A lady of my acquaintance . . .is at this time trans-
lating Chaucer into modern French.
2223. . . .he would not destroy what he was building.
2224. . . .but, instead of this, Ovid is tickling you to laugh.
2225. . . .where any of those are wanting or imperfect, so much wants or is imperfect in the imitation of human life. . .
2226. Both of them were knowing in astronomy. . .
2227. . . .their general characters are still remaining in mankind. . .
2228. The story is more pleasing than either of them, the manners as perfect, the diction as poetical. . .
2229. From all I have said, I will only draw this inference that the action of Homer. . .is of consequence more pleasing to the reader.
2230. . . .there is such a variety of game springing up before me, that I am distracted in my choice and know not which to follow.
2231. . . .but the reformation of their prose was wholly owing to Boccaccio himself. . .
2232. My Lord dissuaded me from this attempt (for I was thinking of it some years before his death). . .

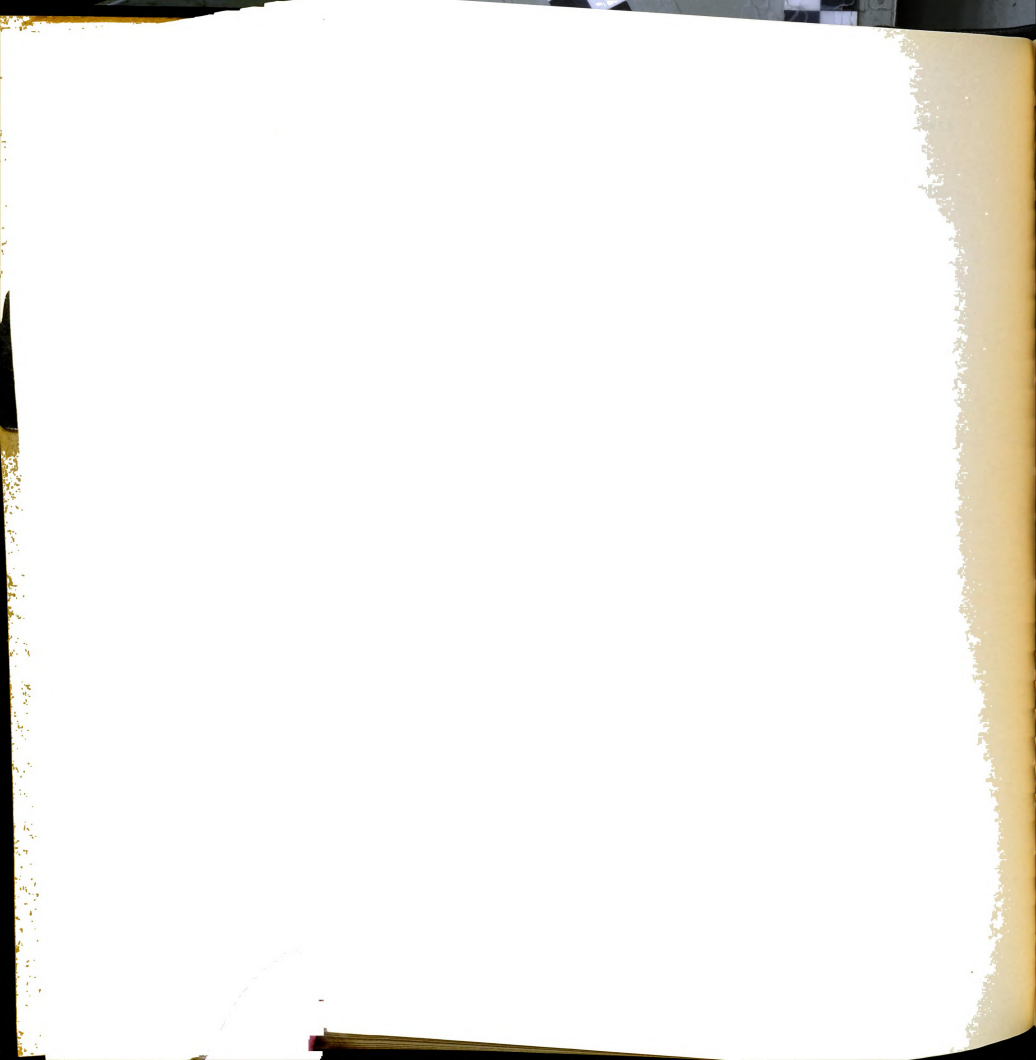


Addison and Steele, The Spectator, No's. 1, 2, 13, 26, 112, 113, 122, 159, 275, 281, 454.

2233. Whether this might proceed from a law-suit which was then depending in the family, or my father's being a justice of the peace, I cannot determine. (No. 1)
2234. He is studying the passions themselves, when he should be inquiring into the debates among men which arise from them. (No. 2)
2235. . . .which he always treats with much authority, as one who has no interest in this world, as one who is hastening to the object of all his wishes. . . (No. 2)
2236. . . .I must acquaint the Reader, that . . .as I was thinking on something else, I accidentally justled. . . (No. 13)
2237. Besides this is what is practiced every day in Westminster Hall, where nothing is more usual than to see a couple of lawyers, who have been tearing each other to pieces in the court, embracing one another as soon as they are out of it. (No. 13)
2238. "The parson is always preaching at the squire. . ." (No. 112)
2239. Sometimes he will be lengthening out a verse in the singing Psalms, half a minute after the rest of the congregation have done with it. . . (No. 112)
2240. Sometimes. . .he pronounces "Amen" three or four times to the same prayer; and sometimes stands up when everybody else is upon their knees, to count the congregation, or see if any of his tenants are missing. (No. 112)
2241. This John Mathews, it seems, is remarkable for being an idle fellow, and at that time was kicking his heels for his diversion. (No. 112)
2242. "But I find I grow irregular when I am talking of her. . . (No. 113)
2243. As I was going to tell you, when I came to her house I was admitted to her presence with great civility. . . (No. 113)
2244. "I suppose he is going upon the old business of the willow tree." (No. 122)
2245. As Sir Roger was giving me this account of Tom Touchy, Will Wimble and his two companions stopped short till we came up to them. (No. 122)



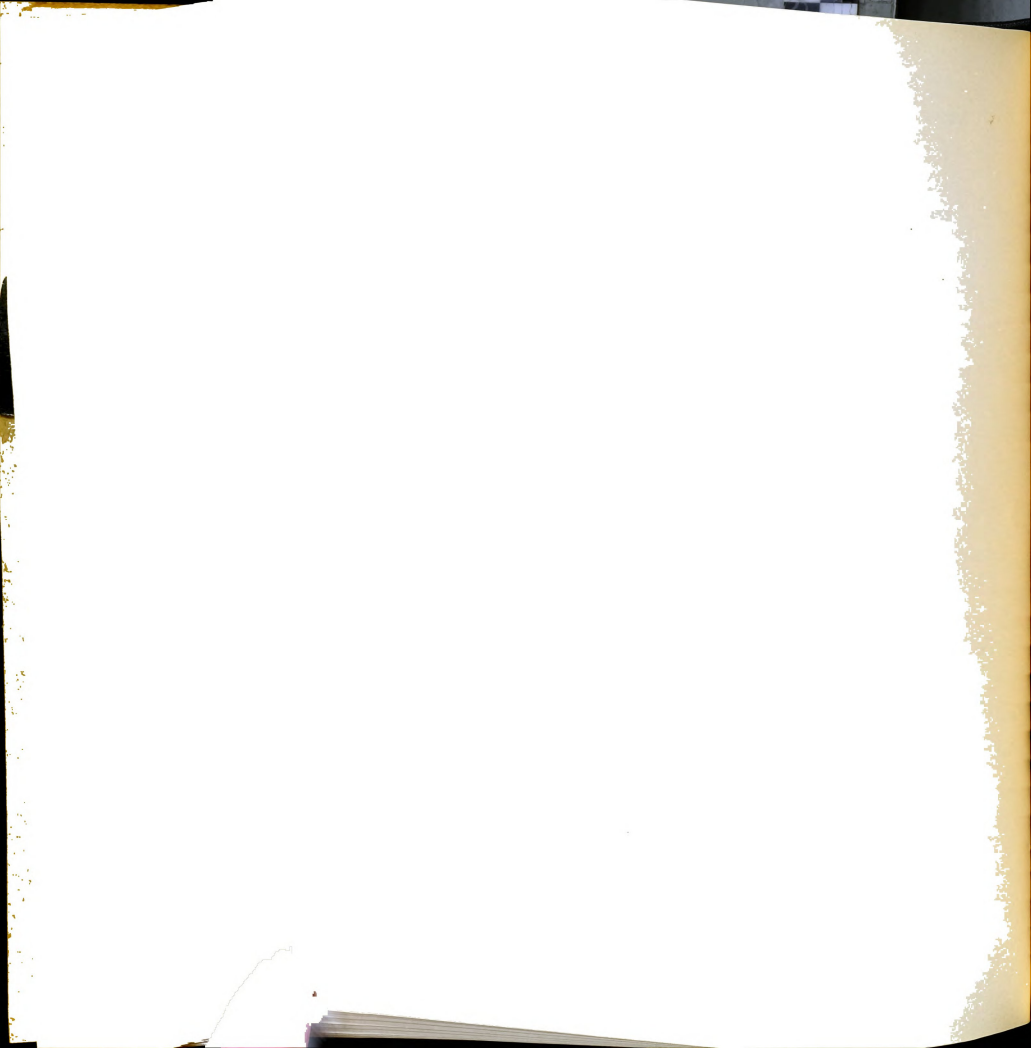
2246. Will it seems had been giving his fellow-traveler an account of his angling one day in such a hole. . . (No. 122)
2247. I was listening to the proceedings of the court with much attention. . . (No. 122)
2248. . . .I observed to my great surprise, in the midst of a trial, that my friend Sir Roger was getting up to speak. (No. 122)
2249. As I was here airing myself on the tops of the mountains, I fell into a profound contemplation on the vanity of human life. . . (No. 159)
2250. Whilst I was thus musing, I cast my eyes towards the summit of a rock that was not far from me. . . (No. 159)
2251. As I was counting the arches, the Genius told me that this bridge consisted at first of a thousand arches. . . (No. 159)
2252. . . . 'what mean,' said I, 'those great flights of birds that are perpetually hovering about the bridge, and settling upon it from time to time? (No. 159)
2253. Some were looking up towards the heavens in a thoughtful posture, and in the midst of speculation stumbled and fell out of sight. (No. 159)
2254. . . .I then turned again to the vision which I had been so long contemplating. . . (No. 159)
2255. He was cut off in the flower of his age by the blow of a paring-shovel, having been surprised by an eminent citizen, as he was tendering some civilities to his wife. (No. 275)
2256. As we were admiring this strange phenomenon, and standing round the heart in a circle, it gave a most prodigious sigh, or rather crack, and dispersed all at once in smoke and vapor. (No. 281)
2257. To be ever unconcerned, and ever looking on new objects with an endless curiosity, is a delight known only to those who are turned for speculation. . . (No. 454)
2258. We arrived at Strand Bridge at six of the clock, and were unloading, when the hackney-coachman of the foregoing night took their leave of each other at the Dark House, to go to bed before the day was spent. (No. 454)



2259. I could not believe any place more entertaining than Convent Garden, where I strolled from one fruit-shop to another, with crowds of agreeable young women around me, who were purchasing fruit for their respective families. (No. 454)
2260. They can carry on that language to give intelligence where they are driving. (No. 454)
2261. . . . and the lady's driver gave the hint that he was going through Long Acre toward St. James's. . . (No. 454)
2262. . . .for, though they never buy, they are ever talking of new silks, laces, and ribbons. . . (No. 454)
2263. . . .for at the corner of Warwick Street, as I was listening to a new ballad, a ragged rascal, a beggar who knew me, came up to me. . . (No. 454)
2264. . . .for he is never overbearing, though accustomed to command men in the utmost degree below him. . . (No. 2)

Jonathon Swift, Gulliver's Travels, Book I

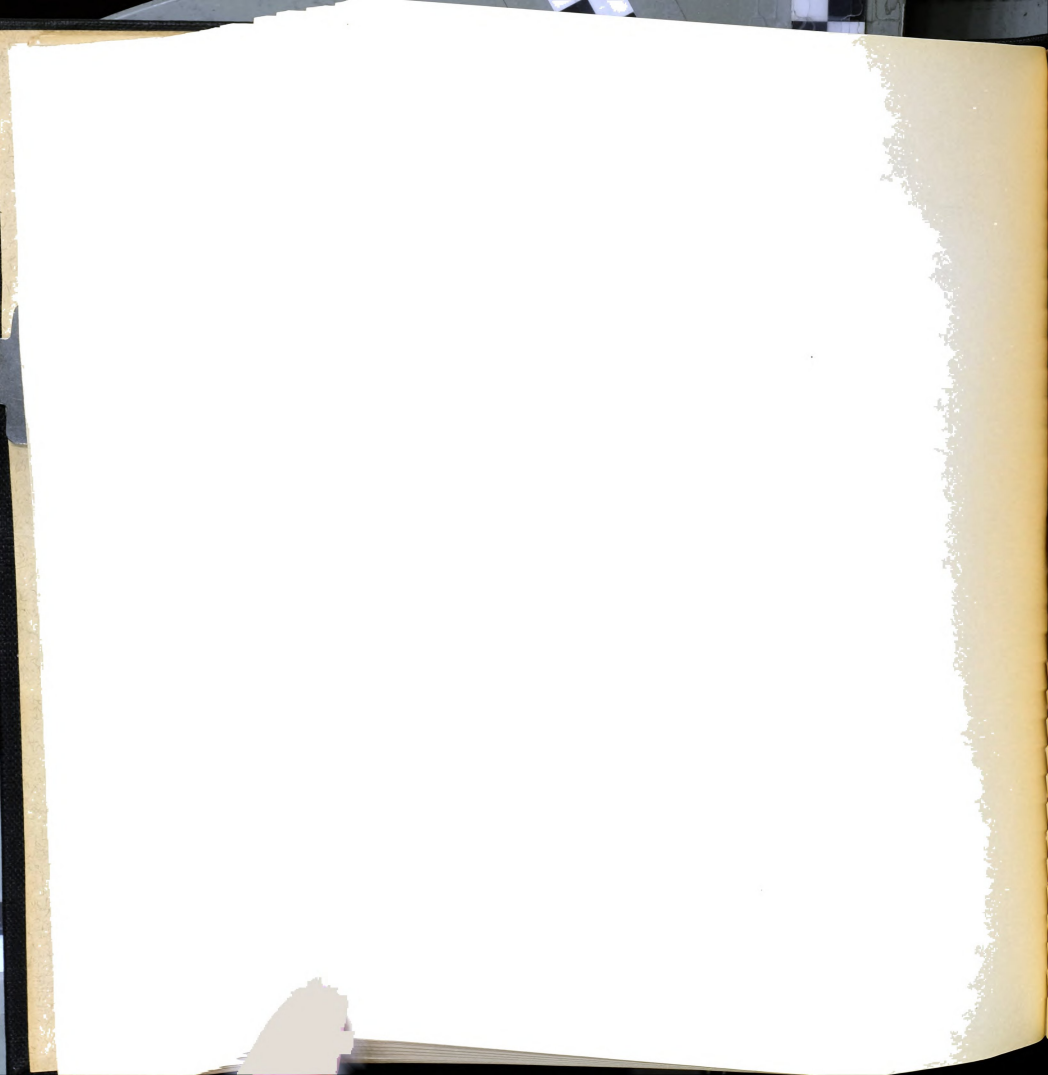
2265. I confess I was often tempted while they were passing backwards and forwards on my body, to seize forty or fifty of the first that came in my reach and dash them against the ground. (Bk. I, Ch. I)
2266. . . .I accepted an advantageous offer from Captain William Pritchard, master of the Antelope, who was making a voyage to the South-Sea. (Bk. I, Ch. I)
2267. About two or three days before I was set at liberty, as I was entertaining the court with these kind of feats, there arrived an express to inform his Majesty. . . (Bk. I, Ch. 3)
2268. . . .that before I came to the place where I went to sleep, my hat, which I had fastened with a string to my head while I was rowing, and had stuck on all the time I was swimming, fell off after I came to land. . . (Bk. I, Ch. 3)
2269. . . .That the said Man-Mountain shall, at his time of leisure, be aiding and assisting our workmen, in helping to raise certain great stones, towards covering the wall of the principal park, and our royal buildings. (Bk. I, Ch. 3)
2270. Which two mighty powers have, as I was going to tell you, been engaged in a most obstinate war for six and thirty moons past. (Bk. I, Ch. 4)



2271. However, they have now equipped a numerous fleet, and are just preparing to make a descent upon us. . . (Bk. I, Ch. 4)
2272. . . .where her Imperial Majesty's apartment was on fire, by the carelessness of a maid of honor, who fell asleep while she was reading a romance. (Bk. I, Ch. 5)
2273. I remember when I was once interceding with the Emperor for a criminal who had wronged his master of a great sum of money. . . (Bk. I, Ch. 6)
2275. . . .it may be proper to inform the reader of a private intrigue which had been for two months forming against me. (Bk. I, Ch. 7)
2276. When I was just preparing to pay my attendance on the Emperor of Blefuscu. . . (Bk. I, Ch. 7)
2277. This preface made me so impatient, being conscious of my own merits and innocence, that I was going to interrupt. . . (Bk. I, Ch. 7)
2278. That the said Quinbus Flestrin, contrary to the duty of a faithful subject, is now preparing to make a voyage to the court and empire of Blefuscu. . . (Bk. I, Ch. 7)
2279. I had an answer in about an hour, that his Majesty, attended by the Royal Family, and great officers of the court, was coming out to receive me. (Bk. I, Ch. 7)
2280. . . .but he thought I was raving, and that the dangers I underwent had disturbed my head. . . (Bk. I, Ch. 8)
2281. The Emperor was already descended from the tower, and advancing on horseback towards me. . . (Bk. I, Ch. 2)
2282. These circumstances, added to the refreshment I had received by their victuals and drink, which were very nourishing, disposed me to sleep. (Bk. I, Ch. 1)
2283. All this I was told, for, while the operation was performing, I lay in a profound sleep. . . (Bk. I, Ch. 1)

Samuel Johnson, "Addison" in Lives of the English Poets

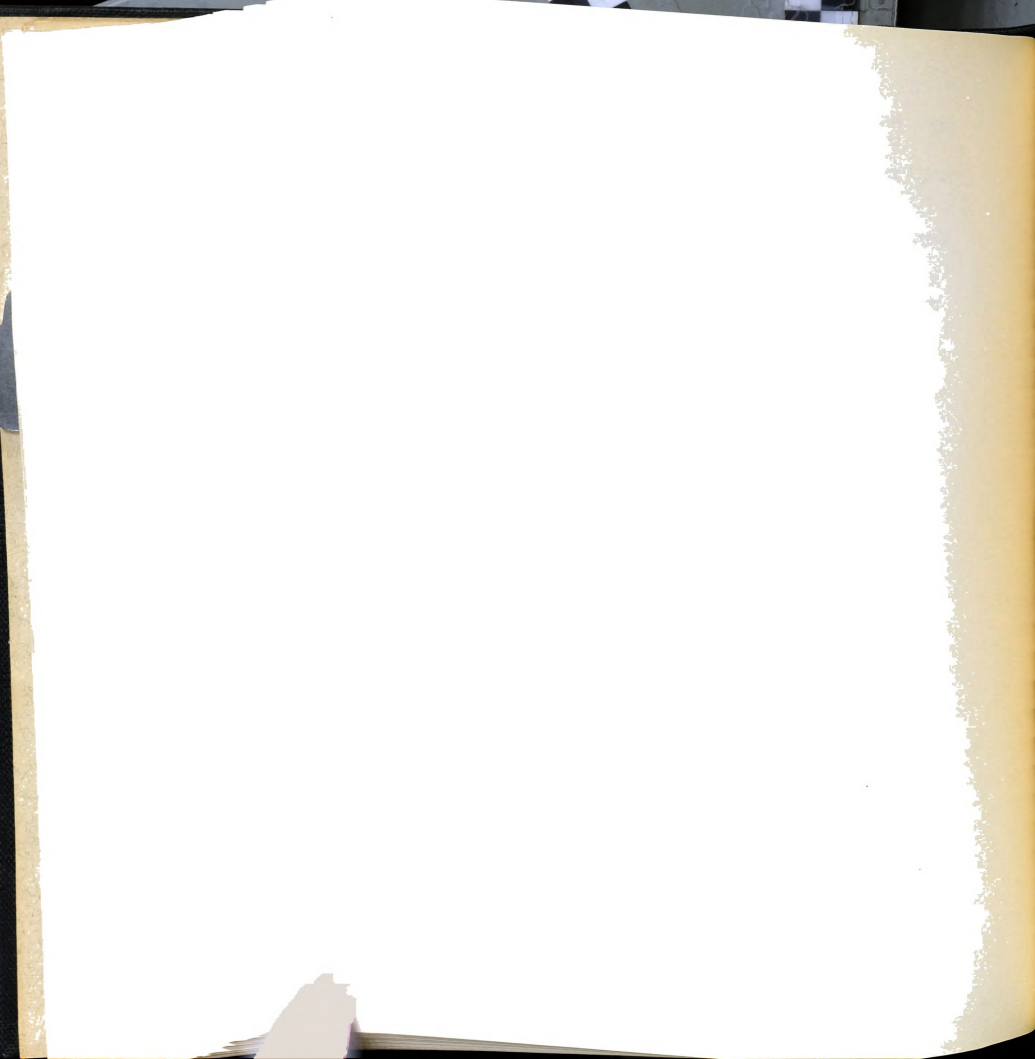
2284. Addison was then learning the trade of a courtier. . .



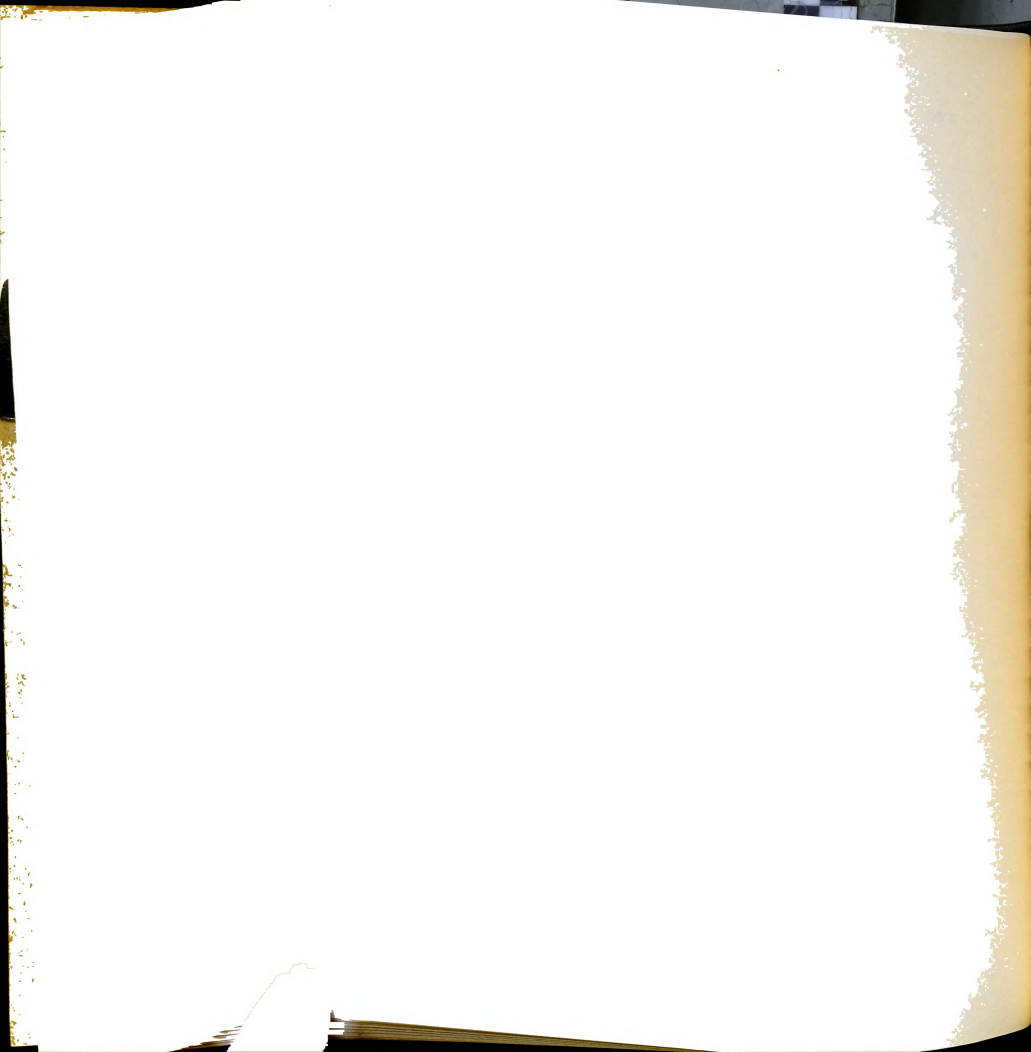
2285. While he was traveling at leisure, he was far from being idle. . .
2286. The Tatler and Spectator had the same tendency; they were published at a time when two parties . . . were agitating the nation. . .
2287. . . .but lives can only be written from personal knowledge which is growing every day less, and in a short time is lost forever.
2288. As the process of these narratives is now bringing me among my contemporaries, I begin to feel myself "walking upon ashes under which the fire is not extinguished. . ."
2289. The end of this useful life was now approaching.
2290. . . .we consider not what they are doing, or what they are suffering; we wish to know what they have to say.
2291. His observations were framed rather for those who were learning to write, than for those that read only to talk.
2292. The subject is well-chosen, the fiction is pleasing.
2293. She wears a thousand dresses, and in all is pleasing. . .
2294. . . .and he endeavors to make up in industry what is wanting in talent. . .
2295. An instructor like Addison was now wanting, whose remarks being superficial, might be easily understood, and being just might prepare the mind for more attainments.
2296. . . .but an arbiter elegantiarum, a judge of propriety, was yet wanting.

Boswell's Life of Johnson
(Excerpts from accounts of 1747, 1763)

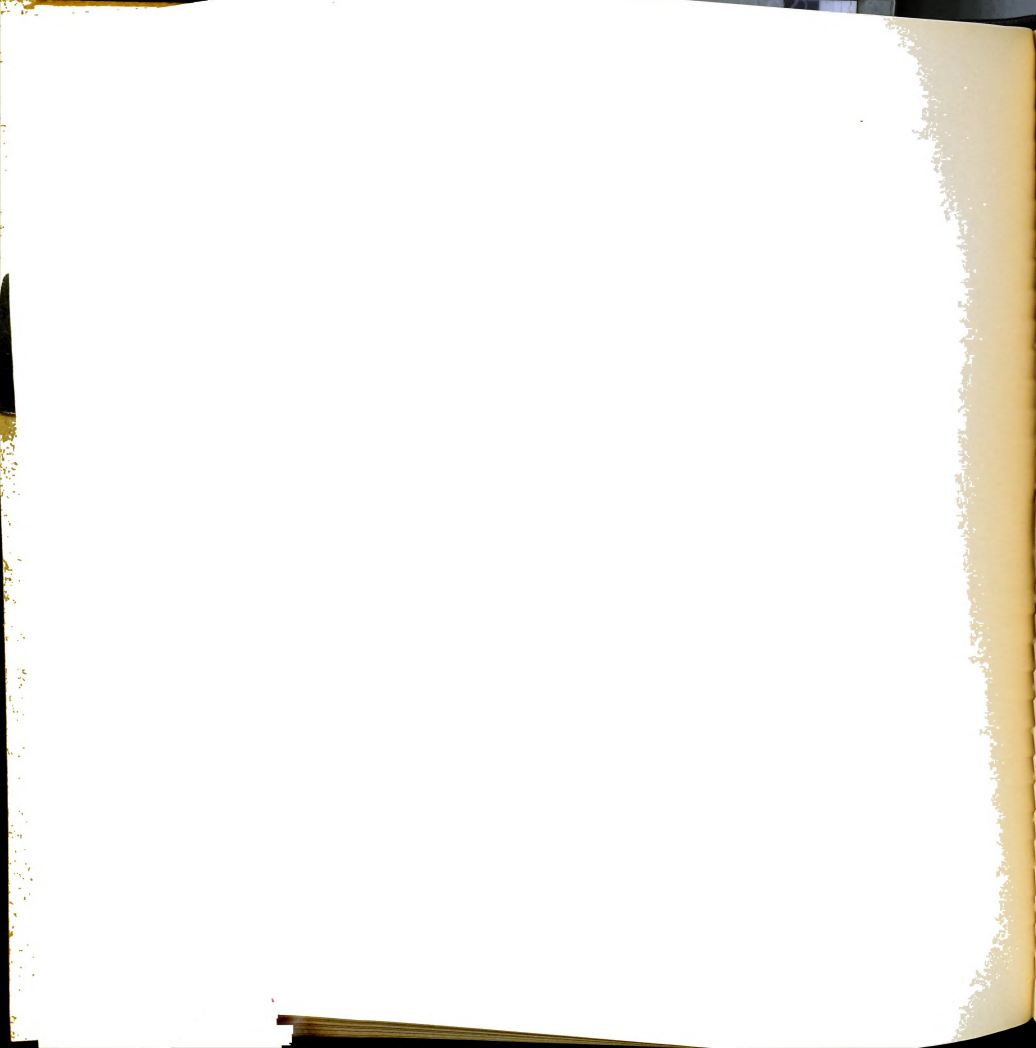
2297. . . ."Sir, after making great professions, he had, for many years, taken no notice of me; but when my Dictionary was coming out, he fell a scribbling in 'The World' about it.
2298. . . .during which time I have been pushing on my work through difficulties, of which it is useless to complain. . .
2299. . . .Johnson was dining at Tonson the Bookseller's, with Hayman the Painter and some more company.



2300. At the time when he was concluding his very eloquent Preface, Johnson's mind appears to have been in such a state of depression that we cannot contemplate without wonder the vigorous and splendid thoughts which so highly distinguish that performance.
2301. But we must ascribe his gloom to "that miserable day that was passing over him."
2302. This is to me a memorable year; for in it I had the happiness to obtain the acquaintance of that extraordinary man whose memoirs I am now writing.
2303. At last, on Monday the 16th of May, when I was sitting in Mr. Davies's back-parlour, after having drunk tea with him and Mrs. Davies, Johnson unexpectedly came into the shop. . .
2304. . . and Mr. Davies having perceived him through the glass-door in the room in which we were sitting, advancing towards us--he announced his awful approach to me. . .
2305. Mr. Sheridan was then reading lectures upon Oratory at Bath, where Derrick was Master of Ceremonies; or, as the phrase is, King.
2306. Some gentlemen, whom I do not recollect, were sitting with him. . .
2307. My readers will, I trust, excuse me for being thus minutely circumstantial, when it is considered that the acquaintance of Dr. Johnson was to me a most valuable acquisition, and laid the foundation of whatever instruction and entertainment they may receive from my collections concerning the great subject they are now perusing.
2308. He has been loose in his principles, but he is coming right."
2309. While they were inquiring and deliberating, they were summoned into the girl's chamber by some ladies who were near her bed, and who had heard knocks and scratches.
2310. "Why, Sir, if the fellow does not think as he speaks, he is lying. . .
2311. I have forgotten the year, but it could scarcely, I think, be later than 1765 or 1766, that he was called abruptly from our house after dinner, and returning in about three hours, said he had been with an enraged authour, whose landlady pressed him for payment within doors, while the bailiffs beset him without; that he was drinking himself drunk with Madeira. . .



2312. When I was running about this town a very poor fellow, I was a great arguer for the advantages of poverty. . .
2313. And let it be remembered, that he was now talking spontaneously, and expressing his genuine sentiments. . .
2314. "Sir, while you are considering which of two things you should teach your child first, another boy has learnt them both."
2315. "I do not think so, Sir. He is, indeed, continually attempting wit, but he fails."
2316. "Human experience, which is constantly contradicting theory, is the great test of truth."
2317. Had he not been a writer, he must have been sweeping the crossings in the streets, and asking halfpence from everybody that past."
2318. . . .for they were produced extempore one evening while he and I were walking together in the dining-room at Eglintown Castle, in 1760, and I never mentioned them to him since.
2319. One night, when Floyd, another poor author, was wandering about the streets in the night, he found Derrick fast asleep upon a bulk. . .
2320. We were entertained with the immense number and variety of ships that were lying at anchor, and with the beautiful country on each side of the river.
2321. And though they are accumulating for him in heaven a treasure of bliss proportioned to his faithfulness and activity, and it is by no means inconsistent with his principles to feel the force of this consideration, yet love itself sweetens every duty to his mind. . .
2322. Sir William Scott, of the Commons, told me, that when he complained of a head-ach in the post-chaise, as they were traveling together to Scotland, Johnson treated him in the same manner. . .
2323. ". . .and now he is going to Utrecht, where he will be as idle as ever."
2324. He advised me, when settled in any place abroad, to study with an eagerness after knowledge, and to apply to Greek an hour every day; and when I was moving about, to read diligently the great book of mankind.
2325. He was walking up and down the room, while I told him the anecdote. . .



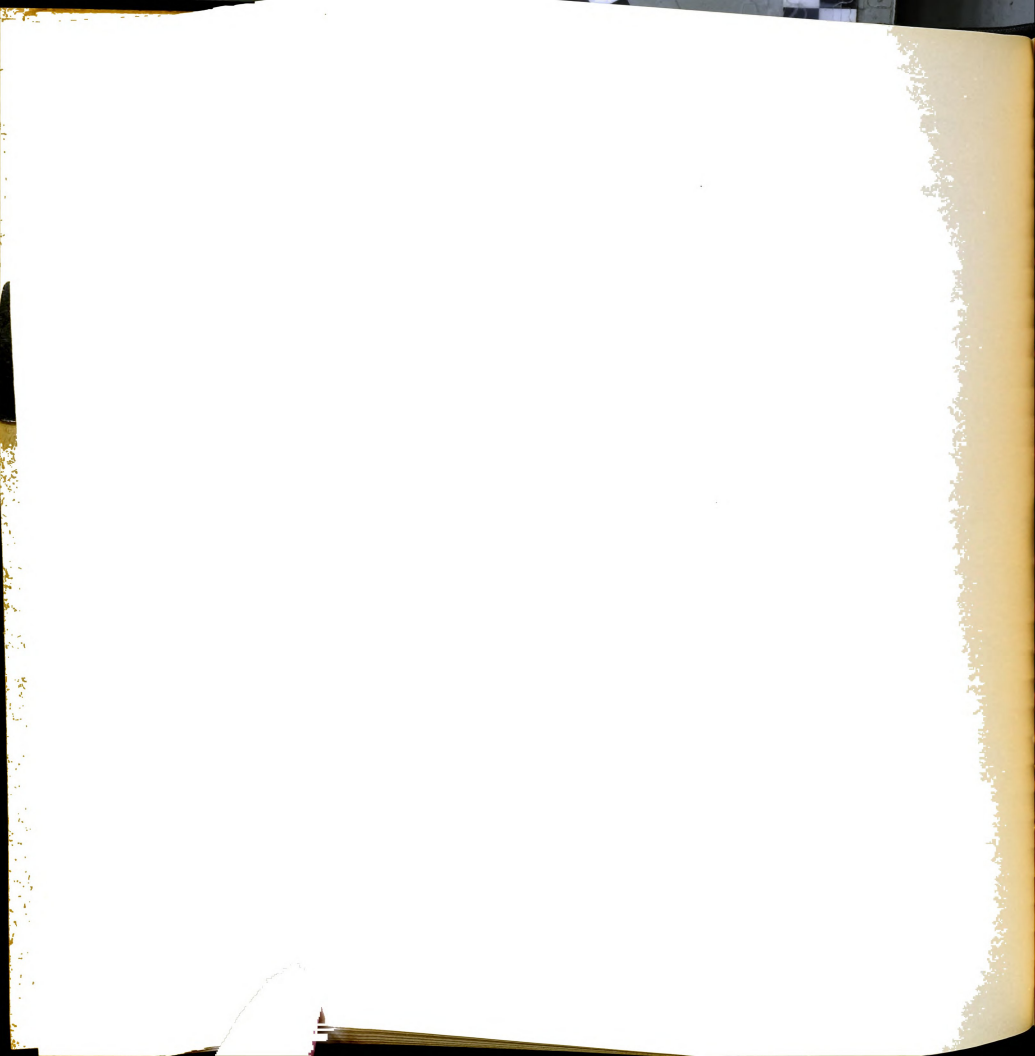
2326. "Now that you are going to leave your native country, recommend yourself to the protection of your CREATOR and REDEEMER."
2327. There is, perhaps, in every thing of consequence, a secret history which it would be amusing to know, could we have it authentically communicated.
2328. Praise, in general, was pleasing to him; but by praise from a man of rank and elegant accomplishments he was peculiarly gratified.
2329. Johnson had all along denied their authenticity; and, what was still more provoking to their admirers, maintained they had no merit.
2330. He took care to guard himself against any possible suspicion that his settled principles of reverence for rank and respect for wealth were at all owing to mean or interested motives. . .
2331. Time will do for him all that is wanting."
2332. . . .and our happiness is very much owing to the good opinion of mankind.
2333. "Sir, it is owing to their expressing themselves in a plain and familiar manner, which is the only way to do good to the common people. . .
2334. To those whose sensations were delicate, this could not but be disgusting. . .
2335. I have been informed by Mr. James Dodsley, that several years before this period, when Johnson was one day sitting in his brother Robert's shop, he heard his brother suggest to him, that a Dictionary of the English Language would be a work that would be well received by the publick. . .

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY, June, 1953, pp. 27-46.

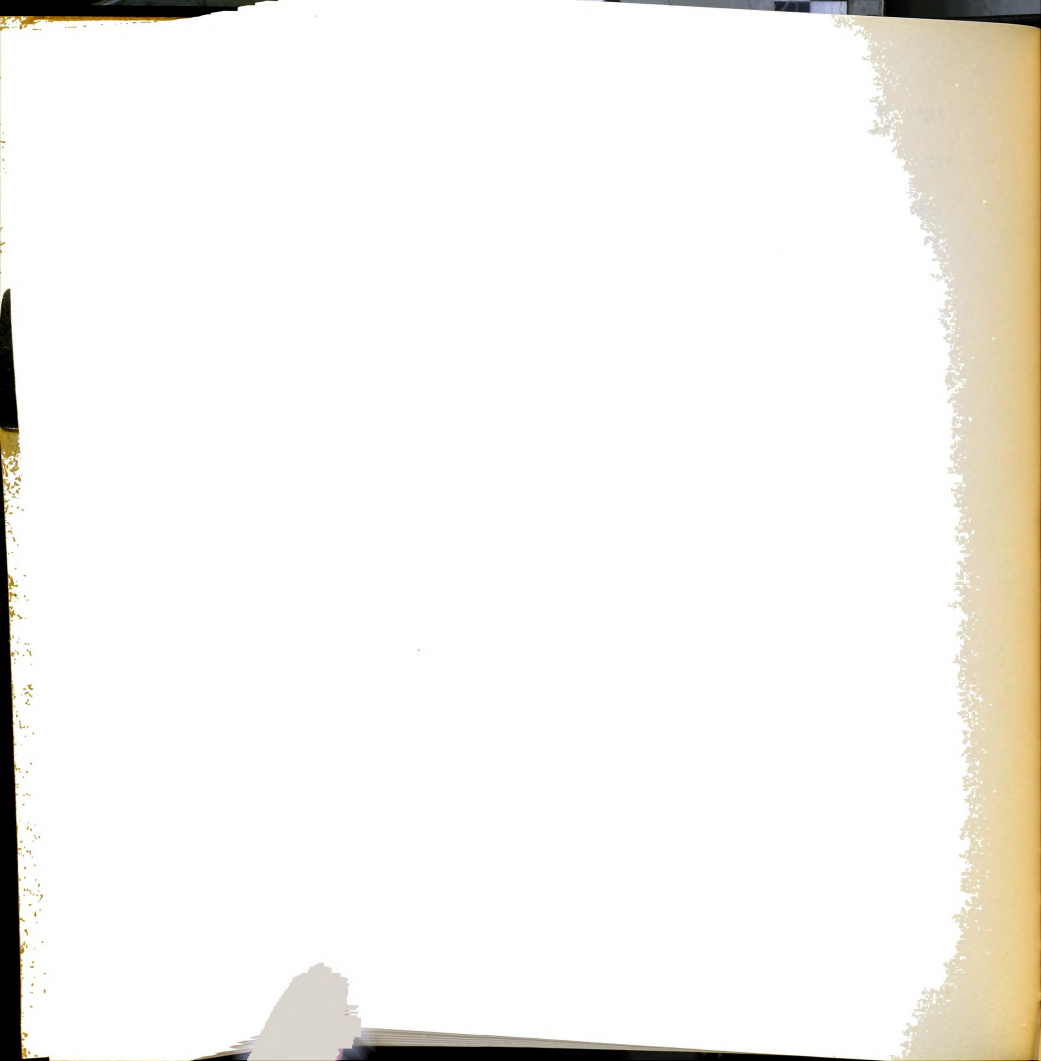
2336. He told me what it was once: a dream: he had dreamed the night before that he was walking for miles along country roads, leading a horse which he was trying to swap for a night's sleep--not for a simple bed for the night, but for the sleep itself. p. 27
2337. This time he was already sitting on the bench, laughing. p. 27



2338. I knew that he had invented it, made it; he had made most of it or at least some of it while I was there watching and listening to him. p. 27
2339. . . .his own America, which he in his bright blue race-track shirt and vermilion-mottled Bohemian Windsor tie, was offering with humor and patience and humility. . . p. 27
2340. "They're still building it." p. 29
2341. Because tomorrow America is going to be something different, something more and new to watch and listen to and try to understand; and, even if you can't understand, believe." p. 29
2342. Then I remembered Winesburg, Ohio and The Triumph of the Egg and some pieces in Horses and Men, and I knew that I had seen, was looking at, a giant in an earth populated to a great--too great--extent by pygmies, even if he did make but the two or perhaps three gestures commensurate with gianthood. p. 29
2343. I said I was writing a novel. p. 29
2344. . . .beginning in 1916 when Anderson was just breaking into print at the age of forty. p. 30
2345. For the past two years, Howard Mumford Jones has been reading and weighing the vast amount of Sherwood Anderson's correspondence. . . p. 30
2346. I have been to Nebraska, where the big engines are tearing the hills to pieces. . . (Sherwood Anderson, p. 30)
2347. You are thinking of the man's style, his way of handling words and sentences. p. 30
2348. I was working at work I hated. p. 31
2349. I was living in a cheap rooming house. p. 31
2350. I wrote the story and then got up from the table at which I had been sitting, I do not know how long, and went down into the city street. p. 31
2351. Things were always happening. p. 31
2352. As I came of a poor family, older men were always repeating to me the old saying:- p. 31
2353. Once I was walking in a wood and heard the sound of a man weeping. p. 31



2354. There was a thing called happiness toward which men were striving. p. 32
2355. Our writers, our storytellers, in wrapping life up into neat little packages were only betraying life. p. 32
2356. I am still having a full, rich life. p. 32
2357. I am telling you all of this, I assure you, not out of bitterness. p. 32
2358. . . .but when, no money coming in, I was trying to sell my house to get money to live. p. 32
2359. And I am only writing all of this to you to prepare you. p. 33
2360. The scientist had made some great discovery, but he is using his knowledge for his own private ends. p. 33
2361. Young writers, new men among writers, are always writing letters to me. p. 33
2362. People, it seems to me, are becoming more conscious of thinness. p. 33
2363. Let me quote from the current General Motors letter-writing contest in which GM is giving \$200,000 for essays on the subject of highways--with scarcely any mention of parking. p. 34
2364. If you do nothing, it is going to be very expensive because there is only one thing that happens by itself, and that is economic disaster. p. 35
2365. Everybody is purposely avoiding this aspect, for it seems too big to handle. p. 35
2366. I recently saw a very interesting new device that we are thinking of taking on ourselves. p. 35
2367. Although there is no existing device that fully answers the problem, there are several that have made real strides, are actually paving, and are being franchised, but they are not nearly broad enough or big enough. p. 35
2368. Perhaps teachers are trembling on the verge of becoming the radicals legend paints them as being. p. 37
2369. It is true there is a vague, floating fear they have been indoctrinating somebody with something. p. 38
2370. The taxpayers are footing the bill, aren't they? p. 38



2371. It was not so long ago that some notes were literally snatched out of the hands of a very distinguished scientist while he was testifying before such a committee. p. 38
2372. . . .and these witnesses may, indeed, have been speaking as much from conscience as those who refused to answer particular questions-- p. 39
2373. Unfortunately, the advice of counsel. . .has had little effect upon trustees and presidents who have incontinently discharged professors or suspended them, despite the fact that they were following legal advice. p. 39
2374. . . .so precious that even presidents and boards of trustees deny they are violating it--- p. 39
2375. . . .it is the potential Communist who is not going to be hired--that is, anybody upon whom somebody else can, as we say, hang something. p. 39
2376. The one sure fact in the general uproar is that very few persons are going to admit to being Communists. p. 39
2377. . . .I should like to give you my thoughts about the investigation of Communism in the universities that is currently being conducted by the House Un-American Activities Committee. . p. 41
2378. Both in procedure and in aim these committees differ altogether from the old House Un-American Activities Committee when Vice-President Richard Nixon was taking a leading part in its work. p. 42
2379. I am fully conscious that a man who pleads possible self-incrimination in order to avoid playing informer without going to jail, is in fact taking advantage of a legal technicality. p. 42
2380. . . .for they are seeking to subvert our most honored American institutions under the cloak of anti-Communism. p. 43
2381. "But are you going to let a Communist teach our boys?" p. 43
2382. What if we are not dealing with a mere party front-man, useful as window dressing, but with a conscious member of the Communist conspiracy? p. 43
2383. But perhaps the situation is frightening. p. 37



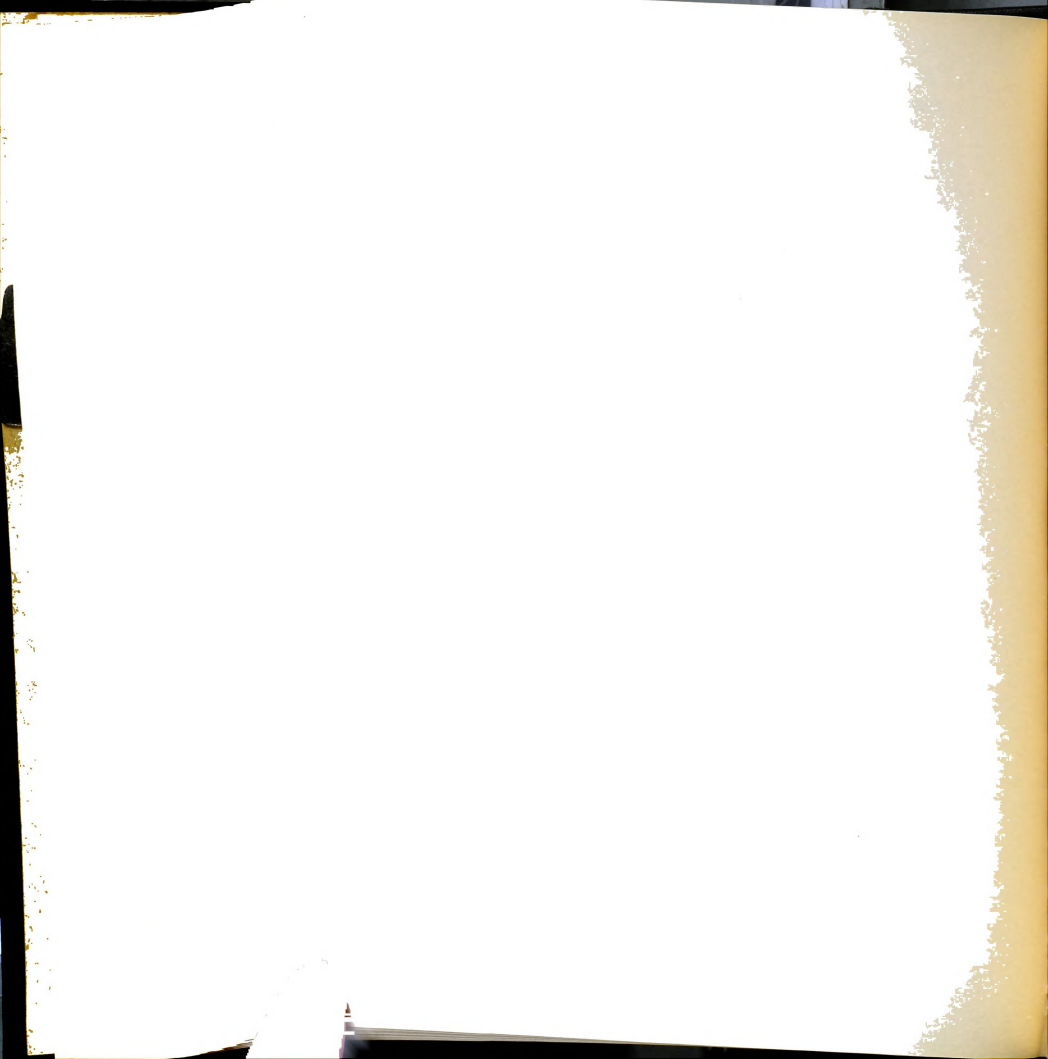
2384. Quite often, what is incriminating before these committees to the extent of ruining men's lives would be rejected with indignation by any court in the country.
p. 42

Harper's Magazine, Nov. 1952, pp. 27-47.

2385. "Is it doing so?" p. 27
2386. While no firm answer to this question is yet possible, we can make some interim notes on what is happening.
p. 27
2387. In short, we are promised the millenium, a prescription that pleases us, since Americans are always expecting the millenium and are impatient for its arrival. p. 27
2388. (some of these points I am paraphrasing from the astute William S. White of the New York Times). p. 27
2389. You can't seem to be poor David fighting rich Goliath when people know that somebody is paying a thousand dollars a minute for your appearance on the air. p. 27
2390. While the FCC practically never exercises its theoretical power to cancel a license, the networks are always looking for extra insurance in the form of a chance to perform some big, flashy piece of public service. p. 29
2391. . . .but if doing so conflicts with the job they are trying to do there is no doubt which they will choose.
p. 31
2392. The other was to prove publicly that certain delegates who had agreed to support a specified candidate were sticking to their bargains. p. 31
2393. While prophecy is dangerous in a field that is changing so fast, I suggest that. . . p. 32
2394. . . .the Columbia Broadcasting System this autumn has been airing a special television show. . . p. 32
2395. The political writers (who are coming to be known in the jargon of the trade as "pencil reporters") are now struggling with a problem that several years ago became acute for the sports writers: p. 32
2396. If the reporter at a convention is old-fashioned or stubborn enough to stay in the press section of the hall, he sees only a small part of the story the viewers are watching on their screens. . . p. 32



2397. This year's politics has confirmed the fact that television is creating a new type of journalist of its own. . . p. 32
2398. The candidates have been learning that to appear too much on television may be a mistake as serious as appearing too little. p. 33
2399. I can think of several past Presidents of the United States who might not have attained that office if panel shows had existed when they were running. p. 33
2400. We'd been in the same class in college, both of us had been living ever since, off and on, in the same city or in one or another of its suburbs. . . p. 34
2401. . . .and by the time coffee came, we were dredging up odds and ends of news about mutual friends whom one or the other of us occasionally saw or heard from. p. 34
2402. . . .other householders. . .which were facing. . .these same circumstances. . . p. 35
2403. The increase in longevity which has been hurtling along... is not likely to slow down. p. 35
2404. . . .the older generation has from time immemorial believed that the rising generation was going to hell in a hack. . . p. 35
2405. Consider a typical case of a woman of sixty-five or there-abouts who is now living with her married daughter. . . p. 35
2406. The fact that her daughter and son-in-law and their friends are happily enjoying themselves doesn't help matters one bit. p. 36
2407. . . .there are the constant factors that have always existed and will continue- - -pitfalls and possible trouble spots that are lurking even if they are not always evident. p. 36
2408. She feels it is her responsibility to keep things on an even keel, and, being conscientious, she is forever trying to see that no one is neglected. p. 36
2409. That means she's constantly changing sides--which is wearing in itself. p. 36
2410. For no matter what the younger people are giving up, the older has had to give up more. p. 36



2411. Strangely enough, the mother may be wholly unconscious of what she's doing and might be horrified if she realized what pain she is giving. p. 37
2412. Even those women who know that they are behaving badly have a compulsion to say the unforgivable words. p. 37
2413. We've been considering the hazards and complications of a joint household, and by emphasizing these aspects have come up with a formidable picture. p. 37
2414. We are granting, are we not, that it is not the most desirable pattern of modern domestic life? p. 37
2415. Not that I'm turning up my nose at any form of handicraft. p. 38
2416. "What were you doing this afternoon?" p. 39
2417. All you're doing is closing another door. p. 39
2418. "You're going to do it aren't you?" was her invariable comment. . . p. 39
2419. And he is convinced that the problem is not being solved. p. 40
2420. And still Americans, many of them normal people and far too many of them children who don't know what they are doing, are having their lives destroyed by drugs. p. 42
2421. It seems clear that our present efforts to eliminate or even control the drug traffic are not working. p. 42
2422. For the answers to these questions we must go back to 1919 and the early nineteen-twenties, when many narcotics clinics were operating in the United States. p. 43
2423. . . .but other members of the AMA of equal experience and reputation, who were actually running narcotics clinics, just as sincerely believed they had found the answer to the drug problem. p. 44
2424. The addict's identification cleared, the physician in charge would proceed to determine how much of what drug he had been taking and what quantity of morphine might lead to a balanced dosage. p. 44
2425. . . .he will be released from the tension of worry over where the next dose is coming from. p. 45
2426. In 1936 the Chinese government of Chiang Kai-shek was calmly shooting as many as a hundred of them at a time for no other crime than smoking opium. . . p. 46



2427. The air is continually humming. . . p. 47

THE AUTHORIZED VERSION OF THE BIBLE

(The Moffatt rendition of the same construction appears immediately after each citation)

2428. . . .the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching and said. . . (Math. 21.23)

Moffatt: as he was teaching. . .

2429. . . .for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. (Math. 23.13)

Moffatt: ...nor will you let those enter who are on the point of entering.

2430. For as in the days before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark. (Math. 24.38)

Moffatt: For as in the days before the deluge people ate and drank, married and were married. . .

2431. Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken and the other left. (Math. 24.41)

Moffatt: two women will be grinding...

2432. And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it. . . (Math. 26.26)

Moffatt: As they were eating. . .

2433. Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death. . . (Math. 16.28)

Moffatt: there are some of those standing here who will not taste death. . .

2444. Rise, let us be going. . . (Math. 26.46)

Moffatt: let us be going. . .

2445. Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake. . . (Math. 27.54)

Moffatt: When the army-captain and his men, who were watching Jesus, saw. . .



2446. And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee. . . (Math. 27.55)

Moffatt: There were also a number of women there, looking on from a distance. . .

2447. And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary sitting over against the sepulchre. . . (Math. 27.61)

Moffatt: Mary of Magdala and the other Mary was there, sitting opposite the tomb.

2448. Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city. . . (Math. 28.11)

Moffatt: While they were on their way. . .

2449. But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts. . . (Mark 2.6)

Moffatt: Now there were some scribes sitting there who argued in their hearts. . .

2450. And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying and cutting himself with stones. (Mark 5.5)

Moffatt: All night and day among the tombs and the hills he shrieked and gashed himself with stones.

2451. Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding. . . (Mark 5.11)

Moffatt: Now a large drove of swine was grazing there on the hillside. . .

2452. But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel and entereth in where the damsel was lying. (Mark 5.40)

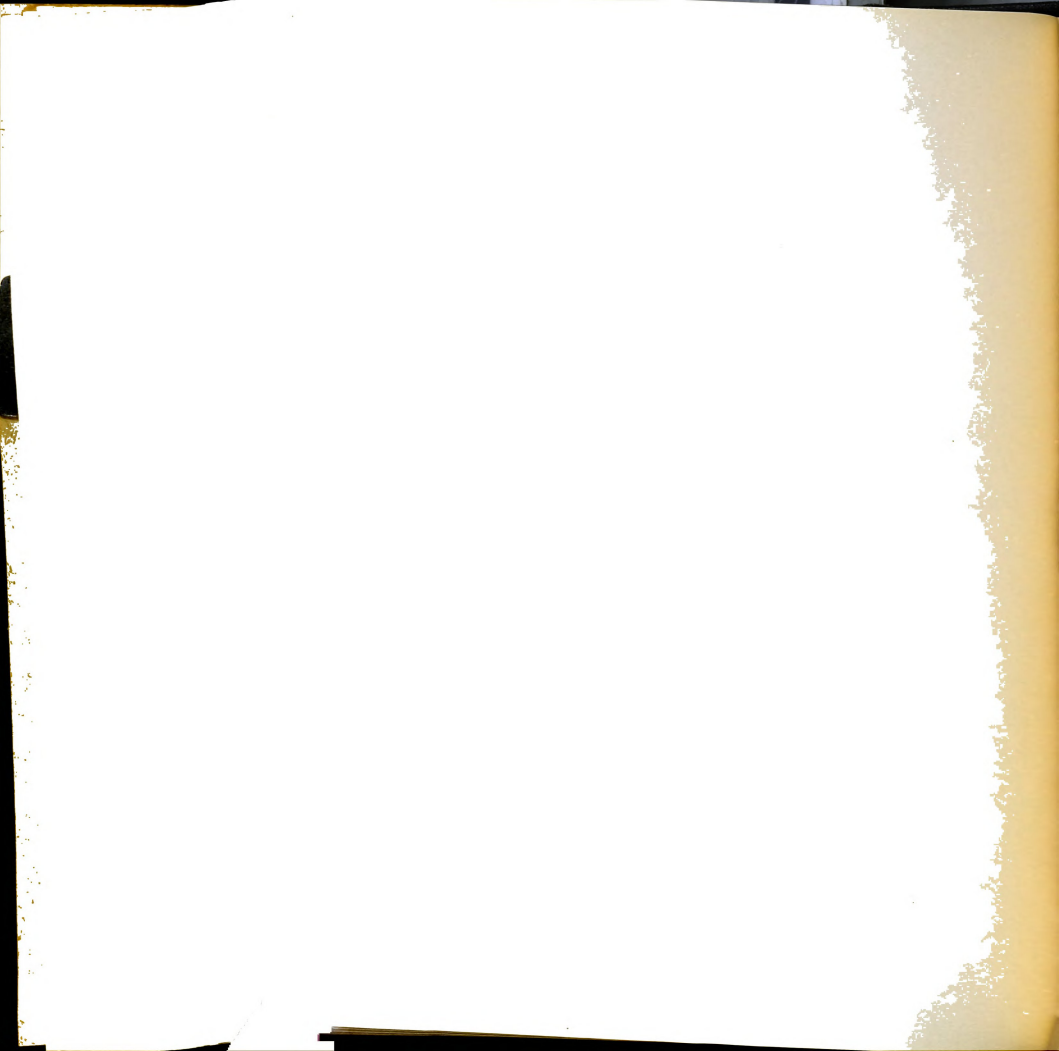
Moffatt: . . .the child was lying.

2453. . . .for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat. (Mark 6.31)

Moffatt: for there were many people coming and going. . .

2454. And there appeared unto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus. (Mark 9.4)

Moffatt: And Elijah along with Moses appeared to them, and conversed with Jesus.



2455. And they come again to Jerusalem: and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders. . . (Mark 11.27)

Moffatt: . . .as he was walking. . .

2456. As I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and ye took me not. . . (Mark 14.49)

Moffatt: Day after day I was beside you in the temple teaching...

2457. There were also women looking on afar off. . . (Mark 15.40)

Moffatt: There were some women also watching at a distance. . .

THE NEW TESTAMENT (together with the authorized version in parallel columns), translator, James Moffatt, New edition, revised, (Harpers, 1922, 1935).

2458. For Herod is going to search for the child and destroy him. (Math. 2.13)

A.V. will seek

2459. The axe is lying all ready at the root of the trees. . . (Math. 3.10)

A.V. is laid unto

2460. . . any tree that is not producing good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire. (Math. 3.10)

A.V. which bringeth not forth good fruit. . .

2461. ...but he who is coming after me is mightier. . . (Math. 3.11)

A.V. he that cometh after me

2462. As he was walking along the sea of Galilee he saw two brothers. . . (Math. 4.18)

A.V. And Jesus, walking by the sea

2463. When you give alms, never let your left hand know what your right hand is doing. . . (Math. 6.3)

A.V. what thy right hand doeth



2464. ...for they look woebegone to let men see that they are fasting. . . (Math. 6.16)
- A.V. that they may appear to fast
2465. No. when you are fasting, anoint your head and your face. . .
- A.V. when thou fastest
2466. Sir, my servant is lying ill at home with paralysis, in terrible agony. (Math. 8.6)
- A.V. my servant lieth
2467. He was sleeping. (Math. 8.24)
- A.V. he was asleep
2468. Help, Lord, we are drowning. (Math. 8.25)
- A.V. we perish
2469. "If you are going to cast us out, send us into that drove of swine." (Math. 8.31)
- A.V. If thou cast us out
2470. "The man is talking blasphemy!" (Math. 9.3)
- A.V. This man blasphemeth
2471. Jesus saw what they were thinking. . . (Math. 9.4)
- A.V. their thoughts
2472. Jesus. . .saw the flute-players and the din the crowd were making. . . (Math. 9.23)
- A.V, the people making noise
2473. I am sending you out like sheep among wolves. . . (Math. 10.16)
- A.V. I send you forth
2474. . . .it is the Spirit of your Father that is speaking through you. (Math. 10.20)
- A.V. which speaketh



2475. . . .these eager souls are storming it! (Math. 11.12)

A.V. the violent take it by force

2476. . . .they are doing what is not allowed on the sabbath!"
(Math. 12.2)

A.V. do

2477. As Jesus knew what they were thinking, he said to them. . .
(Math. 12.25)

A.V. their thoughts

2478. He was still speaking to the crowds. . . (Math. 12.46)

A.V. While he yet talked

2479. 'No,' he said, 'for you might root up the wheat when you
were gathering the weeds. (Math. 13.29)

A.V. while ye gather

2480. That is why miraculous powers are working through him."
(Math. 14.2)

A.V. works do shew forth themselves

2481. "Send her away, she is wailing behind us." (Math. 15.23)

A.V. she crieth

2482. Why do you not see that I was not speaking to you about
bread?

A.V. I spake it not

2483. For the Son of man is coming in the glory of his Father
with his angels. . . (Math. 16.27)

A.V. shall come

2484. He was still speaking when a bright cloud overshadowed
them. . . (Math. 17.5)

A.V. While he yet spake

2485. 'My man, I am not wronging you. (Math. 20.13)

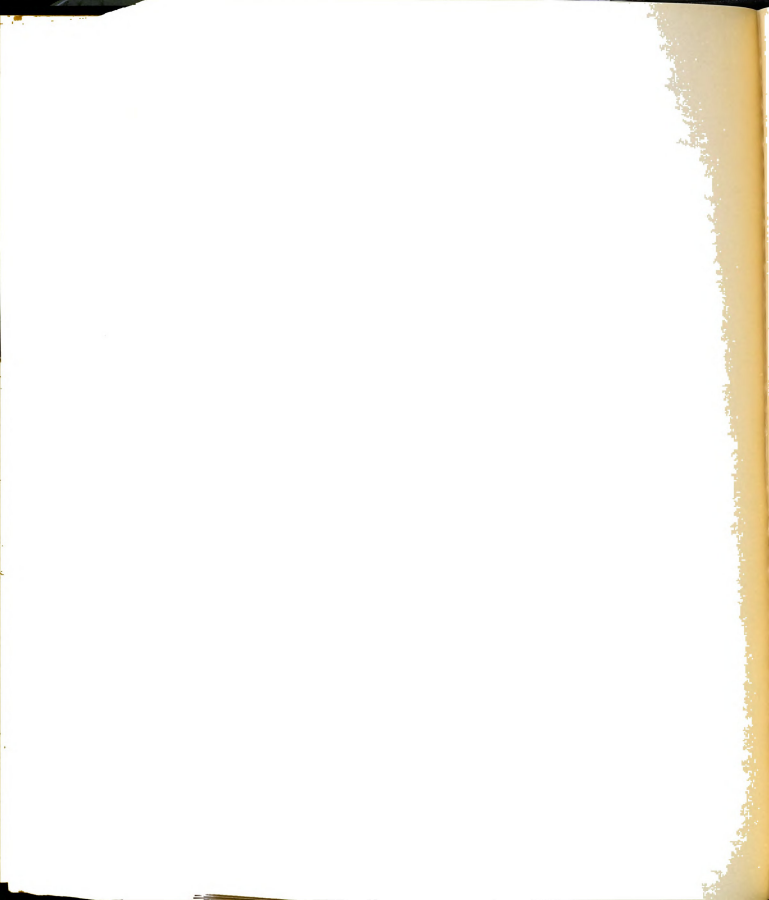
A.V. I do thee no wrong



2486. "We are going up to Jerusalem. . . (Math. 20.18)
A.V. we go up to
2487. "You do not know what you are asking. (Math. 20.22)
A.V. what ye ask
2488. Can you drink the cup I am going to drink?" (Math. 20.22)
A.V. that I shall drink of
2489. As they were leaving Jericho, a crowd followed him. . .
(Math. 20.29)
A.V. they departed
2490. . . .when two blind men who were sitting beside the road
heard Jesus was passing, they shouted. . . (Math. 20.30)
A.V. two blind men sitting. . .Jesus passed by. . .
2491. Then Jesus went into the temple of God and drove out all
who were buying and selling inside the temple. . .
(Math. 21.12)
A.V. that bought and sold
2492. "Do you hear what they are saying?" (Math. 21.16)
A.V. what these say
2493. . . .the high priests and elders of the people came up to
him ~~as~~ he was teaching. . . (Math. 21.23)
A.V. as he was teaching
2494. "I tell you truly, the taxgatherers and harlots are
going into the Realm of God before you. (Math. 21.31)
A.V. go
2495. . . .they knew that he was speaking about them. . .
(Math. 21.45)
A.V. he spake of
2496. 'If we had been living in the days of our fathers, we
would not have joined them in shedding the blood of the
prophets.'
A.V. If we had been in



2497. I am telling you this beforehand. (Math. 24.25)
 A.V. I have told you before
2498. . . .two women will be grinding at the millstone. . .
 (Math. 24.41)
 A.V. Two women shall be grinding
2499. . . .if the householder had known at what watch in the
 night the thief was coming, he would have been on the
 watch. . . (Math. 24.43)
 A.V. would come
2500. So be ready yourselves, for the Son of man is coming at
 an hour you do not expect. (Math. 24.44)
 A.V. cometh
2501. 'Give us some of your oil, for our lamps are going out.'
 (Math. 25.8)
 A.V. are gone out
2502. "Why are you annoying the woman? (Math. 26.10)
 A.V. Why trouble ye
2503. . . .and as they were eating, he said. . . (Math. 26.21)
 A.V. did eat
2504. "One of you is going to betray me." (Math. 26.21)
 A.V. shall betray
2505. "One who has dipped his hand into the same dish as my-
 self is going to betray me.
 A.V. shall betray
2506. As they were eating, he took a loaf. . . (Math. 26.26)
 A.V. And as they were eating
2507. Come, rise. let us be going. . . (Math. 26.46)
 A.V. let us be going
2508. While he was still speaking, up came Judas. . . (Math.
 26.47)
 A.V. he yet spake



2509. Now Peter was sitting outside in the courtyard.
(Math. 26.29)

A.V. sat

2510. But while he was being accused. . .he made no reply.
(Math. 27.12)

A.V. was accused

2511. Now when Pilate saw that, instead of him doing any good,
a riot was rising, he took some water. . . (Math. 27.24)

A.V. a tumult was made

2512. When the army-captain and his men who were watching
Jesus, saw the earthquake. . . (Math. 27.54)

A.V. Now when the centurion, and they that were with
him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake. . .

2513. At the close of the sabbath, as the first day of the week
was dawning, Mary Magdala and the other Mary went to look
at the tomb. (Math. 28.1)

A.V. began to dawn

2514. I know you are looking for the crucified Jesus.
(Math. 28.5)

A.V. ye seek

2515. Now while they were away buying oil. . .

A.V. they went to buy. . .

2516. . . .but swear by the gold of the sanctuary, and the
oath is binding.' (Math. 23.16)

A.V. the oath is binding

2517. . . .if the household is deserving, let your peace rest
upon it; but if the household is undeserving, let your
peace return to you. (Math. 10.13)

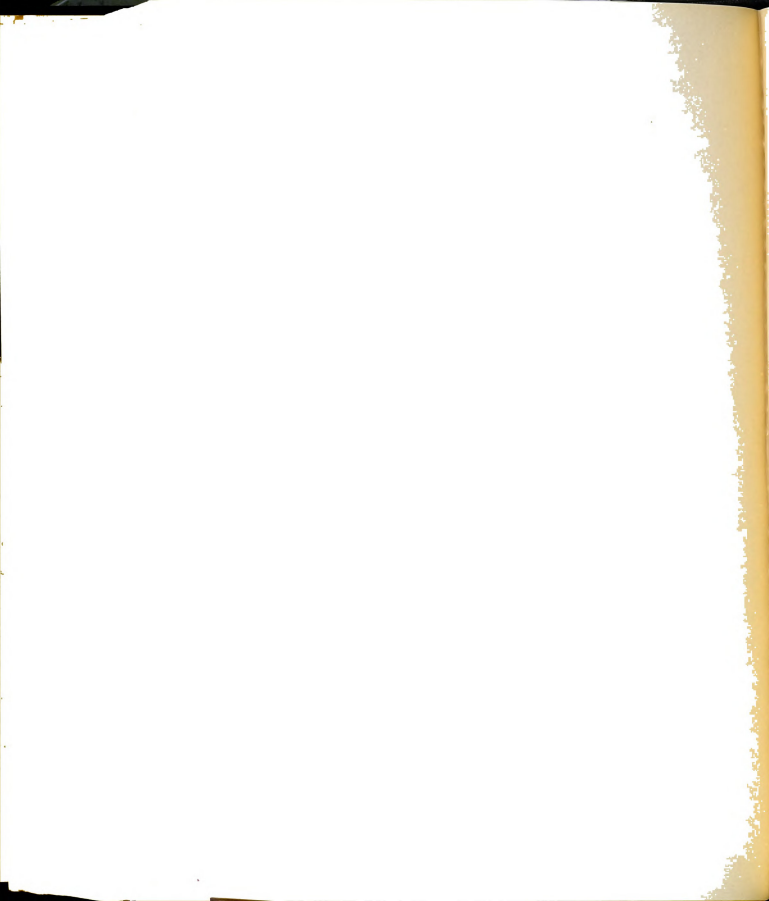
A.V. And if the house be worthy

2518. "Everybody is looking for you. . . ." (Mark 1.37)

A.V. All men seek



2519. He was speaking the word to them. . . (Mark 2.2)
A.V. preached
2520. So when some scribes of the Pharisees saw that he was eating with sinners and taxgatherers. . . (Mark 2.16)
A.V. saw him eat
2521. As the disciples of John and of the Pharisees were observing a fast, people came and asked. . . (Mark 2.18)
A.V. used to fast
2522. Now it happened that he was passing through the cornfields on the sabbath. . .
A.V. went
2523. "Look at what they are doing on the sabbath! (Mark 2.24)
A.V. why do they on the sabbath day that which is not lawful?
2524. . . .for he healed so many that all who had complaints were pressing on him. . . (Mark 3.10)
A.V. pressed
2525. And glancing at those who were sitting round him in a circle he said. . . (Mark 3.34)
A.V. which sat
2526. He was sleeping on the cushion in the stern. . . (Mark 4.38)
A.V. he was asleep
2527. Now a large drove of swine were grazing there. (Mark 5.11)
A.V. Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding.
2528. As he was stepping into the boat, the lunatic begged. . . (Mark 5.18)
A.V. when he was come
2529. "My little girl is dying. . ." (Mark 5.23)
A.V. lieth at the point of death



2530. "You see the crowd are pressing round you. . .
(Mark 5.31)
- A.V. Thou seest the multitude thronging thee
2531. He was still speaking when a message came. . . (Mark 5.35)
- A.V. While he yet spake. . .
2532. . . .he went in to where the child was lying. . .
(Mark 5.40)
- A.V. was lying
2533. ". . .that is why miraculous powers are working through
him. . ." (Mark 6.14)
- A.V. mighty works do shew forth themselves. . .
2534. "What are you discussing with them?" (Mark 9.16)
- A.V. What question ye. . .
2535. Now as Jesus saw that a crowd was rapidly gathering. . .
- A.V. the people came running together. . .
2536. . . . for he was teaching his disciples. . . (Mark 9.31)
- A.V. taught
2537. "What were you arguing about on the road?" (Mark 9.33)
- A.V. What was it that ye disputed. . .
2538. They said nothing, for on the road they had been disputing
about. . . (Mark 9.34)
- A.V. had disputed
2539. . . .to tell them what was going to happen to himself.
(Mark 10.32)
- A.V. what things should happen
2540. "We are going up to Jerusalem. . ." (Mark 10.33)
- A.V. we go up
2541. "You do not know what you are asking." (Mark 10.38)
- A.V. ye ask



2542. . . .as he was leaving Jericho. . . the son of Timaeus. . .
heard it was Jesus of Nazaret. (Mark 10.46)

A.V. as he went out of

2543. Get up, he is calling you." (Mark 10.49)

A.V. calleth

2544. 'Why are you doing that?' (Mark 11.3)

A.V. Why do ye

2545. . . .he proceeded to drive out those who were buying and
selling inside the temple. . . (Mark 11.15)

A.V. sold and bought

2546. And as he was walking within the temple, the high priests
and scribes and elders came. . . (Mark 11.27)

A.V. was walking

2547. "I am going to ask you a question. (Mark 11.29)

A.V. I will also ask

2548. A number of the rich were putting in large sums. . .
(Mark 12.41)

A.V. cast

2549. I am telling you of it all beforehand. (Mark 13.23)

A.V. I have foretold you all things.

2550. . . .so the high priests and scribes were trying how to
get hold of him. . . (Mark 14.1)

A.V. sought

2551. Why are you annoying her? (Mark 14.6)

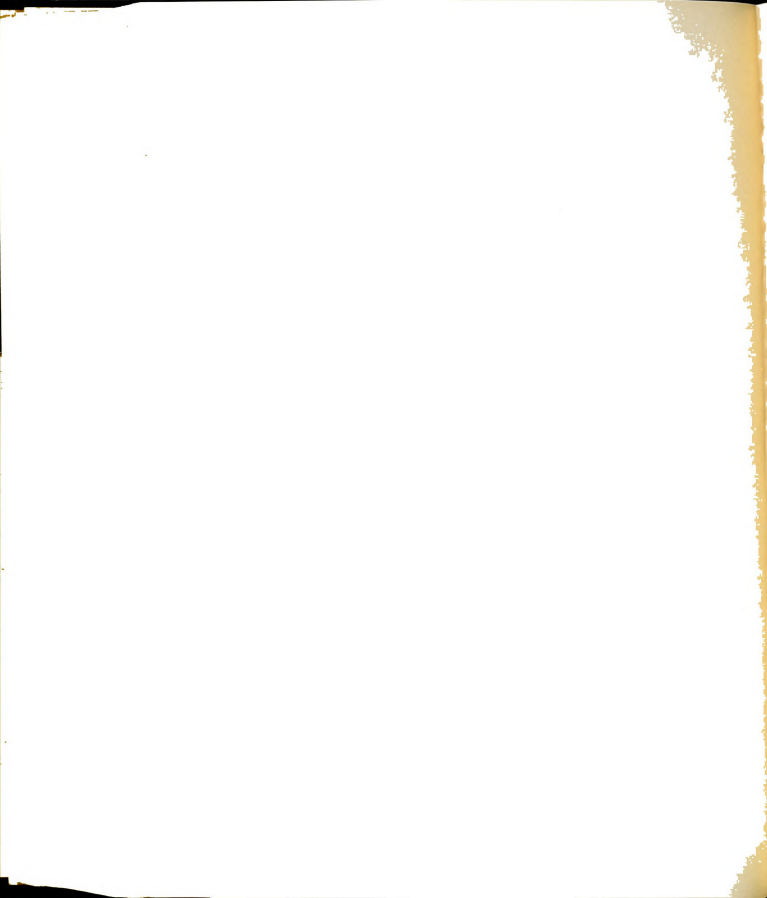
A.V. Why trouble ye her?

2552. . . .one of you is going to betray me, one who is eating
with me." (Mark 14.18)

A.V. One of you which eateth with me shall betray me.

2553. . . .one who is dipping into the same dish as I am!
(Mark 14.20)

A.V. dippeth



2554. As they were eating, he took a loaf. . . (Mark 14.22)

A.V. as they did eat. . .

2555. "Are you sleeping, Simon? (Mark 14.37)

A.V. sleepest thou?

2556. Come, rise, let us be going. . . (Mark 14.42)

A.V. let us go

2557. At that very moment, while he was still speaking, Judas Iscariot. . .came. . . (Mark 14.43)

A.V. he yet spake

2558. They forced Simon a Cyrenian, who was passing on his way from the country. . .to carry his cross. . . (Mark 15.21)

A.V. who passed by

2559. "Look, he is calling for Elijah." (Mark 15.35)

A.V. calleth

2560. You are looking for Jesus of Nazaret, who was crucified? (Mark 16.6)

A.V. Ye seek

2561. . . .he is exempt, so you hold, from doing anything for his father or mother. That is repealing the word of God. . . (Mark 7.12,13)

A.V. And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother; Making the word of God of none effect. . .

2562. . . .for there were many people coming and going. . .

A.V. there were many coming and going

2563. . . .there was a crowd sitting round him. . . (Mark 3.32)

A.V. the multitude sat. . .

2564. Now there were some scribes sitting there... (Mark 2.6)

A.V. But there were certain of the scribes sitting there. . .



Bibliography

- Akerlund, Alfred, The History of the Definite Tenses in English, Cambridge, W. Heffer and Sons, Ltd., 1911.
- Aronstein, Phil, "Die periphrastische Form im Englischen." Anglia, XXXXIII (1919), 1-24.
- Bloch, Bernard and Trager, George L., Outline of Linguistic Analysis, Published by Linguistic Society of America at the Waverly Press, Inc., Mount Royal and Guilford Avenues, Baltimore, Maryland, 1942.
- Bodelson, C.A., "The Expanded Tenses in Modern English, An Attempt at an Explanation," Englische Studien, LXXI (1936), 220-238.
- Bolinger, Dwight L., "More on the Present Tense in English," Language, XXIII (1947), 434-436.
- Brusendorff, Aage, "The Relative Aspect of the Verb in English," A Grammatical Miscellany Offered to Otto Jespersen on His Seventieth Birthday, London, George Allen and Unwin, Ltd., 1930.
- Calver, Edward A., "The Uses of the Present Tense Forms in English," Language, XXII (1946), 317-325.
- Curme, George O., "Some Characteristic Features of Aspect in English," Journal of English and Germanic Philology, XXXI (1932), 251-255.
- Curme, George O., "Development of the Progressive Form," Publication of the Modern Language Association, XXVIII (1913), 159-37.
- Curme, George O., Parts of Speech and Accidence, New York, D.C. Heath and Co., 1935.
- Curme, George O., Principles and Practice of English Grammar, New York, Barnes and Noble, Inc., 1947.
- Dennis, Leah, "The Progressive Tense: Frequency of its Use in English," Publication of the Modern Language Association, LV (1940), 355-365.
- Deutschbein, M., "Die einteilung der aktionsarten," Englische Studien, LIV (1920), 80-86.
- Fehr, B., "Eine bisher unbeachtete Funktion der progressiven Form?", Beiblatt zur Anglia, XXIX (1918), 82-86.
- Fries, Charles C., American English Grammar, New York, D. Appleton-Century Company, 1940.

- Fries, Charles C., The Structure of English, New York, Harcourt Brace and Company, 1952.
- Goedsche, C.R., "Aspect versus Aktionsart," Journal of English and Germanic Philology, XXXIX (1940), 189-206.
- Goedsche, C.R., "Terminate Aspect of the Expanded Form," Journal of English and Germanic Philology, XXXI (1932), 469-477.
- Gratton, J.H.G. and Gurrey, P., Our Living Language, London, T. Nelson and Sons, Ltd., 1925.
- Hatcher, Anna Granville, "The Use of the Progressive Form in English," Language, XXVII (1951), 254-280.
- Irvine, A.S. "The Participle in Wycliffe With Especial Reference to His Original English Works," University of Texas Studies in English, IX, pp. 5-68.
- Jespersen, Otto, A Modern English Grammar on Historical Principles, 7 vol., Heidelberg, Carl Winters Universitätsbuchhandlung, 1931. III.
- Jespersen, Otto, The Philosophy of Grammar, New York, Henry Holt and Co., 1924.
- Jespersen, Otto, Essentials of English Grammar, New York, Henry Holt and Co., 1924.
- Jespersen, Otto, "On Some Disputed Points in English Grammar," SPE Tract, No. XXV.
- Johnson, Oscar E., Tense Significance as the Time of the Action, Language Dissertations published by the Linguistic Society of America, No. 21, University of Pennsylvania Press, n.d.
- Kruisinga, E.A., A Handbook of Present Day English: Part II, English Accidence and Syntax, 4th edition, Utrecht, Kemink Zoon, 1925.
- Luick, Karl, Historische Grammatik der englischen Sprache, Leipzig, C.H. Tauchnitz, 1921.
- Marinoff, Valerie, Die periphrastische Form des englischen Verbums in ihrer Verwendung als Intensivum im modernen Sprachgebrauch Halle Diss., 1915.
- Mossé, Fernand, Histoire de la Forme Periphrastique "Être" + Participe Présent en Anglais de 1200 à Nos Jours, These pour le Docteur es Lettres Présentée à la Faculté des Lettres de l'Université de Paris, 1938.



Poutsma, H., A Grammar of Late Modern English, Part II, The Verb and the Particles, 2nd. edition, Groningen, P. Noordhoff, 1928.

Poutsma, H., Mood and Tense of the English Verb, Groningen, P. Noordhoff, 1922.

Poutsma, H., The Characters of the English Verb and the Expanded Form or Analogous Constructions of the Verb in English and Cognate Languages, Groningen, P. Noordhoff, 1921.

Royster, J.F., "The Going-To Future," Manly Anniversary Studies, Chicago, 1923.

Smith, A., "Ueber eine bisher unbeachtete Funktion der progressiven Form," Beiblatt zur Anglia, XXVIII (1917) 244-51.

Sweet, Henry, New English Grammar: Part II--Syntax, Oxford, Clarendon Press, 1931.

Van der Laan, J., An enquiry on a psychological basis into the use of the progressive form in late modern English, Gorinchem (Holland), F. Duym, 1922.

Note: The quotations from Modern English come from a variety of books and periodicals which are listed in Appendix I. They are alphabetized according to title and precede the quotations. Similarly, the sources of the quotation in Appendix II precede the quotations and are listed in chronological order.



Feb 1 '56
~~OCT 23 1961~~
~~PR 27 1995~~

ROSA POST ONLY

MICHIGAN STATE UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES



3 1293 03085 5906